



OpenEnglish**Bible**  
New Testament



# Contents

<b>Matthew</b>	.. .. .	1
1. The Birth, Parentage and Infancy	.. .. .	1
2. The Preparation	.. .. .	4
3. The Work in Galilee	.. .. .	6
4. The Journey to Jerusalem	.. .. .	35
5. The Last Days	.. .. .	38
6. The Risen Life	.. .. .	57
<b>Mark</b>	.. .. .	59
1. The Preparation	.. .. .	59
2. The Work in Galilee	.. .. .	60
3. The Journey to Jerusalem	.. .. .	79
4. The Last Days	.. .. .	82
5. The Risen Life Announced	.. .. .	95
6. A late appendix	.. .. .	96
7. Another appendix	.. .. .	96
<b>Luke</b>	.. .. .	97
1. Dedication	.. .. .	97
2. Birth, Parentage, Infancy and Boyhood	.. .. .	97
3. The Preparation	.. .. .	104
4. The Work in Galilee	.. .. .	107
5. The Journey to Jerusalem	.. .. .	125
6. The Last Days	.. .. .	148
7. The Risen Life	.. .. .	160

<b>John</b>	.. .. .	163
1. Introduction	.. .. .	163
2. The Preparation	.. .. .	164
3. The Work in Judaea, Galilee and Samaria	..	166
4. The Last Days	.. .. .	192
5. The Risen Life	.. .. .	208
<b>Acts</b>	.. .. .	213
1. The Church and the Jews	.. .. .	213
2. The Church and the Gentiles	.. .. .	241
<b>Romans</b>	.. .. .	279
1. Introduction	.. .. .	279
2. Faith the Ground of Acceptance	.. .. .	280
3. Difficulties arising from this Teaching	.. ..	287
4. Gentiles and Jews	.. .. .	293
5. Advice on Daily Life	.. .. .	298
6. Conclusion	.. .. .	303
<b>1 Corinthians</b>	.. .. .	307
1. Introduction	.. .. .	307
2. The State of the Church at Corinth	.. .. .	307
3. Answers to Questions Asked by the Church at Corinth	.. .. .	315
4. The Apostle's Teaching as to the Resurrection of the Dead	.. .. .	328
5. Conclusion	.. .. .	331
<b>2 Corinthians</b>	.. .. .	333
1. Introduction	.. .. .	333
2. The Apostle's Relations with his Converts	..	334
3. The Ministry of the Apostles	.. .. .	336

4. The Apostle and his Converts .. .. .	340
5. The Palestine Famine Fund .. .. .	342
6. The Apostle's Claims and Authority .. .. .	344
7. Conclusion .. .. .	348
<b>Galatians</b> .. .. .	351
1. Introduction .. .. .	351
2. The Independence of the Apostle's Gospel ..	352
3. The Law and the Gospel .. .. .	353
4. The Gospel in the Daily Life .. .. .	358
5. Conclusion in the Apostle's own handwriting	360
<b>Ephesians</b> .. .. .	361
1. Introduction .. .. .	361
2. The power of God displayed in Christ, the Head of the Church .. .. .	362
3. The Apostle's Divine Commission to the Gen- tiles .. .. .	364
4. The Gospel and Daily Life .. .. .	365
5. Conclusion .. .. .	370
<b>Philippians</b> .. .. .	371
<b>Colossians</b> .. .. .	379
1. Introduction .. .. .	379
2. The Person and Work of the Christ .. .. .	380
3. Christ and the Gnostic Teaching .. .. .	381
4. The Gospel in the Daily Life .. .. .	383
5. Conclusion .. .. .	384
<b>1 Thessalonians</b> .. .. .	387
1. Introduction .. .. .	387
2. The Apostle and his Converts .. .. .	387

3. Advice on the Daily Life .. .. .	390
4. The Dead in Christ at the coming of the Lord	391
5. Conclusion .. .. .	392
<b>2 Thessalonians</b> .. .. .	393
1. Introduction .. .. .	393
2. The Apostle and his Converts .. .. .	393
3. Events that must precede the Lord's Coming	394
4. Conclusion .. .. .	395
<b>1 Timothy</b> .. .. .	397
1. Introduction .. .. .	397
2. General Directions on Church Matters .. ..	398
3. Special Directions to Timothy .. .. .	400
4. Conclusion .. .. .	403
<b>2 Timothy</b> .. .. .	405
1. Introduction .. .. .	405
2. Injunctions to Timothy .. .. .	406
3. Conclusion .. .. .	409
<b>Titus</b> .. .. .	411
1. Introduction .. .. .	411
2. Mission of Titus in Crete .. .. .	411
3. Conclusion .. .. .	414
<b>Philemon</b> .. .. .	415
1. Introduction .. .. .	415
2. Request regarding runaway slave .. .. .	415
3. Messages and Blessing .. .. .	416

<b>Hebrews</b>	.. .. .	417
1. Christ the Mediator	.. .. .	417
2. Paramount Priesthood of the Christ	.. .. .	425
3. The New Revelation and the Old	.. .. .	428
4. Encouragement and Warning	.. .. .	431
5. Heroes of Faith	.. .. .	433
6. Conclusion	.. .. .	436
<b>James</b>	.. .. .	441
1. Greeting	.. .. .	441
2. Advice on Various Subjects	.. .. .	441
3. Warning on Various Subjects	.. .. .	443
4. Concluding Appeal	.. .. .	447
<b>1 Peter</b>	.. .. .	449
1. Introduction	.. .. .	449
2. The Christian's Hope of Salvation	.. .. .	449
3. The Christian's Character	.. .. .	450
4. Practical Appeals in view of the Dangers of the Times.	.. .. .	452
5. Conclusion	.. .. .	455
<b>2 Peter</b>	.. .. .	457
1. Introduction	.. .. .	457
2. The Transfiguration and the 'Second Coming' of the Christ	.. .. .	458
3. Warning against separating Christianity from a Holy Life	.. .. .	458
4. A Reassertion of the 'Second Coming' of the Christ	.. .. .	460

<b>1 John</b>	.. .. .	463
1. The Immortal Love	.. .. .	463
2. Warnings against Antichrist	.. .. .	465
3. The Privileges and Duties of God's Children		466
4. True and False Inspiration	.. .. .	467
5. Love of God and Love of People	.. .. .	468
6. A Christian's Faith and Confidence	.. .. .	469
<b>2 John</b>	.. .. .	471
<b>3 John</b>	.. .. .	473
<b>Jude</b>	.. .. .	475
1. Introduction	.. .. .	475
2. Warnings against moral corruption	.. .. .	475
3. Ascription	.. .. .	477
<b>Revelation</b>	.. .. .	479
1. Messages to the Seven Churches	.. .. .	479
2. The Vision of the Seven Seals	.. .. .	484
3. Vision of Seven Trumpet-Blasts	.. .. .	489
4. Vision of Seven Figures	.. .. .	494
5. Vision of Seven Curses	.. .. .	498
6. Doom of the Enemies of Christ	.. .. .	500
7. The New Creation	.. .. .	506
8. Conclusion	.. .. .	508



# Matthew

*The Good News According to Matthew*

## *The Birth, Parentage and Infancy*

**A** GENEALOGY OF JESUS CHRIST, a descendant of David and 1  
Abraham. Abraham was the father of Isaac, Isaac of Jacob, 2  
Jacob of Judah and his brothers, Judah of Perez and Zerah, 3  
whose mother was Tamar, Perez of Hezron, Hezron of Ram, 4  
Ram of Amminadab, Amminadab of Nashon, Nashon of 5  
Salmon, Salmon of Boaz, whose mother was Rahab, Boaz of 6  
Obed, whose mother was Ruth, Obed of Jesse, Jesse of David 7  
the King. David was the father of Solomon, whose mother was 8  
Uriah's widow, Solomon of Rehoboam, Rehoboam of Abijah, 9  
Abijah of Asa, Asa of Jehoshaphat, Jehoshaphat of Jehoram, 10  
Jehoram of Uzziah, Uzziah of Jotham, Jotham of Ahaz, Ahaz of 11  
Hezekiah, Hezekiah of Manasseh, Manasseh of Ammon, 12  
Ammon of Josiah, Josiah of Jeconiah and his brothers, at the 13  
time of the Exile to Babylon. After the Exile to Babylon — 14  
Jeconiah was the father of Shealtiel, Shealtiel of Zerubbabel, 15  
Zerubbabel of Abiud, Abiud of Eliakim, Eliakim of Azor, Azor 16  
of Zadok, Zadok of Achim, Achim of Eliud, Eliud of Eleazar, 17  
Eleazar of Matthan, Matthan of Jacob, Jacob of Joseph, the  
husband of Mary, who was the mother of Jesus, who is called  
'Christ'. So the whole number of generations from Abraham to  
David is fourteen; from David to the Exile to Babylon fourteen;  
and from the Exile to Babylon to the Christ fourteen.

This is how Jesus Christ was born: 18

His mother Mary was engaged to Joseph, but, before the

19 marriage took place, she found herself to be pregnant by the  
 power of the Holy Spirit. Her husband, Joseph, was a religious  
 20 man and, since he did not want to disgrace her publicly, he re-  
 solved to put an end to their engagement privately. He had been  
 thinking this over, when an angel of the Lord appeared to him  
 in a dream.

“Joseph, son of David,” the angel said, “do not be afraid to  
 take Mary for your wife, for her child has been conceived by the  
 21 power of the Holy Spirit. She will give birth to a son; name him  
 Jesus, for he will save his people from their sins.”

22 All this happened in fulfillment of these words of the Lord  
 in the prophet, where he says —

23 ‘The virgin will conceive and will give birth to a son, and they  
 will give him the name Immanuel’

24 — a word which means ‘God is with us.’ When Joseph woke up,  
 25 he did as the angel of the Lord had directed him. He made Mary  
 his wife, but they did not sleep together until after the birth of  
 her son; and to this son he gave the name Jesus.

2 After the birth of Jesus at Bethlehem in Judea, in the reign  
 of King Herod, some astrologers from the East arrived in  
 2 Jerusalem, asking: “Where is the newborn king of the Jews? For  
 we saw his star in the east, and have come to worship him.”  
 3 When King Herod heard of this, he was much troubled, and  
 4 so, too, was all Jerusalem. He called together all the chief priests  
 and teachers of the law in the nation, and questioned them as to  
 where the Christ was to be born.

5 “At Bethlehem in Judea,” was their answer; “for it is said in  
 the prophet —

6 ‘And you, Bethlehem in Judah’s land,  
 are in no way least among the chief cities of Judah;  
 for out of you will come a ruler —  
 who will shepherd my people Israel.’”

7 Then Herod secretly sent for the astrologers, and found out from

them the date of the appearance of the star; and, sending them 8  
to Bethlehem, he said: "Go and make careful inquiries about  
the child, and, as soon as you have found him, bring me word  
so that I, too, can go and worship him." The astrologers heard 9  
what the king had to say, and then continued their journey. The  
star which they had seen in the east led them on, until it reached,  
and stood over, the place where the child was. At the sight of the 10  
star they were filled with joy. Entering the house, they saw the 11  
child with his mother, Mary, and fell at his feet and worshipped  
him. Then they opened their treasure chests, and offered to the  
child presents of gold, frankincense, and myrrh. But afterwards, 12  
having been warned in a dream not to go back to Herod, they  
returned to their own country by another road.

After they had left, an angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph 13  
in a dream, and said:

"Get up, take the child and his mother, and seek refuge in  
Egypt; and stay there until I tell you to return, for Herod is about 14  
to search for the child, to put him to death." Joseph woke up, and 15  
taking the child and his mother by night, went into Egypt, and  
there he stayed until Herod's death; in fulfillment of these words  
of the Lord in the prophet, where he says —

'Out of Egypt I called my Son.'

When Herod found out that the astrologers had tricked him, he 16  
flew into a rage. He sent and put to death all the boys in Bethle-  
hem and the whole of that neighborhood, who were two years  
old or under, guided by the date which he had learned from  
the astrologers. Then were fulfilled these words spoken in the 17  
prophet Jeremiah, where he says —

'A voice was heard in Ramah, 18  
weeping and mourning loudly;  
Rachel, weeping for her children,  
refusing all comfort for they were dead.'

But, on the death of Herod, an angel of the Lord appeared in a 19  
dream to Joseph in Egypt, and said: "Get up, take the child and 20

21 his mother, and go into the Land of Israel, for those who sought  
 22 to take the child's life are dead." He woke up, and taking the  
 child and his mother, went into the Land of Israel. But, hearing  
 that Archelaus had succeeded his father Herod as king of Judea,  
 he was afraid to go back there; and having been warned in a  
 23 dream, he went into the part of the country called Galilee. There  
 he settled in the town of Nazareth, in fulfillment of these words  
 in the prophets — 'He will be called a Nazarene.'

### *The Preparation*

3 ABOUT THAT TIME JOHN THE BAPTIST FIRST APPEARED, proclaiming in  
 2 the wilderness of Judea: "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is  
 3 at hand." John was the one who was spoken of in the prophet  
 Isaiah, where he says —

'The voice of one crying aloud in the wilderness:  
 "Make ready the way of the Lord,  
 make his paths straight.'"

4 John's clothes were made of camels' hair, with a leather strap  
 around his waist, and his food was locusts and wild honey. At  
 5 that time Jerusalem, and all Judea, as well as the whole district  
 6 of the Jordan, went out to him and were baptized by him in the  
 river Jordan, confessing their sins.

7 But when John saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees  
 coming to receive his baptism, he said to them:

8 "You children of snakes! Who has prompted you to seek  
 9 refuge from the coming judgment? Let your life, then, prove  
 your repentance; and do not think that you can say among your-  
 selves 'Abraham is our ancestor,' for I tell you that out of these  
 10 stones God is able to raise descendants for Abraham! Already  
 the axe is lying at the root of the trees. Therefore every tree that  
 fails to bear good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the  
 11 fire. I, indeed, baptize you with water to teach repentance; but  
 he who is coming after me is more powerful than I, and I am not  
 fit even to carry his sandals. He will baptize you with the Holy

Spirit and with fire. His winnowing-fan is in his hand, and he will clear his threshing-floor, and store his grain in the barn, but the chaff he will burn with a fire that cannot be put out." 12

Then Jesus came from Galilee to the Jordan, to John, to be baptized by him. But John tried to prevent him. 13

"I need to be baptized by you," he said, "so why have you come to me?" 14

"This is the way it should be for now," Jesus answered, "because we should do everything that God requires." So John agreed. 15

After the baptism of Jesus, and just as he came up from the water, the heavens opened, and he saw the Spirit of God descending, like a dove, and alighting on him, and from the heavens there came a voice which said: "This is my dearly loved son, who brings me great joy." 16  
17

Then Jesus was led up into the wilderness by the Spirit to be tempted by the devil. And, after he had fasted for forty days and forty nights, he became hungry. The Tempter came to him, and said: 4  
2  
3

"If you are God's Son, tell these stones to become loaves of bread."

But Jesus answered: "Scripture says — 4

'It is not on bread alone that a person is to live, but on every word that comes from the mouth of God.'"

Then the devil took him to the Holy City, and, placing him on the parapet of the temple, said to him: "If you are God's Son, throw yourself down, for scripture says — 5  
6

'He will give his angels commands about you,  
and on their hands they will lift you up,  
so you do not even strike your foot against a stone.'"

"Scripture also says," answered Jesus, 7

“You must not tempt the Lord your God.”

8 The third time, the devil took Jesus to a very high mountain, and, showing him all the kingdoms of the world and their splendor, said to him:

9 “All these I will give you, if you will fall at my feet and worship me.”

10 Then Jesus said to him: “Go away, Satan! For scripture says —

‘You must worship the Lord your God, and worship him only.’”

11 Then the devil left him alone, and angels came and helped him.

### *The Work in Galilee*

12 WHEN JESUS HEARD THAT JOHN HAD BEEN COMMITTED TO PRISON, he  
13 returned to Galilee. Afterwards, leaving Nazareth, he went and  
14 settled at Capernaum, which is by the side of the Sea, within the  
15 borders of Zebulun and Naphtali; in fulfillment of these words  
16 in the prophet Isaiah —

15 ‘The land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali,  
the land of the Road by the Sea, and beyond the Jordan,  
with Galilee of the Gentiles —  
16 The people who were living in darkness  
have seen a great light,  
and, for those who were living in the shadow-land of death,  
a light has dawned!’

17 At that time Jesus began to proclaim —

“Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.”

18 As Jesus was walking along the shore of the Sea of Galilee, he saw two brothers — Simon, also known as Peter, and his brother

Andrew — casting a net into the Sea; for they were fishermen.

“Come and follow me,” Jesus said, “and I will teach you to fish for people.” The two men left their nets at once and followed him. Going further on, he saw two other men who were also brothers, James, Zebedee’s son, and his brother John, in their boat with their father, mending their nets. Jesus called them, and they at once left their boat and their father, and followed him.

Jesus went all through Galilee, teaching in their Synagogues, proclaiming the good news of the kingdom, and curing every kind of disease and every kind of sickness among the people; and his fame spread all through Syria. They brought to him all who were ill with any form of disease, or who were suffering pain — any who were either possessed by demons, or were lunatic, or paralyzed; and he cured them. He was followed by large crowds from Galilee, the district of the Ten Towns, Jerusalem, Judea, and from beyond the Jordan.

On seeing the crowds of people, Jesus went up the hill; and, when he had taken his seat, his disciples came up to him; and he began to teach them, saying

“Blessed are the poor in spirit,  
for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessed are the mourners,  
for they will be comforted.

Blessed are the gentle,  
for they will inherit the earth.

Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness,  
for they will be satisfied.

Blessed are the merciful,  
for they will find mercy.

Blessed are the pure in heart,  
for they will see God.

Blessed are the peacemakers,  
for they will be called children of God.

Blessed are those who have been persecuted in the cause of righteousness,  
for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

11 Blessed are you when people insult you, and persecute you, and  
12 say all kinds of evil lies about you because of me. Be glad and  
rejoice, because your reward in heaven will be great; this is the  
way they persecuted the prophets who lived before you.

13 You are salt for the world. But if salt becomes tasteless, how  
can it be made salty again? It is no longer good for anything, but  
14 is thrown away, and trampled underfoot. It is you who are the  
light of the world. A town that stands on a hill cannot be hidden.  
15 People do not light a lamp and put it under a basket, but on the  
16 lamp-stand, where it gives light to everyone in the house. Let  
your light so shine before the eyes of others so that, seeing your  
good actions, they will praise your Father who is in heaven.

17 Do not think that I have come to do away with the law or the  
prophets; I have not come to do away with them, but to com-  
18 plete them. For I tell you, until the heavens and the earth disap-  
pear, not even the smallest letter, nor one stroke of a letter, will  
19 disappear from the law until all is done. Whoever, therefore,  
breaks one of these commandments, even the least of them, and  
teaches others to do so, will be the least esteemed in the king-  
dom of heaven; but whoever keeps them, and teaches others to  
do so, will be esteemed great in the kingdom of heaven. Indeed  
20 I tell you that, unless you obey God's commands better than of  
the teachers of the law, and Pharisees, you will never enter the  
kingdom of heaven.

21 You have heard that to our ancestors it was said — 'You  
must not commit murder,' and 'Whoever commits murder will  
22 be brought to trial.' But I say to you that anyone who is angry  
at their brother or sister will be brought to trial; and whoever  
insults their brother or sister will be brought before the High  
Council, while whoever calls them a fool will be in danger of  
23 the fires of Gehenna. Therefore, when presenting your gift at the  
altar, if even there you remember that your brother or sister has  
24 something against you, leave your gift there, before the altar, go  
and be reconciled to them, first, then come and present your gift.  
25 Be ready to make friends with your opponent, even when you  
meet them on your way to the court; otherwise they might hand  
you over to the judge, and the judge to the judicial officer, and  
26 you will be thrown into prison. I tell you, you will not come out



until you have paid the last cent.

You have heard that it was said — ‘You must not commit adultery.’ But I say to you that anyone who looks at a woman and desires her has already committed adultery with her in his heart. If your right eye causes you to sin, take it out and throw it away. It would be best for you to lose one part of your body, and not to have the whole of it thrown into Gehenna. And, if your right hand causes you to sin, cut it off and throw it away. It would be best for you to lose one part of your body, and not to have the whole of it go down to Gehenna.

It was also said — ‘Let anyone who divorces his wife serve her with a notice of separation.’ But I say to you that anyone who divorces his wife, except on the ground of some serious sexual sin, leads to her committing adultery; while anyone who marries her after her divorce is guilty of adultery. Again, you have heard that our ancestors were told — ‘Do not break your oaths, keep your vows to the Lord.’ But I say to you that you must not swear at all, either by heaven, since that is God’s throne, or by the earth, since that is his footstool, or by Jerusalem, since that is the city of the Great King. Nor should you swear by your head, since you cannot make a single hair either white or black. Let your words be simply ‘Yes’ or ‘No’; anything beyond this comes from what is evil.

You have heard that it was said — ‘An eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth.’ But I say to you that you must not resist those who wrong you; but, if anyone strikes you on the right cheek, turn the other to them also. If someone sues you for your shirt, let them have your cloak as well. If you are forced to carry a soldier’s pack for one mile, carry it two. Give to anyone who asks and, if someone wants to borrow from you, do not turn them away.

You have heard that it was said — ‘You must love your neighbor and hate your enemy.’ But what I tell you is this: love your enemies, and pray for those who persecute you, so that you may become children of your Father who is in heaven; for he causes his sun to rise on bad and good alike, and sends rain on the righteous and on the unrighteous. For, if you love only those who love you, what reward will you have? Even the tax-gather-

47 ers do this! And, if you only welcome your brothers and sisters,  
what are you doing more than others? Even the Gentiles do this!  
48 You, then, must become perfect — as your heavenly Father is  
perfect.

6 Take care not to perform your religious duties in public in or-  
der to be seen by others; if you do, your Father who is in heaven  
2 has no reward for you. Therefore, when you do acts of charity,  
do not have a trumpet blown in front of you, as hypocrites do  
in the Synagogues and in the streets so that people will praise  
3 them. There, I tell you, is their reward! But, when you do acts of  
charity, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is  
4 doing, so that your charity may be secret; and your Father, who  
sees what is in secret, will reward you.

5 And, when you pray, you are not to behave as hypocrites do.  
They like to pray standing in the Synagogues and at the corners  
of the streets, so that people will see them. There, I tell you, is  
6 their reward! But, when one of you prays, let them go into their  
own room, shut the door, and pray to their Father who dwells  
in secret; and their Father, who sees what is secret, will reward  
7 them. When praying, do not repeat the same words over and  
over again, as is done by the Gentiles, who think that by using  
8 many words they will obtain a hearing. Do not imitate them;  
for God, your Father, knows what you need before you ask him.  
9 You, therefore, should pray like this —

‘Our Father, who is in heaven,  
may your name be held holy,  
10 your kingdom come, your will be done —  
on earth, as in heaven.  
11 Give us today  
the bread that we will need;  
12 and forgive us our wrong-doings,  
as we have forgiven those who have wronged us;  
13 and take us not into temptation,  
but deliver us from evil.’

14 For, if you forgive others their offenses, your heavenly Father  
15 will forgive you also; but, if you do not forgive others their

offenses, not even your Father will forgive your offenses.

And, when you fast, do not put on gloomy looks, as hypocrites do who disfigure their faces so that they may be seen by people to be fasting. That, I tell you, is their reward! But, when one of you fasts, let them anoint their head and wash their face, so that they may not be seen by people to be fasting, but by their Father who dwells in secret; and their Father, who sees what is secret, will reward them.

Do not store up treasures for yourselves on earth, where moth and rust destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. But store up treasures for yourselves in heaven, where neither moth nor rust destroys, and where thieves do not break in or steal. For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. The lamp of the body is the eye. If your eye is unclouded, your whole body will be lit up; but, if your eye is diseased, your whole body will be darkened. And, if the inner light is darkness, how intense must that darkness be! No one can serve two masters, for either they will hate one and love the other, or else they will attach themselves to one and despise the other. You cannot serve both God and Money.

This is why I say to you: Do not be anxious about your life — what you can get to eat or drink, or about your body — what you can get to wear. Is not life more than food, and the body more than clothing? Look at the wild birds — they neither sow, nor reap, nor gather into barns; and yet your heavenly Father feeds them! Are not you more precious than they? But which of you, by being anxious, can prolong their life a single moment? And why be anxious about clothing? Study the wild lilies, and how they grow. They neither toil nor spin; yet I tell you that even Solomon in all his splendor was not robed like one of these. If God so clothes even the grass of the field, which is living today and tomorrow will be thrown into the oven, will not he much more clothe you, you of little faith? Do not then anxiously 'What can we get to eat?' or 'What can we get to drink?' or 'What can we get to wear?' All these are the things for which the nations are seeking, and your heavenly Father knows that you need them all. But first seek his kingdom and the righteousness that he requires, and then all these things will be added for

34 you. Therefore do not be anxious about tomorrow, for tomorrow  
will bring its own anxieties. Every day has trouble enough of  
its own.

7 Do not judge and you will not be judged. For, just as you  
2 judge others, you will yourselves be judged, and the standard  
3 that you use will be used for you. Why do you look at the speck  
4 of sawdust in your friend's eye, while you pay no attention at all  
5 to the plank of wood in yours? How will you say to your friend  
'Let me take out the speck from your eye,' when all the time  
there is a plank in your own? Hypocrite! Take out the plank from  
your own eye first, and then you will see clearly how to take out  
the speck from your friend's.

6 Do not give what is sacred to dogs; they will turn and maul  
you. Do not throw your pearls before pigs; they will trample  
7 them underfoot. Ask, and it will be given to you; search, and you  
8 will find; knock, and the door will be opened to you. For the per-  
9 son who asks receives, the person who searches finds, and to the  
door will be opened to the person who knocks. Who among you,  
when their child asks them for bread, will give them a stone, or  
10 when they ask for a fish, will give them a snake? If you, then,  
11 wicked though you are, know how to give good gifts to your  
children, how much more will your Father who is in heaven give  
what is good to those who ask him!

12 Do to others whatever you would wish them to do to you;  
13 for that is the teaching of both the law and the prophets. Go in  
by the small gate. Broad and spacious is the road who leads to  
14 destruction, and those that go in by it are many; for small is the  
gate, and narrow the road, who leads to life, and those that find  
it are few.

15 Beware of false teachers — people who come to you in the  
16 guise of sheep, but at heart they are ravenous wolves. By the  
fruit of their lives you will know them. Do people pick grapes  
17 from thorn bushes, or figs from thistles? So, too, every sound tree  
18 bears good fruit, while a worthless tree bears bad fruit. A sound  
tree cannot produce bad fruit, nor can a worthless tree bear good  
19 fruit. Every tree that fails to bear good fruit is cut down and  
20 thrown into the fire. So it is by the fruit of their lives that you will  
21 know such people. Not everyone who says to me 'Master! Mas-

ter!' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of my Father who is in heaven. On 'that day' many will say to me 'Master, Master, was not it in your name that we taught, and in your name that we drove out demons, and in your name that we did many miracles?' And then I will say to them plainly 'I never knew you. Go from my presence, you who live in sin.'

Everyone, therefore, who listens to this teaching of mine and acts on it may be compared to a prudent person, who built their house on the rock. The rain poured down, the rivers rose, the winds blew and beat on that house, but it did not fall, for its foundations were on the rock. Everyone who listens to this teaching of mine and does not act on it may be compared to a foolish person, who built their house on the sand. The rain poured down, the rivers rose, the winds blew and struck against that house, and it fell; and great was its downfall."

By the time that Jesus had finished speaking, the crowd was filled with amazement at his teaching. For he taught them like one who had authority, and not like their teachers of the law.

When Jesus had come down from the hill, great crowds followed him. He saw a leper who came up, and bowed to the ground before him, and said: "Master, if only you are willing, you are able to make me clean." Stretching out his hand, Jesus touched him, saying as he did so: "I am willing; become clean." Instantly he was made clean from his leprosy; and then Jesus said to him: "Be careful not to say a word to anyone, but go and show yourself to the priest, and offer the gift directed by Moses, as evidence of your cure." After Jesus had entered Capernaum, a captain in the Roman army came up to him, entreating his help. "Sir," he said, "my manservant is lying ill at my house with a stroke of paralysis, and is suffering terribly."

"I will come and cure him," answered Jesus. "Sir," the captain went on, "I am unworthy to receive you under my roof; but only speak, and my manservant will be cured. For I myself am a man under the orders of others, with soldiers under me; and, if I say to one of them 'Go,' he goes, and to another 'Come,' he comes, and to my slave 'Do this,' he does it." Jesus was sur-

11       prised to hear this, and said to those who were following him:  
12       "Never I tell you, in any Israelite have I met with such faith as  
13       this! Yes, and many will come in from East and West and take  
14       their places beside Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of  
15       heaven; while the heirs to the kingdom will be 'banished into the  
16       darkness' outside; there, there will be weeping and grinding of  
17       teeth." Then Jesus said to the captain: "Go now, and it will be ac-  
18       cording to your faith." And the man was cured that very hour.

19       When Jesus went into Peter's house, he saw Peter's mother-  
20       in-law prostrated with fever. On his taking her hand, the fever  
21       left her, and she rose and began to take care of him. In the  
22       evening the people brought to Jesus many who were possessed  
23       by demons; and he drove out the spirits with a word, and cured  
24       all who were ill, in fulfillment of these words in the prophet Isa-  
25       iah — 'He took our infirmities on himself, and bore the burden  
26       of our diseases.'

27       Seeing a crowd around him, Jesus gave orders to go across.  
28       A teacher of the law came up to him, and said: "Teacher, I will  
29       follow you wherever you go."

30       "Foxes have holes," answered Jesus, "and wild birds  
31       their nests, but the Son of Man has nowhere to lay his head."  
32       "Master," said another, who was a disciple, "let me first go and  
33       bury my father." But Jesus answered: "Follow me, and leave the  
34       dead to bury their dead." Then he got into the boat, followed by  
35       his disciples. Suddenly so great a storm came up on the Sea, that  
36       the waves broke right over the boat. But Jesus was asleep; and  
37       the disciples came and roused him. "Master," they cried, "save  
38       us; we are lost!"

39       "Why are you so timid?" he said. "You of little faith!" Then  
40       Jesus rose and rebuked the winds and the sea, and a great calm  
41       followed. The men were amazed, and exclaimed: "What kind of  
42       man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him!"

43       On getting to the other side — the country of the Gadarenes  
44       — Jesus met two men who were possessed by demons, coming  
45       out of the tombs. They were so violent that no one was able to  
46       pass that way. Suddenly they shrieked out: "What do you want  
47       with us, Son of God? Have you come here to torment us before  
48       our time?" A long way off, there was a drove of many pigs,

feeding; and the foul spirits began begging Jesus: "If you drive us out, send us into the drove of pigs." 31

"Go," he said. The spirits came out, and entered the pigs; and the whole drove rushed down the steep slope into the Sea, and died in the water. At this the men who tended them ran away and went to the town, carrying the news of all that had occurred, and of what had happened to the possessed men. At the news the whole town went out to meet Jesus, and, when they saw him, they entreated him to go away from their neighborhood. 32  
33  
34

Afterwards Jesus got into a boat, and, crossing over, came to his own city. There some people brought to him a paralyzed man on a bed. When Jesus saw their faith, he said to the man: "Courage, child! Your sins are forgiven." Then some of the teachers of the law said to themselves: "This man is blaspheming!" Knowing their thoughts, Jesus exclaimed: "Why do you cherish such wicked thoughts? Which, I ask, is the easier? — to say 'Your sins are forgiven'? Or to say 'Get up, and walk'? But to show you that the Son of Man has power on earth to forgive sins" — then he said to the paralyzed man — "Get up, take up your bed, and return to your home." The man got up and went to his home. When the crowd saw this, they were awe-struck, and praised God for giving such power to human beings. 9  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8

As Jesus went along, he saw a man, called Matthew, sitting in the tax office, and said to him: "Follow me." Matthew got up and followed him. 9

And, later on, when he was having dinner in the house, a number of tax-gatherers and outcasts came in and took their places at the table with Jesus and his disciples. When the Pharisees saw this, they said to his disciples: "Why does your teacher eat in the company of tax-gatherers and outcasts?" On hearing this, Jesus said: "It is not those who are healthy who need a doctor, but those who are ill. Go and learn what this means — 'I desire mercy, and not sacrifice'; for I did not come to call the religious, but the outcast." Then John's disciples came to Jesus, and asked: "Why do we and the Pharisees fast while your disciples do not?" Jesus answered: "Can the groom's friends mourn as long as the groom is with them? But the days will come, when the groom will be taken away from them, and they will fast then. 10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15

16 Nobody ever puts a piece of unshrunk cloth on an old garment;  
for such a patch tears away from the garment, and a worse tear  
17 is made. Nor do people put new wine into old wine-skins; for,  
if they do, the skins burst, and the wine runs out, and the skins  
are lost; but they put new wine into fresh skins, and so both are  
preserved."

18 While Jesus was saying this, a President of a Synagogue came  
up and bowed to the ground before him. "My daughter," he said,  
"Has just died; but come and place your hand on her, and she  
19 will be restored to life." So Jesus rose and followed him, and his  
disciples went also. But meanwhile a woman, who had been suffer-  
20 ing from hemorrhage for twelve years, came up behind and  
touched the tassel of his cloak. "If I only touch his cloak," she  
21 said to herself, "I will get well." Turning and seeing her, Jesus  
said: "Courage, daughter! Your faith has delivered you." And  
22 at that very moment she became well. When Jesus reached the  
President's house, seeing the flute players, and a number of peo-  
23 ple all in confusion, he said: "Go away, the little girl is not dead;  
she is asleep." They began to laugh at him; but, when the people  
24 had been sent out, Jesus went in, and took the little girl's hand,  
25 and she rose. The report of this spread through all that part of  
26 the country.

27 As Jesus was passing on from there, he was followed by  
two blind men, who kept calling out: "Take pity on us, Son of  
28 David!" When he had gone indoors, the blind men came up to  
him; and Jesus asked them: "Do you believe that I am able to do  
29 this?" "Yes, Master!" they answered. Then he touched their eyes,  
30 and said: "It will be according to your faith." Then their eyes  
were opened. Jesus sternly cautioned them. "See that no one  
31 knows of it," he said. But the men went out, and spread the news  
32 about him through all that part of the country. Just as they were  
going out, some people brought up to Jesus a dumb man who  
33 was possessed by a demon; and, as soon as the demon had been  
driven out, the dumb man spoke. The people were astonished  
at this, and exclaimed: "Nothing like this has ever been seen in  
34 Israel!" But the Pharisees said: "He drives out the demons by the  
help of the chief of the demons."

35 Jesus went around all the towns and the villages, teaching in



their Synagogues, proclaiming the good news of the kingdom, and curing every kind of disease and every kind of sickness. But, when he saw the crowds, his heart was moved with compassion for them, because they were distressed and harassed, 'like sheep without a shepherd'; and he said to his disciples: "The harvest is abundant, but the laborers are few. Therefore pray to the owner of the harvest to send laborers to gather in his harvest."

Calling his twelve Disciples to him, Jesus gave them authority over foul spirits, so that they could drive them out, as well as the power of curing every kind of disease and every kind of sickness. The names of the twelve apostles are these: First Simon, also known as Peter, and his brother Andrew; James the son of Zebedee, and his brother John; Philip and Bartholomew; Thomas and Matthew the tax-gather; James the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus; Simon the Zealot, and Judas Iscariot — the apostle who betrayed him.

These twelve Jesus sent out as his messengers, after giving them these instructions — "Do not go to the Gentiles, nor enter any Samaritan town, but make your way rather to the lost sheep of Israel. On your way proclaim that the kingdom of heaven is at hand. Cure the sick, raise the dead, make the lepers clean, drive out demons. You have received free of cost, give free of cost. Do not provide yourselves with gold, or silver, or coins in your purses; not even with a bag for the journey, or a change of clothes, or sandals, or even a staff; for the worker is worth his food. Whatever town or village you visit, find out who is worthy in that place, and remain there until you leave. As you enter the house, greet it. Then, if the house is worthy, let your blessing rest on it, but, if it is unworthy, let your blessing return on yourselves. If no one welcomes you, or listens to what you say, as you leave that house or that town, shake off its dust from your feet. I tell you, the doom of the land of Sodom and Gomorrah will be more bearable in the 'day of judgment' than the doom of that town.

Remember, I am sending you out as my messengers like sheep among wolves. So be as wise as snakes, and as blameless as doves. Be on your guard against others, for they will betray you to courts of law, and scourge you in their Synagogues; and

18 you will be brought before governors and kings for my sake so  
19 that you may witness for me before them and the nations. When-  
20 ever they betray you, do not be anxious as to how you will speak  
21 or what you will say, for what you will say will be given you at  
22 the moment; for it will not be you who speak, but the Spirit of  
23 your Father that speaks within you. Brother will betray brother  
24 to death, and the father his child; and children will turn against  
25 their parents, and cause them to be put to death; and you will be  
26 hated by everyone because of me. Yet the person who endures  
27 to the end will be saved. But, when they persecute you in one  
28 town, escape to the next; for, I tell you, you will not have come  
29 to the end of the towns of Israel before the Son of Man comes. A  
30 scholar is not above his teacher, nor a servant above his mas-  
31 ter. It is enough for a scholar to be treated like his teacher, and a  
32 servant like his master. If the head of the house has been called  
33 Beelzebul, how much more the members of his household! Do  
34 not, therefore, be afraid of them. There is nothing concealed  
35 which will not be revealed, nor anything hidden which will not  
36 become known. What I tell you in the dark, say again in the light;  
37 and what is whispered in your ear, proclaim on the housetops.  
38 Do not be afraid of those who kill the body, but are unable to  
kill the soul; rather be afraid of him who is able to destroy both  
soul and body in Gehenna. Are not two sparrows sold for a one  
copper coin? Yet not one of them will fall to the ground without  
your Father's knowledge. While as for you, even the hairs of  
your head are numbered. Do not, therefore, be afraid; you are of  
more value than many sparrows. Everyone, therefore, who will  
publicly acknowledge me, I, too, will acknowledge before my  
Father who is in heaven; but, if anyone publicly disowns me, I,  
too, will disown him before my Father who is in heaven.

Do not imagine that I have come to bring peace to the earth.  
I have come to bring, not peace, but the sword. For I have come  
to set — 'a man against his father, and a daughter against her  
mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. A  
person's enemies will be the members of their own household.'  
Anyone who loves father or mother more than me is not worthy  
of me; and anyone who loves son or daughter more than me is  
not worthy of me. Anyone who does not take their cross and fol-

low in my steps is not worthy of me. The person who has found 39  
their life will lose it, while the person who, for my sake, has lost  
their life will find it.

Anyone who welcomes you is welcoming me; and anyone 40  
who welcomes me is welcoming him who sent me as his mes-  
senger. The person who welcomes a prophet, because they are a 41  
prophet, will receive a prophet's reward; and anyone who wel-  
comes a good person, because they are a good person, will re- 42  
ceive a good person's reward. And, if anyone gives but a cup of  
cold water to one of these little ones because they are a disciple,  
I tell you that they will assuredly not lose their reward."

After Jesus had finished giving directions to his twelve Dis- 11  
ciples, he left that place in order to teach and preach in their  
towns.

Now John had heard in prison what the Christ was doing, 2  
and he sent a message by his disciples, and asked — "Are you 3  
'the coming one,' or are we to look for someone else?" The 4  
answer of Jesus to the question was — "Go and report to John what 5  
you hear and see — the blind recover their sight and the lame  
walk, the lepers are made clean and the deaf hear, the dead, too,  
are raised to life, and the good news is told to the poor. Blessed 6  
is the person who finds no hindrance in me."

While John's disciples were going back, Jesus began to say to 7  
the crowds with reference to John: "What did you go out into the 8  
wilderness to look at? A reed waving in the wind? If not, what  
did you go out to see? A man richly dressed? Why, those who  
wear rich things are to be found in the courts of kings! What, 9  
then, did you go for? To see a prophet? Yes, I tell you, and far  
more than a prophet. This is the man of whom scripture says — 10  
'I am sending my messenger ahead of you, and he will prepare  
your way before you.' I tell you, no one born of a woman has 11  
yet appeared who is greater than John the Baptist; and yet the  
least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he. From the time 12  
of John the Baptist to this very hour, the kingdom of heaven has  
been taken by force, and people using force have been seizing 13  
it. For the teaching of all the prophets and of the law continued 14  
until the time of John; and — if you are ready to accept it — John 15  
is himself the Elijah who was destined to come. Let him who has

16 ears hear. But to what will I compare the present generation? It  
17 is like little children sitting in the market-places and calling out  
18 to their playmates — ‘We have played the flute for you, but you  
19 have not danced; We have wailed, but you have not mourned.’  
20 For, when John came, neither eating nor drinking, people said  
21 ‘He has a demon in him’; and now that the Son of Man has come,  
22 eating and drinking, they are saying ‘Here is a glutton and a  
23 wine-drinker, a friend of tax-gatherers and outcasts!’ And yet  
24 wisdom is vindicated by her actions.”

25 Then Jesus began to reproach the towns in which most of his  
26 miracles had been done, because they had not repented: “Alas  
27 for you, Chorazin! Alas for you, Bethsaida! For, if the miracles  
28 which were done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they  
29 would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. Yet, I tell  
30 you, the doom of Tyre and Sidon will be more bearable in the  
31 ‘day of judgment’ than yours. And you, Capernaum! Will you  
32 ‘exalt yourself to heaven’? ‘You will go down to the place of  
33 death.’ For, if the miracles which have been done in you had  
34 been done in Sodom, it would have been standing to this day.  
35 Yet, I tell you, the doom of Sodom will be more bearable in the  
36 ‘day of judgment’ than yours.” At that same time Jesus uttered  
37 the words: “I thank you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that,  
38 though you have hidden these things from the wise and learned,  
39 you have revealed them to the child-like! Yes, Father, I thank you  
40 that this has seemed good to you. Everything has been committed  
41 to me by my Father; nor does anyone fully know the Son,  
42 except the Father, or fully know the Father, except the Son and  
43 those to whom the Son may choose to reveal him. Come to me,  
44 all you who toil and are burdened, and I will give you rest! Take  
45 my yoke on you, and learn from me, for I am gentle and humble,  
46 and ‘you will find rest for your souls’; for my yoke is easy, and  
47 my burden is light.”

12 About the same time Jesus walked through the cornfields  
13 one Sabbath. His disciples were hungry, and began to pick some  
14 ears of wheat and eat them. But, when the Pharisees saw this,  
15 they said: “Look! Your disciples are doing what it is not allow-  
16 able to do on a Sabbath!”

3 “Have not you read,” replied Jesus, “what David did, when

he and his companions were hungry — how he went into the house of God, and how they ate the consecrated bread, through it was not allowable for him or his companions to eat it, but only for the priests? And have not you read in the law that, on the Sabbath, the priest in the Temple break the Sabbath and yet are not guilty? Here, however, I tell you, there is something greater than the Temple! Had you learned the meaning of the words — ‘I desire mercy, and not sacrifice,’ you would not have condemned those who are not guilty. For the Son of Man is lord of the Sabbath.”

Passing on, Jesus went into their Synagogue, and there he saw a man with a withered hand. Some people asked Jesus whether it was allowable to work a cure on the Sabbath — so that they might have a charge to bring against him. But Jesus said to them: “Which of you, if he had only one sheep, and that sheep fell into a pit on the Sabbath, would not lay hold of it and pull it out? How much more precious a person is than a sheep! Therefore it is allowable to do good on the Sabbath.” Then he said to the man. “Stretch out your hand.” The man stretched it out; and it had become as sound as the other. On coming out, the Pharisees plotted against Jesus, to put him to death.

Jesus, however, became aware of it, and went away from that place. A number of people followed him, and he cured them all; but he warned them not to make him known, in fulfillment of these words in the prophet Isaiah — ‘Here is my chosen servant, who I love and who pleases me! I will breathe my spirit on him, and he will announce a time of judgment to the Gentiles. He will not contend, nor cry aloud, Neither will anyone hear his voice in the streets; a bruised reed he will not break, and a smoldering wick he will not quench, until he has brought the judgment to a victorious issue, and on his name will the Gentiles rest their hopes.’”

Then some people brought to Jesus a possessed man, who was blind and dumb; and he cured him, so that the man who had been dumb both talked and saw. At this all the people were astounded. “Is it possible that this is the son of David?” they exclaimed. But the Pharisees heard of it and said: “He drives out demons only by the help of Beelzebul the chief of the demons.”

25 Jesus, however, was aware of what was passing in their minds,  
and said to them: "Any kingdom divided against itself becomes  
26 a desolation, and any town or household divided against itself  
27 will not last. So, if Satan drives Satan out, he must be divided  
against himself; and how, then, can his kingdom last? And, if it  
is by Beelzebul's help that I drive out demons, by whose help is  
it that your own sons drive them out? Therefore they will them-  
28 selves be your judges. But, if it is by the help of the Spirit of God  
that I drive out demons, then the kingdom of God must already  
29 be upon you. How, again, can anyone get into a strong man's  
house and carry off his goods, without first securing him? Not  
30 until then will he plunder his house. Anyone who is not with me  
is against me, and the person who does not help me to gather is  
31 scattering. Therefore, I tell you, people will be forgiven every sin  
and slander; but slander against the Holy Spirit will not be for-  
32 given. Whoever speaks against the Son of Man will be forgiven,  
but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven,  
either in the present age, or in the age to come.

33 You must assume either that both tree and fruit are good,  
or that both tree and fruit are worthless; since it is by its fruits  
34 that a tree is known. You children of snakes! How can you, evil  
as you are, say anything good? For what fills the heart will rise  
35 to the lips. A good person, from his good stores, produces good  
things; while an evil person, from his evil stores, produces evil  
36 things. I tell you that for every careless thing that people say,  
37 they must answer on the 'day of judgment.' For it is by your  
words that you will be acquitted, and by your words that you  
will be condemned."

38 At this point, some teachers of the law and Pharisees spoke  
up. "Teacher," they said, "we want to see some sign from you."

39 "It is a wicked and unfaithful generation," answered Jesus,  
"that is asking for a sign, and no sign will be given it except the  
40 sign of the prophet Jonah. For, just as 'Jonah was inside the sea-  
monster three days and three nights,' so will the Son of Man be  
41 three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. At the judg-  
ment, the people of Nineveh will stand up with this generation,  
and will condemn it, because they repented at Jonah's proclama-  
42 tion; and here is more than a Jonah! At the judgment the Queen

of the South will rise up with the present generation, and will condemn it, because she came from the ends of the earth to listen to the wisdom of Solomon; and here is more than a Solomon! No sooner does a foul spirit leave a person, than it passes through places where there is no water, in search of rest, and does not find it. Then it says 'I will go back to the home which I left'; but, on coming there, it finds it unoccupied, and swept, and put in order. Then it goes and brings with it seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in, and make their home there; and the last state of that man proves to be worse than the first. So, too, will it be with this wicked generation."

While he was still speaking to the crowds, his mother and brothers were standing outside, asking to speak to him. Someone told him this, and Jesus replied: "Who is my mother? And who are my brothers?" Then, stretching out his hands towards his disciples, he said: "Here are my mother and my brothers! For anyone who does the will of my Father who is in heaven is my brother and sister and mother."

That same day, when Jesus had left the house and was sitting by the Sea, such great crowds gathered around him, that he got into a boat, and sat in it, while all the people stood on the beach. Then he told them many truths in parables. "The sower," he began, "went out to sow; and, as they were sowing, some seed fell along the path, and the birds came and ate it up. Some fell on rocky places, where it had not much soil, and, having no depth of soil, sprang up at once. As soon as the sun had risen, it was scorched, and, having no root, withered away. Some, again, fell into the brambles; but the brambles shot up and choked it. Some, however, fell on good soil, and yielded a return, sometimes one hundred, sometimes sixty, sometimes thirty fold. Let those who have ears hear."

Afterwards his disciples came to him, and said: "Why do you speak to them in parables?"

"To you," answered Jesus, "the knowledge of the hidden truths of the kingdom of heaven has been imparted, but not to those. For, to all who have, more will be given, and they will have abundance; but, from all who have nothing, even what they have will be taken away. That is why I speak to them in

14 parables, because, though they have eyes, they do not see, and though they have ears, they do not hear or understand. In them is being fulfilled that prophecy of Isaiah which says —

‘You will hear with your ears without ever understanding,  
and, though you have eyes, you will see without ever perceiving,  
15 for the mind of this nation has grown dense,  
and their ears are dull of hearing,  
their eyes also have they closed;  
Otherwise some day they might perceive with their eyes,  
and with their ears they might hear,  
and in their mind they might understand,  
and might turn —  
and I might heal them.’

16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see, and your ears, for they  
17 hear; for I tell you that many prophets and good people have longed for the sight of the things which you are seeing, yet never saw them, and to hear the things which you are hearing, yet never heard them.

18 Listen, then, yourselves to the parable of the sower. When any-  
19 one hears the message of the kingdom without understanding it, the evil one comes and snatches away what has been sown in their mind. This is the person meant by the seed which was  
20 sown along the path. By the seed which was sown on rocky places is meant the person who hears the message, and at once  
21 accepts it joyfully; but, as they have no root, they stand for only a short time; and, when trouble or persecution arises because of  
22 the message, they fall away at once. By the seed which was sown among the brambles is meant the person who hears the message,  
23 but the cares of life and the glamour of wealth completely choke the message, so that it gives no return. But by the seed which  
was sown on the good ground is meant the person who hears the message and understands it, and really yields a return, sometimes one hundred, sometimes sixty, sometimes thirty fold.”

24 Another parable which Jesus told them was this — “The



kingdom of heaven is compared to a person who sowed good seed in their field. But, while everyone was asleep, their enemy came and sowed weeds among the wheat, and then went away. So, when the blades of corn shot up, and came into ear, the weeds made their appearance also. The owner's servants came to them, and said 'Was not it good seed that you sowed in your field? Where, then, do the weeds in it come from?' 'An enemy has done this,' was the owner's answer. 'Do you wish us, then,' they asked, 'to go and gather them together?' 'No,' said he, 'because while you are pulling up the weeds you might uproot the wheat with them. Let both grow side by side until harvest; and then I will say to the reapers, Gather the weeds together first, and tie them in bundles for burning; but bring all the wheat into my barn.'"

Another parable which he told them was this — "The kingdom of heaven is like a mustard seed, which a person took and sowed in his field. This seed is smaller than all other seeds, but, when it has grown up, it is larger than the herbs and becomes a tree, so that 'the wild birds come and roost in its branches.'"

This was another parable which Jesus related — "The kingdom of heaven is like some yeast which a woman took and covered up in three pecks of flour, until the whole had risen." Of all this Jesus spoke to the crowd in parables; indeed to them he used never to speak at all except in parables, in fulfillment of these words in the prophet — 'I will speak to them in parables; I will utter things kept secret since the foundation of the world.'

Then Jesus left the crowd, and went into the house. Presently his disciples came to him, and said: "Explain to us the parable of the weeds in the field." He answered: "The sower of the good seed is the Son of Man. The field is the world. By the good seed is meant the people of the kingdom. The weeds are the wicked, and the enemy who sowed them is the devil. The harvest time is the close of the age, and the reapers are angels. And, just as the weeds are gathered and burnt, so it will be at the close of the age. The Son of Man will send his angels, and they will gather from his kingdom all that hinders and those who live in sin, and 'will throw them into the blazing furnace,' where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth. Then will the righteous shine,

like the sun, in the kingdom of their Father. Let him who has ears hear.

44 The kingdom of heaven is like a treasure hidden in a field, which a person found and hid again, and then, in their delight, went and sold everything that they had, and bought that field.

45 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a merchant in search of choice pearls. Finding one of great value, they went and sold everything that they had, and bought it. Or again, the kingdom of heaven is like a net which was cast into the sea, and caught fish of all kinds. When it was full, they hauled it up on the beach, and sat down and sorted the good fish into baskets, but threw the worthless ones away. So will it be at the close of the age. The angels will go out and separate the wicked from the righteous, and 'will throw them into the blazing furnace,' where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth.

51 Have you understood all this?" Jesus asked. "Yes," they answered. Then he added: "So every teacher of the law, who has received instruction about the kingdom of heaven, is like a householder who produces from his stores things both new and old."

53 When Jesus had finished these parables, he withdrew from that place. Going to his own part of the country, he taught the people in their Synagogue in such a manner that they were deeply impressed. "Where did he get this wisdom?" they said, "and the miracles? Is not he the carpenter's son? Is not his mother called Mary, and his brothers James, and Joseph, and Simon, and Judas? And his sisters, too — are not they all living among us? Where, then did he get all this?" These things proved a hindrance to their believing in him. But Jesus said: "A prophet is not without honor, except in his own country and in his own house." He did not work many miracles there, because of their want of faith.

14 At that time Prince Herod heard of the fame of Jesus, and said to his attendants: "This must be John the Baptist; he must be risen from the dead, and that is why these miraculous powers are active in him." For Herod had arrested John, put him in chains, and shut him up in prison, to please Herodias, the wife of Herod's brother Philip. For John had said to him 'You have no right to be living with her.' Yet, though Herod wanted to put him

to death, he was afraid of the people, because they looked on John as a prophet. But, when Herod's birthday came, the daughter of Herodias danced before his guests, and so pleased Herod, that he promised with an oath to give her whatever she asked. Prompted by her mother, the girl said 'Give me here, on a dish, the head of John the Baptist.' The king was distressed at this; yet, because of his oath and of the guests at his table, he ordered it to be given her. He sent and beheaded John in the prison; and his head was brought on a dish and given to the girl, and she took it to her mother. Then John's disciples came, and took the body away, and buried it; and went and told Jesus.

When Jesus heard of it, he left privately in a boat to a lonely spot. The people, however, heard of his going, and followed him in crowds from the towns on foot. On getting out of the boat, Jesus saw a great crowd, and his heart was moved at the sight of them; and he cured all the sick among them. In the evening the disciples came up to him, and said: "This is a lonely spot, and the day is now far advanced; send the crowds away so that they can to the villages, and buy themselves food." But Jesus said: "They need not go away, it is for you to give them something to eat." "We have nothing here," they said, "except five loaves and two fishes."

"Bring them here to me," was his reply. Jesus ordered the people to take their seats on the grass; and, taking the five loaves and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, and said the blessing, and, after he had broken the loaves, gave them to his disciples; and they gave them to the crowds. Everyone had sufficient to eat, and they picked up enough of the broken pieces that were left to fill twelve baskets. The men who ate were about five thousand in number, without counting women and children. Immediately afterwards Jesus made the disciples get into a boat and cross over in advance of him, while he dismissed the crowds. After dismissing the crowds, he went up the hill by himself to pray; and, when evening fell, he was there alone. The boat was by this time some miles from shore, laboring in the waves, for the wind was against her. Three hours after midnight, however, Jesus came towards the disciples, walking on the water. But, when they saw him walking on the water, they were terrified.

27 "It is a ghost," they exclaimed, and cried out in fear. But Jesus at  
once spoke to them. "Courage!" he said, "It is I; do not be afraid!"  
28 "Master," Peter exclaimed, "if it is you, tell me to come to you on  
29 the water." Jesus said: "Come." So Peter got down from the boat,  
30 and walked on the water, and went towards Jesus; but, when he  
felt the wind, he was frightened, and, beginning to sink, cried  
31 out: "Master! Save me!" Instantly Jesus stretched out his hand,  
and caught hold of him. "You of little faith!" he said, "Why did  
32 you falter?" When they had got into the boat, the wind dropped.  
33 But the men in the boat threw themselves on their faces before  
him, and said: "You are indeed God's Son."

34 When they had crossed over, they landed at Gennesaret. But  
35 the people of that place, recognizing Jesus, sent out to the whole  
36 country around, and brought to him all who were ill, begging  
him merely to let them touch the tassel of his cloak; and all who  
touched were made perfectly well.

15 Then some Pharisees and teachers of the law came to Jesus,  
and said: "How is it that your disciples break the traditions of  
2 our ancestors? For they do not wash their hands when they eat  
3 food." His reply was: "How is it that you on your side break  
God's commandments out of respect for your own traditions?  
4 For God said — 'Honor your father and mother,' and 'Let him  
5 who abuses his father or mother suffer death,' but you say  
'Whenever anyone says to his father or mother "Whatever of  
6 mine might have been of service to you is 'Given to God,'" he is  
in no way bound to honor his father.' In this way you have nulli-  
fied the words of God for the sake of your traditions. Hypocrites!

7 It was well said by Isaiah when he prophesied about you —  
8 'This is a people that honor me with their lips, While their hearts  
9 are far removed from me; but vainly do they worship me, For  
they teach but human precepts.'" Then Jesus called the people to  
10 him, and said: "Listen, and mark my words. It is not what enters  
11 a person's mouth that 'defiles' them, but what comes out from  
12 their mouth — that does defile them!" His disciples came up to  
him, and said: "Do you know that the Pharisees were shocked  
on hearing what you said?"

13 "Every plant," Jesus replied, "that my heavenly Father has  
14 not planted will be rooted up. Let them be; they are but blind

guides; and, if one blind person guides another, both of them will fall into a ditch." Peter spoke up: "Explain this saying to us." 15

"What, do even you understand nothing yet?" Jesus exclaimed. "Do not you see that whatever goes into the mouth passes into the stomach, and is afterwards expelled? But the things that come out from the mouth proceed from the heart, and it is these that defile a person; for out of the heart proceed evil thoughts — murder, adultery, sexual immorality, theft, perjury, slander. These are the things that defile a person; but eating with unwashed hands does not defile a person." 16  
17  
18  
19  
20

On going away from that place, Jesus went to the country around Tyre and Sidon. There, a Canaanite woman of that district came out and began calling to Jesus: "Take pity on me, Master, Son of David; my daughter is grievously possessed by a demon." But Jesus did not answer her a word; and his disciples came up and begged him to send her away. "She keeps calling out after us," they said. "I was not sent," replied Jesus, "to anyone except the lost sheep of Israel." But the woman came, and, bowing to the ground before him, said: "Master, help me." 21  
22  
23  
24  
25

"It is not fair," replied Jesus, "to take the children's food and throw it to dogs." "Yes, Master," she said, "for even dogs do feed on the scraps that fall from their owners' table." 26  
27

"Your faith is great," was his reply to the woman; "it will be as you wish!" And her daughter was cured that very hour. 28

On leaving that place, Jesus went to the shore of the Sea of Galilee; and then went up the hill, and sat down., you will do what not only what has been done to the fig tree, but, even if you should say to this hill 'Be lifted up and hurled into the sea!' it would be done. Great crowds of people came to him, bringing with them those who were lame, crippled, blind, or dumb, and many others. They put them down at his feet, and he cured them; and the crowds were astonished, when they saw the dumb talking, the cripples made sound, the lame walking about, and the blind with their sight restored; and they praised the God of Israel. Afterwards Jesus called his disciples to him, and said: "My heart is moved at the sight of all these people, for they have already been with me three days and they have nothing to eat; 29  
30  
31  
32

and I am unwilling to send them away hungry; they might faint on the way home." "Where can we," his disciples asked, "in a lonely place find enough bread for such a crowd as this?"

"How many loaves have you?" said Jesus. "Seven," they answered, "and a few small fish." Telling the crowd to sit down on the ground, Jesus took the seven loaves and the fish, and, after saying the thanksgiving, broke them, and gave them to the disciples; and the disciples gave them to the crowds. Everyone had sufficient to eat, and they picked up seven baskets full of the broken pieces left. The men who ate were four thousand in number without counting women and children. Then, after dismissing the crowds, Jesus got into the boat, and went to the neighborhood of Magadan.

**16** Here the Pharisees and Sadducees came up, and, to test Jesus, requested him to show them some sign from the heavens. But Jesus answered: "In the evening you say 'It will be fine weather, for the sky is as red as fire.' But in the morning you say 'Today it will be stormy, for the sky is as red as fire and threatening.' You learn to read the sky; yet you are unable to read the signs of the times! A wicked and unfaithful generation is asking for a sign, but no sign will be given it except the sign of Jonah." So he left them and went away.

Now the disciples had crossed to the opposite shore, and had forgotten to take any bread. Presently Jesus said to them: "Take care and be on your guard against the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees." But the disciples began talking among themselves about their having brought no bread. On noticing this, Jesus said: "Why are you talking among yourselves about your being short of bread, you of little faith? Do not you yet see, nor remember the five loaves for the five thousand, and how many baskets you took away? Nor yet the seven loaves for the four thousand, and how many basketfuls you took away? How is it that you do not see that I was not speaking about bread? Be on your guard against the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees." Then they understood that he had told them to be on their guard, not against the leaven of bread, but against the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees.

On coming into the neighborhood of Caesarea Philippi, Jesus

asked his disciples this question — “Who do people say that the Son of Man is?” “Some say John the Baptist,” they answered, 14  
“Others, however, say that he is Elijah, while others again say Jeremiah, or one of the prophets.”

“But you,” he said, “who do you say that I am?” To this Simon Peter answered: “You are the Christ, the Son of the living God.” 15 16

“Blessed are you, Simon, Son of Jonah,” Jesus replied. “For no human being has revealed this to you, but my Father who is in heaven. Yes, and I say to you, Your name is ‘Peter — a Rock, and on this rock I will build my church, and the powers of the place of death will not prevail over it. I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven. Whatever you forbid on earth will be held in heaven to be forbidden, and whatever you allow on earth will be held in heaven to be allowed.” Then he charged his disciples not to tell anyone that he was the Christ. 17 18 19 20

At that time Jesus Christ began to explain to his disciples that he must go to Jerusalem, and undergo much suffering at the hands of the councillors, and chief priests, and teachers of the law, and be put to death, and rise on the third day. But Peter took Jesus aside, and began to rebuke him. “Master,” he said, “please God that will never be your fate!” Jesus, however, turning to Peter, said: “Out of my way, Satan! You are a hindrance to me; for you look at things, not as God does, but as person does.” Then Jesus said to his disciples: “If anyone wishes to walk in my steps, let him renounce self, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whoever wishes to save his life will lose it, and whoever, for my sake, loses his life will find it. What good will it do a person to gain the whole world, if he forfeits his life? Or what will a person give that is of equal value with his life? For the Son of Man is to come in his Father’s glory, with his angels, and then he ‘will give to everyone what his actions deserve.’ I tell you, some of those who are standing here will not know death until they have seen the Son of Man coming into his kingdom.” 21 22 23 24 25 26 27 28

Six days later, Jesus took with him Peter, and the brothers James and John, and led them up a high mountain alone. There his appearance was transformed before their eyes; his face shown like the sun, and his clothes became as white as the light. 17 2

3 All at once Moses and Elijah appeared to them, talking with  
4 Jesus. "Master," exclaimed Peter, interposing, "it is good to be  
5 here; if you wish, I will make three tents here, one for you, one  
6 for Moses, and one for Elijah." While he was still speaking, a  
7 bright cloud enveloped them, and there was a voice from the  
8 cloud that said — "This is my dearly loved son, who brings me  
9 great joy; listen to him." The disciples, on hearing this, fell on  
10 their faces, greatly afraid. But Jesus came and touched them,  
11 saying as he did so: "Rise up, and do not be afraid." When they  
12 raised their eyes, they saw no one but Jesus himself alone. As  
13 they were going down the mountain side, Jesus gave them this  
14 warning — "Do not speak of this vision to anyone, until the Son  
15 of Man has risen from the dead." "How is it," his disciples asked,  
16 "that our teachers of the law say that Elijah has to come first?"

17 "Elijah indeed does come," Jesus replied, "and will restore  
18 everything; and I tell you that Elijah has already come, and  
19 people have not recognized him, but have treated him just as  
20 they pleased. In the same way, too, the Son of Man is destined  
21 to undergo suffering at people's hands." Then the disciples  
22 understood that it was of John the Baptist that he had spoken  
to them.

23 When they came to the crowd, a man came up to Jesus, and,  
24 kneeling down before him, said: "Master, take pity on my son,  
25 for he is epileptic and suffers terribly; indeed, he often falls into  
26 the fire and into the water; I brought him to your disciples, but  
27 they could not cure him."

28 "Faithless and perverse generation!" Jesus exclaimed, "how  
29 long must I be among you? How long must I have patience with  
30 you? Bring the boy here to me." Then Jesus rebuked the demon,  
31 and it came out of the boy; and he was cured from that very  
32 hour. Afterwards the disciples came up to Jesus, and asked him  
privately: "Why was it that we could not drive it out?"

33 "Because you have so little faith," he answered; "for, I tell  
34 you, if your faith were only like a mustard seed, you could say  
35 to this mountain 'Move from this place to that!' and it would be  
36 moved; and nothing would be impossible to you."

37 While Jesus and his disciples were together in Galilee, he  
38 said to them: "The Son of Man is destined to be betrayed into



human hands, and they will put him to death, but on the third day he will rise." The disciples were greatly distressed. 23

After they had reached Capernaum, the collectors of the Temple-rate came up to Peter, and said: "Does not your Master pay the Temple-rate?" 24

"Yes," answered Peter. But, on going into the house, before he could speak, Jesus said: "What do you think, Simon? From whom do earthly kings take taxes or tribute? From their sons, or from others?" "From others," answered Peter. "Well then," continued Jesus, "their sons go free. Still, so we don't offend them, go and throw a line into the Sea; take the first fish that rises, open its mouth, and you will find in it a piece of money. Take that, and give it to the collectors for both of us." 25 26 27

On the same occasion the disciples came to Jesus, and asked him: "Who is really the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?" 18  
Jesus called a little child to him, and placed it in the middle of them, and then said: "I tell you, unless you change and become like little children, you will not enter the kingdom of heaven at all. Therefore, anyone who will humble themselves like this child — that person will be the greatest in the kingdom of heaven. And anyone who, for the sake of my name, welcomes even one little child like this, is welcoming me. But, if anyone puts temptation in the way of one of these little ones who believe in me, it would be best for them to be sunk in the depths of the sea with a great millstone hung around their neck. Alas for the world because of such temptations! There cannot but be temptations but sorrow awaits the person who does the tempting!" 2 3 4 5 6 7

If your hand or your foot causes you to sin, cut it off, and throw it away. It would be better for you to enter the life maimed or lame, than to have both hands, or both feet, and be thrown into the fire that never goes out. If your eye causes you to sin, take it out, and throw it away. It would be better for you to enter the life with only one eye, than to have both eyes and be thrown into the fires of Gehenna. Beware of despising one of these little ones, for in heaven, I tell you, their angels always see the face of my Father who is in heaven. 8 9 10

What think you? If a person owns a hundred sheep, and one of them strays, will the person not leave the ninety-nine on the 12

13 hills, and go and search for the one that is straying? And, if they  
succeed in finding it, I tell you that they rejoice more over that  
14 one sheep than over the ninety-nine which did not stray. So, too,  
it is the will of my Father who is in heaven that not one of these  
little ones should be lost.

15 If your brother or sister does wrong, go to them and convince  
them of their fault when you are both alone. If they listen to you,  
16 you have won them over. But, if they do not listen to you, take  
with you one or two others, so that 'on the evidence of two or  
17 three witnesses, every word may be put beyond dispute.' If they  
refuse to listen to them, speak to the church; and, if they also  
refuse to listen to the church, treat him as you would a Gentile  
or a tax-gatherer.

18 I tell you, all that you forbid on earth will be held in heaven  
to be forbidden, and all that you allow on earth will be held in  
19 heaven to be allowed. Again, I tell you that, if but two of you  
on earth agree as to what they will pray for, whatever it be, it  
20 will be granted them by my Father who is in heaven. For where  
two or three have come together in my name, I am present  
with them."

21 Then Peter came up, and said to Jesus: "Master, how often am  
I to forgive someone who wrongs me? As many as seven times?"  
22 But Jesus answered: "Not seven times, but 'seventy times seven.'  
23 Therefore the kingdom of heaven may be compared to a king  
who wished to settle accounts with his servants. When he had  
24 begun to do so, one of them was brought to him who owed him  
ten thousand bags of gold; and, as he could not pay, his master  
25 ordered him to be sold towards the payment of the debt, together  
with his wife, and his children, and everything that he had.  
26 The servant threw himself down on the ground before him and  
said 'Have patience with me, and I will pay you all.' The master  
27 was moved with compassion; and he let him go, and forgave  
him the debt. But, on going out, that same servant came upon  
28 one of his fellow servants who owed him a hundred silver coins.  
Seizing him by the throat, he said 'Pay what you owe me.' His  
29 fellow servant threw himself on the ground and begged for mercy.  
30 'Have patience with me,' he said, 'and I will pay you.' But the  
other would not, but went and put him in prison until he should

pay his debt. When his fellow servants saw what had happened, they were greatly distressed, and went to their master and laid the whole matter before him. So the master sent for the servant, and said to him 'You wicked servant! When you begged me for mercy, I forgave you the whole of that debt. Ought not you, also, to have shown mercy to your fellow servant, just as I showed mercy to you?' Then his master, in anger, handed him over to the jailers, until he should pay the whole of his debt. So, also, will my heavenly Father do to you, unless each one of you forgives his brother or sister from your heart."

### *The Journey to Jerusalem*

AT THE CONCLUSION OF THIS TEACHING, Jesus withdrew from Galilee, and went into that district of Judea which is on the other side of the Jordan. Great crowds followed him, and he cured them there. Presently some Pharisees came up to him, and, to test him, said: "Has a man the right to divorce his wife for every cause?"

"Have not you read," replied Jesus, "that at the beginning the Creator 'made them male and female,' and said — 'For this reason a man will leave his father and mother, and be united to his wife, and the man and his wife will become one'? So that they are no longer two, but one. What God himself, then, has yoked together people must not separate." "Why, then," they said, "did Moses direct that a man should 'serve his wife with a notice of separation and divorce her'?"

"Moses, owing to the hardness of your hearts," answered Jesus, "permitted you to divorce your wives, but that was not so at the beginning. But I tell you that anyone who divorces his wife, except on the ground of some serious sexual sin, and marries another woman, is guilty of adultery." "If that," said the disciples, "is the position of a man with regard to his wife, it is better not to marry."

"It is not everyone," replied Jesus, "who can accept this teaching, but only those who have been enabled to do so. Some men, it is true, have from birth been disabled for marriage, while

others have been disabled by their fellow men, and others again have disabled themselves for the sake of the kingdom of heaven. Let him accept it who can."

13 Then some little children were brought to Jesus, for him to  
place his hands on them, and pray; but the disciples found fault  
14 with those who had brought them. Jesus, however, said: "Let the  
little children come to me, and do not hinder them, for it is to the  
15 childlike that the kingdom of heaven belongs." So he placed his  
hands on them, and then went on his way.

16 A man came up to Jesus, and said: "Teacher, what good thing  
must I do to obtain eternal life?"

17 "Why ask me about goodness?" answered Jesus. "There  
is but One who is good. If you want to enter the life, keep the  
18 commandments." "What commandments?" asked the man.  
"These," answered Jesus: — "'You must not kill. You must not  
commit adultery. You must not steal. You must not say what is  
19 false about others. Honor your father and your mother.' And  
'You must love your neighbor as you love yourself.'" "I have ob-  
20 served all these," said the young man. "What is still wanting  
in me?"

21 "If you wish to be perfect," answered Jesus, "go and sell  
your property, and give to the poor, and you will have wealth in  
22 heaven; then come and follow me." On hearing these words, the  
young man went away distressed, for he had great possessions.  
23 At this, Jesus said to his disciples: "I tell you that a rich person  
will find it hard to enter the kingdom of heaven! I say again, it  
24 is easier for a camel to get through a needle's eye than for a rich  
person to enter the kingdom of heaven!" On hearing this, the  
25 disciples exclaimed in great astonishment: "Who then can possi-  
26 bly be saved?" But Jesus looked at them, and said: "With people  
this is impossible, but with God everything is possible." Then  
27 Peter turned and said to Jesus: "But we — we left everything,  
and followed you; what, then, will we have?"

28 "I tell you," answered Jesus, "that at the new creation, 'when  
the Son of Man takes his seat on his throne of glory,' you who  
followed me will be seated on twelve thrones, as judges of the  
29 twelve tribes of Israel. Everyone who has left houses, or brothers,  
or sisters, or father, or mother, or children, or land, for my sake,

will receive many times as much, and will 'gain eternal life.' But 30  
many who are first now will then be last, and those who are last  
will be first. For the kingdom of heaven is like an employer who 20  
went out in the early morning to hire laborers for his vineyards.  
He agreed with the laborers to pay them the standard daily rate 2  
of two silver coins, and sent them into his vineyard. On going 3  
out again, about nine o'clock, he saw some others standing in  
the marketplace, doing nothing. 'You also may go into my vine- 4  
yard,' he said, 'and I will pay you what is fair.' So they went. 5  
Going out again about midday and about three o'clock, he did  
as before. When he went out about five, he found some others 6  
standing there, and said to them 'Why have you been standing  
here all day long, doing nothing?' 'Because no one has hired us,' 7  
they answered. 'You also may go into my vineyard,' he said. In  
the evening the owner of the vineyard said to his steward 'Call 8  
the laborers, and pay them their wages, beginning with the last,  
and ending with the first. Now when those who had been hired 9  
about five o'clock went up, they received two silver coins each.  
So, when the first went up, they thought that they would receive 10  
more, but they also received two silver coins each; on which they  
began to grumble at their employer. 'These last,' they said, 'have 11  
done only one hour's work, and yet you have put them on the  
same footing with us, who have borne the brunt of the day's 12  
work, and the heat.' 'My friend,' was his reply to one of them, 'I  
am not treating you unfairly. Did not you agree with me for two 13  
silver coins? Take what belongs to you, and go. I choose to give  
to this last man the same as to you. Have not I the right to do as 14  
I choose with what is mine? Are you envious because I am liberal- 15  
al?' So those who are last will be first, and the first last." 16

When Jesus was on the point of going up to Jerusalem, he 17  
gathered the twelve disciples around him by themselves, and  
said to them as they were on their way: "Listen! We are going up 18  
to Jerusalem; and there the Son of Man will be betrayed to the  
chief priests and teachers of the law, and they will condemn him  
to death, and give him up to the Gentiles for them to mock, and 19  
to scourge, and to crucify; and on the third day he will rise."

Then the mother of Zebedee's sons came to him with her 20

21 sons, bowing to the ground, and begging a favor. "What is it that you want?" he asked. "I want you to say," she replied, "that in your kingdom these two sons of mine may sit, one on your right, and the other on your left."

22 "You do not know what you are asking," was Jesus' answer. "Can you drink the cup that I am to drink?" "Yes," they exclaimed, "we can."

23 "You will indeed drink my cup," he said, "but as to a seat at my right and at my left — that is not mine to give, but it is for those for whom it has been prepared by my Father." On hearing of this, the ten others were very indignant about the two brothers. Jesus, however, called the ten to him, and said: "The rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them as you know, and their high officials oppress them. Among you it is not so. No, whoever wants to become great among you must be your servant, and whoever wants to take the first place among you, must be your slave; just as the Son of Man came, not to be served, but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for many."

29 As they were going out of Jericho, a great crowd followed him. Two blind men who were sitting by the roadside, hearing that Jesus was passing, called out: "Take pity on us, Master, Son of David!" The crowd told them to be quiet; but the men only called out the louder: "Take pity on us, Master, Son of David!" Then Jesus stopped and called them. "What do you want me to do for you?" he said. "Master," they replied, "we want our eyes to be opened." So Jesus, moved with compassion, touched their eyes, and immediately they recovered their sight, and followed him.

### *The Last Days*

21 WHEN THEY HAD ALMOST REACHED JERUSALEM, having come as far as Bethphage, on the Mount of Olives, Jesus sent on two disciples. "Go to the village facing you," he said, "and you will immediately find an ass tethered, with a foal by her side; untie her, and lead her here for me. And, if anyone says anything to you, you are to say this — 'The Master wants them'; and he will send

them at once." This happened in fulfillment of these words in the prophet — "Say to the people of Zion — "Your King is coming to you, gentle, and riding on an ass, and on the foal of a beast of burden."

So the disciples went and did as Jesus had directed them. They led the ass and the foal back, and, when they had put their cloaks on them, he seated himself on them. The immense crowd of people spread their cloaks in the road, while some cut branches off the trees, and spread them on the road. The crowds that led the way, as well as those that followed behind, kept shouting: "God save the Son of David! Blessed is he who comes in the name of the Lord! God save him from on high!" When he had entered Jerusalem, the whole city was stirred, and asked — "Who is this?", to which the crowd replied — "This is the prophet Jesus from Nazareth in Galilee."

Jesus went into the Temple Courts, and drove out all those who were buying and selling there. He overturned the tables of the money changers, and the seats of the pigeon-dealers, and said to them: "Scripture says 'My house will be called a house of prayer'; but you are making it 'a den of robbers.'" While he was still in the Temple Courts, some blind and some lame people came up to him, and he cured them. But, when the chief priests and the teachers of the law saw the wonderful things that Jesus did, and the boys who were calling out in the Temple Courts "God save the Son of David!", they were indignant, and said to him: "Do you hear what these boys are saying?"

"Yes," answered Jesus; "but did you never read the words — 'Out of the mouths of babes and sucklings you have called forth perfect praise'?"

Then he left them, and went out of the city to Bethany, and spent the night there.

The next morning, in returning to the city, Jesus became hungry; and, noticing a solitary fig tree by the roadside, he went up to it, but found nothing on it but leaves. So he said to it: "Never again will fruit be gathered off you." And suddenly the fruit tree withered up. When the disciples saw this, they exclaimed in astonishment: "How suddenly the fig tree withered up!"

21 "I tell you," replied Jesus, "if you have faith, without ever  
a doubt, you will do what not only what has been done to the  
22 fig tree, but, even if you should say to this hill 'Be lifted up and  
hurled into the sea!' it would be done. And whatever you ask for  
in your prayers will, if you have faith, be granted you."

23 After Jesus had come into the Temple Courts, the chief  
priests and the councillors of the Nation came up to him as he  
was teaching, and said: "What authority have you to do these  
things? Who gave you this authority?"

24 "I, too," said Jesus in reply, "will ask you one question; if you  
will give me an answer to it, then I, also, will tell you what au-  
25 thority I have to act as I do. It is about John's baptism. What was  
its origin? Divine or human?" But they began arguing among  
themselves: "If we say 'divine,' he will say to us 'Why then did  
26 not you believe him?' But if we say 'human,' we are afraid of the  
27 people, for everyone regards John as a prophet." So the answer  
they gave Jesus was — "We do not know."

"Then I," he said, "refuse to tell you what authority I have  
28 to do these things. What do you think of this? There was a man  
who had two sons. He went to the elder and said 'Go and work  
29 in the vineyard today my son.' 'Yes, sir,' he answered; but he  
did not go. Then the father went to the second son, and said the  
30 same. 'I will not,' he answered; but afterwards he was sorry and  
went. Which of the two sons did as his father wished?" "The sec-  
31 ond," they said. "I tell you," added Jesus, "that tax-gatherers and  
prostitutes are going into the kingdom of God before you. For  
32 when John came to you, walking in the path of righteousness,  
you did not believe him, but tax-gatherers and prostitutes did;  
and yet you, though you saw this, even then were not sorry, nor  
did you believe him.

33 Listen to another parable. A man, who was an employ-  
er, once planted a vineyard, put a fence around it, dug a wine-  
press in it, built a tower, and then let it out to tenants and went  
34 abroad. When the time for the grape harvest drew near, he sent  
his servants to the tenants, to receive his share of the produce.  
35 But the tenants seized his servants, beat one, killed another, and  
stoned a third. A second time the owner sent some servants, a  
36 larger number than before, and the tenants treated them in the



same way. As a last resource he sent his son to them. 'They will respect my son,' he said. But the tenants, on seeing his son, said to each other 'Here is the heir! Come, let us kill him, and get his inheritance.' So they seized him, and threw him outside the vineyard, and killed him. Now, when the owner of the vineyard comes, what will he do to those tenants?" "Miserable wretches!" they exclaimed, "he will put them to a miserable death, and he will let out the vineyard to other tenants, who will pay him his share of the produce at the proper times." Then Jesus added: "Have you never read in the scriptures? — 'The stone which the builders despised — Has now itself become the corner-stone; This corner-stone has come from the Lord, and is marvelous in our eyes.' That, I tell you, is why the kingdom of God will be taken from you, and given to a nation that does produce the fruit of the kingdom. Yes, and he who falls on this stone will be dashed to pieces, while anyone on whom it falls — it will scatter him as dust."

After listening to these parables, the chief priests and the Pharisees saw that it was about them that he was speaking; yet, although eager to arrest him, they were afraid of the crowds, who regarded him as a prophet.

Once more Jesus spoke to them in parables. "The kingdom of heaven," he said, "may be compared to a king who gave a banquet in honor of his son's wedding. He sent his servants to call those who had been invited to the banquet, but they were unwilling to come. A second time he sent some servants, with orders to say to those who had been invited 'I have prepared my breakfast, my cattle and fat beasts are killed and everything is ready; come to the banquet.' They, however, took no notice, but went off, one to their farm, another to their business; while the rest, seizing his servants, ill-treated them and killed them. The king, in anger, sent his troops, put those murderers to death, and set their city on fire. Then he said to his servants 'The banquet is prepared, but those who were invited were not worthy. So go to the cross-roads, and invite everyone you find to the banquet.' The servants went out into the roads and collected all the people whom they found, whether bad or good; and the bridal-

11 hall was filled with guests. But, when the king went in to see his  
12 guests, he noticed there a man who had not put on a wedding-  
13 robe. So he said to him 'My friend, how is it that you came in  
14 here without a wedding-robe?' The man was speechless. Then  
15 the king said to the attendants 'Tie him hand and foot, and 'put  
16 him out into the darkness' outside, where there will be weeping  
17 and grinding of teeth.' For many are called, but few chosen."

18 Then the Pharisees went away and conferred together as to  
19 how they might lay a trap for Jesus in the course of conversa-  
20 tion. They sent their disciples, with the Herodians, to say to him:  
21 "Teacher, we know that you are an honest person, and that you  
22 teach the way of God honestly, and are not afraid of anyone; for  
23 you pay no regard to a person's position. Tell us, then, what you  
24 think. Are we right in paying taxes to the Emperor, or not?" Per-  
25 ceiving their malice, Jesus answered: "Why are you testing me,  
26 you hypocrites? Show me the coin with which the tax is paid."  
27 And, when they had brought him a coin, he asked: "Whose head  
28 and title are these?" "The Emperor's," they answered: on which  
29 he said to them: "Then pay to the Emperor what belongs to the  
30 Emperor, and to God what belongs to God." They wondered at  
31 his answer, and left him alone and went away.

32 That same day some Sadducees came up to Jesus, main-  
33 taining that there is no resurrection. Their question was this: —  
34 "Teacher, Moses said — 'should a man die without children, the  
35 man's brother will become the husband of the widow, and raise  
36 a family for his brother.' Now we had living among us seven  
37 brothers; of whom the eldest married and died, and, as he had  
38 no family, left his wife for his brother. The same thing happened  
39 to the second and the third brothers, and indeed to all the seven.  
40 The woman herself died last of all. At the resurrection, then,  
41 whose wife will she be out of the seven, all of them having been  
42 married to her?"

43 "Your mistake," replied Jesus, "is due to your ignorance of  
44 the scriptures, and of the power of God. For at the resurrection  
45 there is no marrying or being married, but all who rise are as  
46 angels in heaven. As to the resurrection of the dead, have you  
47 not read these words of God — 'I am the God of Abraham, and  
48 the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? He is not the God of

dead people, but of living." The crowds, who had been listening to him, were greatly struck with his teaching. 33

When the Pharisees heard that Jesus had silenced the Sadducees, they collected together. Then one of them, a Student of the law, to test him, asked this question — "Teacher, what is the great commandment in the law?" His answer was: "'You must love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind.' This is the great first commandment. The second, which is like it, is this — 'You must love your neighbor as you love yourself.' On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets." Before the Pharisees separated, Jesus put this question to them — "What do you think about the Christ? Whose son is he?" "David's," they said. "How is it, then," Jesus replied, "that David, speaking under inspiration, calls him 'lord,' in the passage — 'The Lord said to my Lord: "Sit at my right hand, until I put your enemies beneath your feet"'? Since, then, David calls him 'lord,' how is he David's son?" No one could say a word in answer; nor did anyone after that day venture to question him further. 34 35 36 37 38 39 40 41 42 43 44 45 46

Then Jesus speaking to the crowds and to his disciples, said: **23**  
 "The teachers of the law and the Pharisees now occupy the chair of Moses. Therefore practice and lay to heart everything that they tell preach but do not practice. While they make up heavy loads and pile them on other people's shoulder's they decline, themselves, to lift a finger to move them. All their actions are done to attract attention. They widen their phylacteries, and increase the size of their tassels, and like to have the place of honor at dinner, and the best seats in the Synagogues, and to be greeted in the markets with respect, and to be called 'Rabbi' for everybody. But do not allow yourselves to be called 'Rabbi,' for you have only one teacher, and you yourselves are all brothers and sisters. And do not call anyone on the earth your 'Father,' for you have only one Father, the heavenly Father. Nor must you allow yourselves to be called 'leaders,' for you have only one leader, the Christ. The person who wants to be the greatest among you must be your servant. Whoever exalts themselves will be humbled, and whoever humbles themselves will be exalted. But 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12

13     alas for you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, hypocrites that  
you are! You turn the key of the kingdom of heaven in people's  
faces. For you do not go in yourselves, nor yet allow those who  
14     try to go in to do so. Alas for you, teachers of the law and Phar-  
isees, hypocrites that you are! You destroy widow's houses, even  
while pretending to make long prayers; therefore you will re-  
15     ceive greater condemnation. Alas for you, teachers of the law  
and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are! You scour land and sea  
to make a single convert, and, when they are gained, you make  
them twice as deserving of Gehenna as you are yourselves. Alas  
16     for you, you blind guides! You say 'if any answer by the Tem-  
ple, their oath counts for nothing; but, if anyone swears by the  
17     gold of the Temple, their oath is binding them'! Fools that you  
are and blind! Which is the more important? The gold? Or the  
18     Temple which has given sacredness to the gold? You say, too, 'if  
anyone swears by the altar, their oath counts for nothing, but, if  
anyone swears by the offering placed on it, their oath is binding  
19     on them'! Blind indeed! Which is the more important? The offer-  
ing? Or the altar which gives sacredness to the offering? There-  
20     fore a person, swearing by the altar, swears by it and by all that  
is on it, and a person, swearing by the Temple, swears by it and  
21     by him who dwells in it, while a person, swearing by heaven,  
22     swears by the throne of God, and by him who sits on it. Alas for  
23     you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are!  
You pay tithes on mint, fennel, and caraway seed, and have ne-  
glected the weightier matters of the law — justice, mercy, and  
good faith. These last you ought to have put into practice, with-  
24     out neglecting the first. You blind guides, to strain out a gnat and  
25     to swallow a camel! Alas for you, teachers of the law and Phar-  
isees, hypocrites that you are! You clean the outside of the cup  
and the dish, but inside they are filled with the results of greed  
and self-indulgence. You blind Pharisee! First clean the inside  
26     of the cup and the dish, so that the outside may become clean as  
well. Alas for you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, hypocrites  
27     that you are! You are like whitewashed tombs, which indeed  
look fair outside, while inside they are filled with dead people's  
28     bones and all kinds of filth. It is the same with you. Outwardly,  
and to others, you have the look of religious people, but inward-

ly you are full of hypocrisy and sin. Alas for you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are! You build the tombs of the prophets, and decorate the monuments of religious people, and say 'Had we been living in the days of our ancestors, we should have taken part in their murder of the prophets! By doing this you are furnishing evidence against yourselves that you are true children of the people who murdered the prophets. Fill up the measure of your ancestor's guilt. You snakes and children of snakes! How can you escape being sentenced to Gehenna? That is why I send you prophets, wise people, and teachers of the law, some of whom you will crucify and kill, and some of whom you will scourge in your Synagogues, and persecute from town to town; in order the blood on your heads may fall every drop of innocent 'blood split on earth,' from the blood of innocent Abel down to that of Zechariah, Barachiah's son, whom you murdered between the Temple and the altar. All this, I tell you, will come home to the present generation. Jerusalem! Jerusalem! She who slays the prophets and stones the messengers sent to her — Oh, how often have I wished to gather your children around me, as a hen gathers her brood under her wings, and you would not come! Verily, your house is left to you desolate! For nevermore, I tell you, will you see me, until you say — 'Blessed is He who comes in the name of the Lord!'"

Leaving the Temple Courts, Jesus was walking away, when his disciples came up to draw his attention to the Temple buildings. "Do you see all these things?" was his answer. "I tell you, not a single stone will be left here on another, which will not be thrown down," so, while Jesus was sitting on the Mount of Olives, his disciples came up to him privately and said: "Tell us when this will be, and what will be the sign of your coming, and of the close of the age." Jesus replied to them: "See that no one leads you astray; for, many will take my name, and come saying 'I am the Christ,' and will lead many astray. You will hear of wars and rumors of wars; take care not to be alarmed, for such things must occur; but the end is not yet here. For 'nation will rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom,' and there will be famines and earthquakes in various places. All this, how-

9 ever, will be but the beginning of the birth pangs! When that  
time comes, they will give you up to persecution, and will put  
you to death, and you will be hated by all nations because of  
10 me. And then many will fall away, and will betray one another,  
and hate one another. Many false prophets, also, will appear and  
11 lead many astray; and, owing to the increase of wickedness, the  
love of most will grow cold. Yet the person who endures to the  
12 end will be saved. This good news of the kingdom will be pro-  
claimed throughout the world as a witness to all nations; and  
13 then will come the end. As soon, then, as you see 'the Foul Dese-  
cration,' mentioned by the prophet Daniel, standing in the Holy  
14 place," (the reader must consider what this means) "then those  
of you who are in Judea must take refuge in the mountains; and  
15 a man on the housetop must not go down to get the things that  
are in his house; nor must one who is on their farm turn back to  
16 get his cloak. Alas for pregnant women, and for those who are  
nursing infants in those days! Pray, too, that your flight may not  
17 take place in winter, nor on a Sabbath; for that will be 'a time of  
great distress, the like of which has not occurred from the begin-  
18 ning of the world down to the present time' — no, nor ever will  
again. Had not those days been limited, not a single soul would  
19 escape; but for the sake of 'God's people' a limit will be put to  
them. At that time, if anyone should say to you 'Look! Here is  
20 the Christ!' or 'Here he is!', do not believe it; for false Christs  
and false prophets will arise, and will display great signs and  
21 marvels, so that, were it possible, even God's people would be  
led astray. Remember, I have told you beforehand. Therefore, if  
22 people say to you 'He is in the wilderness!', do not go out there;  
or 'He is in an inner room!', do not believe it; for, just as light-  
23 ning will start from the east and flash across to the west, so will  
it be with the coming of the Son of Man. Wherever a dead body  
24 lies, there will the vultures flock.' Immediately after the distress  
of those days, 'the sun will be darkened, the moon will not give  
25 her light, the stars will fall from the heavens,' and 'the forces of  
the heavens will be convulsed.' Then will appear the sign of the  
26 Son of Man in the heavens; and all the peoples of the earth will  
mourn, when they see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of  
27 the heavens,' with power and great glory; and he will send his  
28  
29  
30  
31

angels, with a great trumpet, and they will gather his people around him from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

Learn the lesson taught by the fig tree. As soon as its branches are full of sap, and it is bursting into leaf, you know that summer is near. And so may you, as soon as you see all these things, know that he is at your doors. I tell you, even the present generation will not pass away, until all these things have taken place. The heavens and the earth will pass away, but my words will never pass away. But about that day and hour, no one knows — not even the angels of heaven, nor yet the Son — but only the Father himself. For, just as in the days of Noah, so will it be at the coming of the Son of Man. In those days before the flood they went on eating and drinking, marrying and being married, up to the very day on which Noah entered the ark, taking not notice until the flood came and swept them one and all away; and so will it be at the coming of the Son of Man. At that time, of two men on a farm one will be taken and one left; of two women grinding with the hand-mill one will be taken and one left. Therefore watch; for you cannot be sure on what day your Master is coming. But this you do know, that, had the owner of the house known at what time of night the thief was coming, they would have been on the watch, and would not have allowed their house to be broken into. Therefore, you must also prepare, since it is just when you are least expecting him that the Son of Man will come. Who, then is that trustworthy, careful servant, who has been placed by their master over his household, to give them their food at the proper time? Happy will that servant be whom their master, when he comes home, will find doing this. I tell you that their master will put them in charge of the whole of his property. But, should the servant be a bad servant, and say to themselves 'My master is a long time in coming,' and begin to beat their fellow servants, and eat and drink with drunkards, that servant's master will come on a day when they do not expect him, and at an hour of which they are unaware, and will flog the servant severely, and assign them their place among the hypocrites, where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth.

25 Then the kingdom of heaven will be like ten bridesmaids  
2 who took their lamps and went out to meet the groom. Five of  
3 them were foolish, and five were prudent. The foolish ones took  
4 their lamps, but took no oil with them; while the prudent ones,  
5 besides taking their lamps, took oil in their jars. As the groom  
6 was late in coming, they all became drowsy, and slept. But at  
7 midnight a shout was raised — ‘The groom is coming! Come out  
8 to meet him!’ Then all the bridesmaids woke up and trimmed  
9 their lamps, and the foolish said to the prudent ‘Give us some  
10 of your oil; our lamps are going out.’ But the prudent ones an-  
11 swered ‘No, There may not be enough for you and for us. Go in-  
12 stead to those who sell it, and buy for yourselves.’ But while they  
13 were on their way to buy it, the groom came; and the brides-  
14 maids who were ready went in with him to the banquet, and the  
15 door was shut. Afterwards the other bridesmaids came. ‘Sir, Sir,’  
16 they said, ‘open the door to us!’ But the groom answered ‘I tell  
17 you, I do not know you.’ Therefore watch, since you know nei-  
18 ther the day nor the hour.

14 For it is as though a man, going on his travels, called his  
15 servants, and gave his property into their charge. He gave five  
16 bags of gold to one, two to another, and one bag to a third, in  
17 proportion to the ability of each. Then he set out on his travels.  
18 The servant who had received the five bags of gold went at once  
19 and traded with it, and made another five bags. So, too, the ser-  
20 vant who had received the two bags of gold made another two  
21 bags. But the servant who had received the one bag went and  
22 dug a hole in the ground, and hid his master’s money. After a  
23 long time the master of those servants returned, and settled ac-  
24 counts with them. The servant who had received the five bags  
25 of gold came up and brought five bags more. ‘Sir,’ he said, ‘you  
26 entrusted me with five bags of gold; look, I have made another  
27 five bags!’ ‘Well done, good, trustworthy servant!’ said his mas-  
28 ter. ‘You have been trustworthy with a small sum; now I will  
29 place a large one in your hands; come and share your master’s  
30 joy!’ Then the one who had received the two bags of gold came  
31 up and said ‘Sir, you entrusted me with two bags pounds; look,  
32 I have made another two!’ ‘Well done, good, trustworthy ser-  
33 vant!’ said his master. ‘You have been trustworthy with a small



sum; now I will place a large one in your hands; come and share your master's joy!' The man who had received the single bag of gold came up, too, and said 'Sir, I knew that you were a hard man; you reap where you have not sown, and gather up where you have not winnowed; and, in my fear, I went and hid your money in the ground; look, here is what belongs to you!' 'You lazy, worthless servant!' was his master's reply. 'You knew that I reap where I have not sown, and gather up where I have not winnowed? Then you ought to have placed my money in the hands of bankers, and I, on my return, should have received my money, with interest. 'Therefore,' he continued, 'take away from him the one bag of gold, and give it to the one who has the ten bags. For, to him who has, more will be given, and he will have abundance; but, as for him who has nothing, even what he has will be taken away from him. As for the useless servant, 'put him out into the darkness' outside, where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth.'

When the Son of Man has come in his glory and all the angels with him, then he 'will take his seat on his throne of glory'; and all the nations will be gathered before him, and he will separate the people — just as a shepherd separates sheep from goats — placing the sheep on his right hand, and the goats on his left. Then the king will say to those on his right 'Come, you who are blessed by my Father, enter into possession of the kingdom prepared for you ever since the beginning of the world. For, when I was hungry, you gave me food; when I was thirsty, you gave me drink; when I was a stranger, you took me to your homes; when I was naked, you clothed me; when I fell ill, you visited me; and when I was in prison, you came to me.' Then the righteous will answer 'Lord, when did we see you hungry, and feed you? Or thirsty, and give you a drink? When did we see you a stranger, and take you to our homes? Or naked, and clothe you? When did we see you ill, or in prison, and come to you?' And the king will reply 'I tell you, as often as you did it to one of these my brothers or sisters, however unimportant they seemed, you did it to me.' Then he will say to those on his left 'Go from my presence, accursed, into the 'permanent fire which has been prepared for

42 the devil and his angels.' For, when I was hungry, you gave me  
43 no food; when I was thirsty, you gave me no drink; when I was a  
stranger, you did not take me to your homes; when I was naked,  
44 you did not clothe me; and, when I was ill and in prison, you did  
not visit me.' Then they, in their turn, will answer 'Lord, when  
45 did we see you hungry, or thirsty, or a stranger, or naked, or ill,  
or in prison, and did not supply your wants?' And then he will  
46 reply 'I tell you, as often as you failed to do it to one of these,  
however unimportant, you failed to do it to me.' And these last  
will go away 'into lasting correction,' but the righteous 'into last-  
ing life.'"

26 When Jesus had finished teaching all of that, he said to his  
2 disciples: "You know that in two days time the Festival of the  
Passover will be here; and that the Son of Man is to be given  
3 up to be crucified." Then the chief priests and the councillors of  
the Nation met in the house of the high priest, who was called  
4 Caiaphas, and plotted together to arrest Jesus by stealth and  
5 put him to death; but they said: "Not during the Festival, or the  
people may riot."

6 After Jesus had reached Bethany, and while he was in the  
7 house of Simon the leper, a woman came up to him with an al-  
baster jar of very costly perfume, and poured the perfume on  
8 his head as he sat at the table. The disciples were indignant at  
9 seeing this. "What is this waste for?" they exclaimed. "It could  
have been sold for a large sum, and the money given to poor  
people."

10 "Why are you troubling the woman?" Jesus said, when he  
noticed it. "For this is a beautiful deed that she has done to me.  
11 You always have the poor with you, but you will not always  
12 have me. In pouring this perfume on my body, she has done it  
13 for my burying. I tell you, wherever, in the whole world, this  
good news is proclaimed, what this woman has done will be  
told in memory of her."

14 It was then that one of the Twelve, named Judas Iscariot,  
15 made his way to the chief priests, and said "What are you will-  
ing to give me, if I betray Jesus to you?" The Priests 'weighed  
16 him out thirty pieces of silver' as payment. So from that time Ju-  
das looked for an opportunity to betray Jesus.

On the first day of the Festival of the unleavened bread, the disciples came up to Jesus, and said: "Where do you wish us to make preparations for you to eat the Passover?" 17

"Go into the city to a certain man," he answered, "and say to him 'The teacher says — My time is near. I will keep the Passover with my disciples at your house.'" The disciples did as Jesus directed them, and prepared the Passover. In the evening Jesus took his place with the twelve disciples, and, while they were eating, he said: "I tell you that one of you will betray me." In great grief they began to say to him, one by one: "Can it be I, Master?" 18 19 20 21 22

"The one who dipped his bread beside me in the dish," replied Jesus, "is the one who will betray me. True, the Son of Man must go, as scripture says of him, yet alas for that man by whom the Son of Man is being betrayed! For that man 'it would be better never to have been born!'" Judas, who was betraying him, turned to him and said: "Can it be I, Rabbi?" 23 24 25

"It is," answered Jesus.

While they were eating, Jesus took some bread, and, after saying the blessing, broke it and, as he gave it to his disciples, said: "Take it and eat it; this is my body." Then he took a cup, and, after saying the thanksgiving, gave it to them, with the words: "Drink from it, all of you; for this is my covenant blood, which is poured out for many for the forgiveness of sins. I tell you that I will never, after this, drink of this juice of the grape, until that day when I will drink it new with you in the kingdom of my Father." 26 27 28 29

They then sang a hymn, and went out to the Mount of Olives. Then Jesus said to them: "Even you will all fall away from me tonight. Scripture says — 'I will strike down the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock will be scattered.' But, after I have risen, I will go before you into Galilee." "If everyone else falls away from you," Peter answered, "I will never fall away!" 30 31 32 33

"I tell you," replied Jesus, "that this very night, before the cock crows, you will disown me three times!" "Even if I must die with you," Peter exclaimed, "I will never disown you!" All the disciples spoke in the same way. 34 35

36 Then Jesus came with them to a garden called Gethsemane,  
37 and he said to his disciples: "Sit down here while I go and pray  
38 over there." Taking with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee,  
39 he began to show signs of sadness and deep distress of mind.  
40 "I am sad at heart," he said, "sad even to death; wait here and  
41 watch with me." Going on a little further, he threw himself on  
42 his face in prayer. "My Father," he said, "if it is possible, let me  
43 be spared this cup; only, not as I will, but as you will." Then he  
44 came to his disciples, and found them asleep. "What!" he said  
45 to Peter, "could none of you watch with me for one hour? Watch  
46 and pray so that you don't fall into temptation. True, the spirit  
47 is eager, but human nature is weak." Again, a second time, he  
48 went away, and prayed. "My Father," he said, "if I cannot be  
49 spared this cup, but must drink it, your will be done!" And coming  
50 back again he found them asleep, for their eyes were heavy.  
51 So he left them, and went away again, and prayed a third time,  
52 again saying the same words. Then he came to the disciples, and  
53 said: "Sleep on now, and rest yourselves. Look - my time is close  
54 at hand, and the Son of Man is being betrayed into the hands  
55 of wicked people. Up, and let us be going. Look! My betrayer  
is close at hand." And, while he was still speaking, Judas, who  
was one of the Twelve, came in sight; and with him was a great  
crowd of people, with swords and clubs, sent from the chief  
priests and councillors of the nation. Now the betrayer had arranged  
a signal with them. "The man whom I kiss," he had said,  
"will be the one; arrest him." So he went up to Jesus at once, and  
exclaimed: "Welcome, Rabbi!" and kissed him; on which Jesus  
said to him: "Friend, do what you have come for." The men went  
up, seized Jesus, and arrested him. Suddenly one of those who  
were with Jesus stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and  
striking the high priest's servant, cut off his ear. "Sheathe your  
sword," Jesus said, "for all who draw the sword will be put to  
the sword. Do you think that I cannot ask my Father for help,  
when he would at once send to my aid more than twelve legions  
of angels? But in that case how would the scriptures be fulfilled,  
which say that this must be?" Jesus at the same time said to the  
crowds: "Have you come out, as if after a robber, with swords  
and clubs, to take me? I have sat teaching day after day in the

Temple Courts, and yet you did not arrest me." The whole of this occurred in fulfillment of the Prophetic scriptures. Then the disciples all forsook him and fled. 56

Those who had arrested Jesus took him to Caiaphas, the high priest, where the teachers of the law and the councillors had assembled. Peter followed him at a distance as far as the courtyard of the offices, to see the end. Meanwhile the chief priests and the whole of the High Council were trying to get such false evidence against Jesus, as would warrant putting him to death, but they did not find any, although many came forward with false evidence. Later on, however, two men came forward and said: "This man said 'I am able to destroy the Temple of God, and to build it in three days.'" Then the high priest stood up, and said to Jesus: "Have you no answer? What is this evidence which these men are giving against you?" But Jesus remained silent. The high priest said to him: "I order you, by the living God, to tell us whether you are the Christ, the Son of God." 57 58 59 60 61 62 63

"It is true," Jesus answered; "Moreover I tell you all that hereafter you will 'see the Son of Man sitting on the right hand of the Almighty, and coming on the clouds of the heavens.'" Then the high priest tore his robes. "This is blasphemy!" he exclaimed. "Why do we want any more witnesses? You have just heard his blasphemy! What is your decision?" They answered: "He deserves death." Then they spat in his face, and struck him, while others dealt blows at him, saying as they did so: "Now play the prophet for us, you Christ! Who was it that struck you?" Peter, meanwhile, was sitting outside in the courtyard; and a maidservant came up to him, and exclaimed: "Why, you were with Jesus the Galilean!" But Peter denied it before them all. "I do not know what you mean," he replied. When he had gone out into the gateway, another maid saw him, and said to those who were there: "This man was with Jesus of Nazareth!" Again he denied it with an oath: "I do not know the man!" But soon afterwards those who were standing by came up and said to Peter: "You also are certainly one of them; why, even your way of speaking proves it!" Then Peter said: "I swear that I do not know the man! May God punish me if I am lying!" At that moment 64 65 66 67 68 69 70 71 72 73 74

75 a cock crowed; and Peter remembered the words which Jesus  
had said — ‘Before a cock has crowed, you will disown me three  
times’; and he went outside, and wept bitterly.

27 At daybreak all the chief priests and the councillors of the  
nation consulted together against Jesus, to bring about his death.  
2 They put him in chains and led him away, and gave him up to  
3 the Roman Governor, Pilate. Then Judas, who betrayed him, see-  
ing that Jesus was condemned, repented of what he had done,  
4 and returned the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and  
councillors. “I did wrong in betraying a good man to his death,”  
he said. “What has that to do with us?” they replied. “You must  
5 see to that yourself.” Judas flung down the pieces of silver in the  
6 Temple, and left; and went away and hanged himself. The chief  
priests took the pieces of silver, but they said: “We must not put  
them into the Temple treasury, because they are blood-money.”  
7 So, after consultation, they bought with them the ‘Potter’s Field’  
8 for a burial-ground for foreigners; and that is why that field is  
9 called the ‘Field of Blood’ to this very day. Then it was that these  
words spoken by the prophet Jeremiah were fulfilled — ‘They  
10 took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him who was val-  
ued, whom some of the people of Israel valued, and gave them  
for the Potter’s field, as the Lord commanded me.’ Meanwhile  
11 Jesus was brought before the Roman Governor. “Are you the  
king of the Jews?” asked the Governor. “It is true,” answered Je-  
12 sus. While charges were being brought against him by the chief  
13 priests and councillors, Jesus made no reply. Then Pilate said to  
him: “Do not you hear how many accusations they are making  
14 against you?” Yet Jesus made no reply — not even a single word;  
15 at which the Governor was greatly astonished. Now, at the feast,  
the Governor was accustomed to grant the people the release  
16 of any one prisoner whom they might choose. At that time they  
17 had a notorious prisoner called Barabbas. So, when the people  
had collected, Pilate said to them: “Which do you wish me to re-  
18 lease for you? Barabbas? Or Jesus who is called ‘Christ’?” For he  
knew that it was out of jealousy that they had given Jesus up to  
19 him. While he was still on the Bench, his wife sent this message  
to him — “Do not have anything to do with that good man, for I  
20 have been very unhappy today in a dream because of him.” But

the chief priests and the councillors persuaded the crowds to ask for Barabbas, and to kill Jesus. The Governor, however, said to them: "Which of these two do you wish me to release for you?" 21

"Barabbas," they answered. "What then," Pilate asked, "should I do with Jesus who is called 'Christ?'" "Let him be crucified," they all replied. "Why, what harm has he done?" he asked. 22  
But they kept shouting furiously: "Let him be crucified!" When Pilate saw that his efforts were unavailing, but that, on the contrary, a riot was beginning, he took some water, and washed his hands in the sight of the crowd, saying as he did so: "I am not answerable for this bloodshed; you must see to it yourselves." 23  
And all the people answered: "His blood be on our heads and on our children's!" The Pilate released Barabbas to them; but Jesus he scourged, and gave him up to be crucified. 24

After that, the Governor's soldiers took Jesus with them into the Government house, and gathered the whole garrison around him. They stripped him, and put on him a red military cloak, and having twisted some thorns into a crown, put it on his head, and a rod in his right hand, and then, going down on their knees before him, they mocked him. "Long life to you, king of the Jews!" they said. They spat at him and, taking the rod, kept striking him on the head; and, when they had left off mocking him, they took off the military cloak, and put his own clothes on him, and led him away to be crucified. 25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30  
31

As they were on their way out, they came upon a man from Cyrene of the name of Simon; and they compelled him to go with them to carry the cross. On reaching a place named Golgotha (a place named from its likeness to a skull), they gave him some wine to drink which had been mixed with gall; but after tasting it, Jesus refused to drink it. When they had crucified him, they divided his clothes among them by casting lots. Then they sat down, and kept watch over him there. Above his head they fixed the accusation against him written out — 'THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS.' At the same time two robbers were crucified with him, one on the right, the other on the left. The passers-by railed at him, shaking their heads as they said: "You who 'destroy the Temple and build one in three days,' save 32  
33  
34  
35  
36  
37  
38  
39  
40

yourself! If you are God's Son, come down from the cross!" In the same way the chief priests, with the Teachers of the law and councillors, said in mockery: "He saved others, but he cannot save himself! He is the 'king of Israel'! Let him come down from the cross now, and we will believe in him. He has trusted in God; if God wants him, let him deliver him now; for he said 'I am God's Son.'" Even the robbers, who were crucified with him, insulted him in the same way. After midday a darkness came over all the country, lasting until three in the afternoon. About three Jesus called out loudly: "Eloi, Eloi, lema sabacthani" — that is to say, 'My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?' Some of those standing by heard this, and said: "The man is calling for Elijah!" One of them immediately ran and took a sponge, and, filling it with common wine, put it on the end of a rod, and offered it to him to drink. But the rest said: "Wait and let us see if Elijah is coming to save him." But Jesus, uttering another loud cry, gave up his spirit. Suddenly the Temple curtain was torn in two from top to bottom, the earth shook, the rocks were torn asunder, the tombs opened, and the bodies of many of God's people who had fallen asleep rose, and they, leaving their tombs, went, after the resurrection of Jesus, into the Holy City, and appeared to many people. The Roman captain, and the men with him who were watching Jesus, on seeing the earthquake and all that was happening, became greatly frightened and exclaimed: "This must indeed have been God's Son!" There were many women there, watching from a distance, who had accompanied Jesus from Galilee and had been attending on him. Among them were Mary of Magdala, Mary the mother of James and Joseph, and the mother of Zebedee's sons.

When evening had fallen, there came a rich man belonging to Ramah, named Joseph, who had himself become a disciple of Jesus. He went to see Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus. Pilate ordered it to be given him. So Joseph took the body, and wrapped it in a clean linen sheet, and laid it in his newly made tomb which he had cut in the rock; and, before he left, he rolled a great stone against the entrance of the tomb. Mary of Magdala and the other Mary remained behind, sitting in front of the grave.



The next day — that is, the day following the Preparation-day — the chief priests and Pharisees came in a body to Pilate, and said: “Sir, we remember that, during his lifetime, that impostor said ‘I will rise after three days.’ So order the tomb to be made secure until the third day. Otherwise his disciples may come and steal him, and then say to the people ‘He has risen from the dead,’ when the latest imposture will be worse than the first.”

“You may have a guard,” was Pilate’s reply; “go and make the tomb as secure as you can.” So they went made the tomb secure, by sealing the stone, in presence of the guard.

### *The Risen Life*

AFTER THE SABBATH, as the first day of the week began to dawn, Mary of Magdala and the other Mary had gone to look at the grave, when suddenly a great earthquake occurred. For an angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled away the stone, and seated himself on it. His appearance was as dazzling as lightning, and his clothing was as white as snow; and, in their terror of him, the men on guard trembled violently and became like dead men. But the angel, addressing the women, said; “You need not be afraid. I now that it is Jesus, who was crucified, for whom you are looking. He is not here; for he has risen, as he said he would. Come, and see the place where he was lying; and then go quickly and say to him disciples ‘He has risen from the dead, and is going before you into Galilee; there you will see him.’ Remember, I have told you.” They left the tomb quickly, in awe and great joy, and ran to tell the news to the disciples. Suddenly Jesus met them. “Welcome!” he said. The women went up to him, and clasped his feet, bowing to the ground before him. Then Jesus said to them: “Do not be afraid; go and tell my brothers and sisters to set out for Galilee, and they will see me there.” While they were still on their way, some of the guard came into the city, and reported to the chief priests everything that had happened. So they and the councillors met and, after holding a consultation, gave a large sum of money to the soldiers, and told them to say that his disciples came in the night, and stole him

14 while they were asleep; "And should this matter come before the  
Governor," they added, "we will satisfy him, and see that you  
15 have nothing to fear." So the soldiers took the money, and did  
as they were instructed. This story spread widely; the people of  
Judea still tell it today.

16 The eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain where  
17 Jesus told them to meet him; and, when they saw him, they  
bowed to the ground before him; although some felt doubtful.  
18 Then Jesus came up, and spoke to them, saying:

19 "All authority in heaven and on the earth has been given to  
me. Therefore go and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing  
them into the faith of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit,  
20 and teaching them to lay to heart all the commands that I have  
given you; and, remember, I myself am with you every day until  
the close of the age."

# Mark

## *The Good News According to Mark*

### *The Preparation*

The beginning of the good news about Jesus Christ.	1
It is said in the prophet Isaiah —	2
‘I am sending my messenger ahead of you; he will prepare your way. The voice of one crying aloud in the wilderness:	3
“Make ready the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.”	
And in fulfillment of this, John the Baptizer appeared in the wilderness, proclaiming a baptism on repentance, for the forgiveness of sins. The whole of Judea, as well as all the inhabitants of Jerusalem, went out to him; and they were baptized by him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins.	4
John wore clothes made of camels’ hair, with a leather strap around his waist, and lived on locusts and wild honey; and he proclaimed — “There is coming after me one more powerful than I, and I am not fit even to stoop down and unfasten his sandals. I have baptized you with water, but he will baptize you with the Holy Spirit.”	6
Now about that time Jesus came from Nazareth in Galilee, and was baptized by John in the Jordan. Just as he was coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens split open, and the Spirit, like a dove, descending on him, and from the heavens came a voice — “You are my dearly loved son; you bring me great joy.”	7
	8
	9
	10
	11

12 Immediately afterwards the Spirit drove Jesus out into the  
13 wilderness; and he was there in the wilderness forty days,  
tempted by Satan, and among the wild beasts, while the angels  
helped him.

### *The Work in Galilee*

14 AFTER JOHN HAD BEEN COMMITTED TO PRISON, Jesus went to Galilee,  
15 proclaiming the good news of God — “The time has come,  
and the kingdom of God is at hand; repent, and believe the  
good news.”

16 As Jesus was going along the shore of the Sea of Galilee, he  
saw Simon and his brother Andrew casting a net in the Sea, for  
17 they were fishermen. “Come and follow me,” Jesus said, “and I  
18 will teach you to fish for people.” They left their nets at once, and  
followed him.

19 Going on a little further, he saw James, Zebedee’s son, and  
his brother John, who also were in their boat mending the nets.  
20 Jesus called them at once, and they left their father Zebedee in  
the boat with the crew, and went after him.

21 They walked into Capernaum. On the next Sabbath Jesus  
22 went into the Synagogue and began to teach. The people were  
amazed at his teaching, for he taught them like one who had  
23 authority, and not like the teachers of the law. Now there was  
in their Synagogue at the time a man under the power of a foul  
24 spirit, who called out: “What do you want with us, Jesus of  
Nazareth? Have you come to destroy us? I know who you are —  
25 the Holy One of God!” But Jesus rebuked the spirit: “Be silent!  
26 Come out from him.” The foul spirit threw the man into a fit,  
27 and with a loud cry came out from him. They were all so amazed  
that they kept asking: “What is this? Strange teaching indeed!  
He gives his commands with authority even to the foul spirits,  
28 and they obey him!” And the fame of Jesus spread at once in all  
directions, through the whole neighborhood of Galilee.

29 As soon as they had come out from the Synagogue, they  
went, with James and John, into the house of Simon and An-  
30 drew. Now Simon’s mother-in-law was lying ill with fever, and

they at once told Jesus about her. Jesus went up to her and, grasping her hand, raised her up; the fever left her, and she began to take care of them. 31

In the evening, after sunset, the people brought to Jesus all who were ill or possessed by demons; and the whole city was gathered around the door. Jesus cured many who were ill with various diseases, and drove out many demons, and would not permit them to speak, because they knew him to be the Christ. 32  
33  
34

In the morning, long before daylight, Jesus rose and went out, and, going to a lonely spot, there began to pray. But Simon and his companions went out searching for him; and, when they found him, they exclaimed: "Everyone is looking for you!" But Jesus said to them: "Let us go somewhere else, into the country towns nearby so that I can make my proclamation in them also; for that was why I came." And he went about making his proclamation in their Synagogues all through Galilee, and driving out the demons. 35  
36  
37  
38  
39

One day a leper came to Jesus and, falling on his knees, begged him for help. "If only you are willing," he said, "you are able to make me clean." Moved with compassion, Jesus stretched out his hand and touched him, saying as he did so: "I am willing; become clean." Instantly the leprosy left the man, and he became clean; and then Jesus, after sternly warning him, immediately sent him away, and said to him: "Be careful not to say anything to anyone; but go and show yourself to the priest, and make the offerings for your cleansing directed by Moses, as evidence of your cure." The man, however, went away, and began to speak about it publicly, and to spread the story so widely, that Jesus could no longer go openly into a town, but stayed outside in lonely places; and people came to him from every direction. 40  
41  
42  
43  
44  
45

Some days later, when Jesus came back to Capernaum, the news spread that he was in a house there; and so many people collected together, that after a while there was no room for them even around the door; and he began to tell them his message. Some people came, bringing to him a paralyzed man, who was being carried by four of them. Being, however, unable to get him near to Jesus, owing to the crowd, they removed the 2  
2  
3  
4

roofing above Jesus; and, when they had made an opening, they let down the mat on which the paralyzed man was lying. When  
5 Jesus saw their faith, he said to the man: "Child, your sins are forgiven."

6 But some of the teachers of the law who were sitting there  
7 were debating in their minds: "Why does this man speak like  
8 this? He is blaspheming! Who can forgive sins except God?"  
9 Jesus, at once intuitively aware that they were debating with  
10 themselves in this way, said to them: "Why are you debating in  
11 your minds about this? Which is easier? — to say to the paralyzed  
12 man, 'Your sins are forgiven'? Or to say 'Get up, and take  
up your mat, and walk'? But so you may know that the Son of  
Man has power to forgive sins on earth" — here he said to the  
paralyzed man — "To you I say, Get up, take up your mat, and  
return to your home." The man got up, and immediately took  
up his mat, and went out before them all; at which they were  
amazed, and, as they praised God, they said: "We have never  
seen anything like this!"

13 Jesus went out again to the Sea; and all the people came to  
14 him, and he taught them. As he went along, he saw Levi, the son  
of Alphaeus, sitting in the tax office, and said to him: "Follow  
me." Levi got up and followed him.

15 Later on he was in his house having dinner, and a number  
of tax-gatherers and outcasts took their places at the table with  
Jesus and his disciples; for many of them were following him.  
16 When the teachers of the law belonging to the party of the Pharisees  
saw that he was eating in the company of such people, they  
said to his disciples: "He is eating in the company of tax-gatherers  
17 and outcasts!" Hearing this, Jesus said: "It is not those who  
are healthy who need a doctor, but those who are ill. I did not  
come to call the religious, but the outcast."

18 Now John's disciples and the Pharisees were fasting, and  
people came and asked Jesus: "Why is it that John's disciples and  
19 the disciples of the Pharisees fast, while yours do not?" Jesus answered:  
"Can the groom's friends fast, while the groom is with  
them? As long as they have the groom with them, they cannot  
20 fast. But the days will come, when the groom will be taken away  
from them, and they will fast then — when that day comes.

“No one ever sews a piece of unshrunk cloth on an old garment; if they do, the patch tears away from it — the new from the old — and a worse tear is made. And no one ever puts new wine into old wine-skins; if they do, the wine will burst the skins, and both the wine and the skins are lost. But new wine is put into fresh skins.” 21  
22

One Sabbath, as Jesus was walking through the cornfields, his disciples began to pick the ears of wheat as they went along. “Look!” the Pharisees said to him, “why are they doing what is not allowed on the Sabbath?” 23  
24

“Have you never read,” answered Jesus, “what David did when he was in need and hungry, he and his companions — How he went into the house of God, in the time of Abiathar the high priest, and ate the consecrated bread, which only the priests are allowed to eat, and gave some to his comrades as well?” 25  
26

Then Jesus added: “The Sabbath was made for people, and not people for the Sabbath; so the Son of Man is lord even of the Sabbath.” 27  
28

On another occasion Jesus went in to a Synagogue, where there was a man whose hand was withered. And they watched Jesus closely, to see if he would cure the man on the Sabbath, so that they might have a charge to bring against him. “Stand out in the middle,” Jesus said to the man with the withered hand; and to the people he said: “Is it allowable to do good at the Sabbath — or harm? To save a life, or destroy it?” As they remained silent, Jesus looked around at them in anger, grieving at the hardness of their hearts, and said to the man: “Stretch out your hand.” The man stretched it out; and his hand had become sound. Immediately on leaving the Synagogue, the Pharisees and the Herodians united in laying a plot against Jesus, to put him to death. 3  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6

Then Jesus went away with his disciples to the Sea, followed by a great number of people from Galilee. A great number, hearing of all that he was doing, came to him from Judea, from Jerusalem, from Edom, from beyond the Jordan, and from the country around Tyre and Sidon. So Jesus told his disciples to keep a small 7  
8  
9

10 boat close by, so that the crowd would not crush him. For he  
had cured many of them, and so people kept crowding around  
11 him, so all who were sick might touch him. The foul spirits, too,  
whenever they caught sight of him, flung themselves down be-  
12 fore him, and screamed out: "You are the Son of God"! But he  
repeatedly warned them not to make him known.

13 Jesus made his way up the hill, and called those whom he  
wished; and they went to him. He appointed twelve — whom  
14 he also named 'apostles' — so that they might be with him, and  
that he might send them out as his messengers, to preach, and  
15 with power to drive out demons. So he appointed the Twelve —  
16 Peter (which was the name that Jesus gave to Simon), James, the  
17 son of Zebedee, and his brother John (to whom he gave the name  
of Boanerges, which means the Thunderers), Andrew, Philip,  
18 Bartholomew, Matthew, Thomas, James the son of Alphaeus,  
19 Thaddaeus, Simon the Zealot, and Judas Iscariot, the man who  
betrayed him.

20 Jesus went into a house; and again a crowd collected, so that  
they were not even able to eat their food. When his relations  
21 heard of it, they went to take charge of him, for they said that he  
was out of his mind.

22 The teachers of the law, who had come down from  
Jerusalem, said: "He has Beelzebul in him! He he drives the  
23 demons out by the help of their chief." So Jesus called them to  
him, and answered them in parables: "How can Satan drive out  
24 Satan? When a kingdom is divided against itself, it cannot last;  
25 and when a household is divided against itself, it will not be able  
26 to last. So, if Satan is in revolt against himself and is divided, he  
cannot last — his end has come!

27 "No man who has got into a strong man's house can carry  
off his goods, without first securing him; and not until then  
28 will he plunder his house. I tell you that people will be forgiven  
29 everything — their sins, and all the slanders that they utter; but  
whoever slanders the Holy Spirit remains unforgiven to the end;  
30 he has to answer for an enduring sin." This was said in reply to  
31 the charge that he had a foul spirit in him. His mother and his  
brothers came, and stood outside, and sent to ask him to come to  
32 them. There was a crowd sitting around Jesus, and some of them



said to him: "Look, your mother and your brothers are outside, asking for you."

"Who is my mother? And my brothers?" was his reply. Then he looked around on the people sitting in a circle around him, and said: "Here are my mother and my brothers! Whoever does the will of God is my brother and sister and mother." 33  
34  
35

Jesus again began to teach by the Sea; and, as an immense crowd was gathering around him, he got into a boat, and sat in it on the Sea, while all the people were on the shore at the water's edge. 4

Then he taught them many truths in parables; and in the course of his teaching he said to them: 2

"Listen! The sower went out to sow; and presently, as he was sowing, some of the seed fell along the path; and the birds came, and ate it up. Some fell on rocky ground, where it had not much soil, and, having no depth of soil, sprang up at once; but, when the sun rose, it was scorched, and, having no root, withered away. Some of the seed fell among brambles; but the brambles shot up and completely choked it, and it yielded no return. Some fell into good soil, and, shooting up and growing, yielded a return, amounting to thirty, sixty, and even a hundred fold." And Jesus said: "Let anyone who has ears to hear with hear." 3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9

Afterwards, when he was alone, his followers and the Twelve asked him about his parables; and he said: "To you the hidden truth of the kingdom of God has been imparted; but to those who are outside it all teaching takes the form of parables so that — 'Though they have eyes, they may see without perceiving; and though they have ears, they may hear without understanding; otherwise some day they might turn and be forgiven.' 10  
11  
12

"You do not know the meaning of this parable?" he went on; "Then how will you understand all the other parables? The sower sows the message. The people meant by the seed that falls along the path are these — where the message is sown, but, as soon as they have heard it, Satan immediately comes and carries away the message that has been sown in them. So, too, those meant by the seed sown on the rocky places are the people who, 13  
14  
15  
16

17 when they have heard the message, at once accept it joyfully;  
18 but, as they have no root, they stand only for a short time; and  
19 so, when trouble or persecution arises because of the message,  
20 they fall away at once. Those meant by the seed sown among  
the brambles are different; they are the people who hear the mes-  
21 sage, but the cares of life, and the glamour of wealth, and crav-  
22 ings for many other things come in and completely choke the  
23 message, so that it gives no return. But the people meant by the  
seed sown on the good ground are those who hear the message,  
and welcome it, and yield a return, thirty, sixty, and even a hun-  
dred fold."

21 Jesus said to them: "Is a lamp brought to be put under a bas-  
ket or under the couch, instead of being put on the lamp-stand?  
22 There is nothing hidden that will not come to light and nothing  
23 is concealed that will not be brought into the open. Let all who  
have ears to hear with hear.

24 Take care what you listen to," said Jesus. "The standard you  
25 use will be used for you, and more will be added for you. For, to  
those who have, more will be given; while, from those who have  
nothing, even what they have will be taken away."

26 Jesus also said: "This is what the kingdom of God is like  
27 — like a man who has scattered seed on the ground, and then  
sleeps by night and rises by day, while the seed is shooting up  
28 and growing — he knows not how. The ground bears the crop of  
itself — first the blade, then the ear, and then the full grain in the  
29 ear; but, as soon as the crop is ready, immediately he 'puts in the  
sickle because harvest has come'."

30 Jesus also said: "To what can we liken the kingdom of God?  
31 By what can we illustrate it? Perhaps by the growth of a mustard  
seed. This seed, when sown in the ground, though it is smaller  
32 than all other seeds, yet, when sown, shoots up, and becomes  
larger than any other herb, and puts out great branches, so that  
even 'the wild birds can roost in its shelter.'"

33 With many such parables Jesus used to speak to the people  
34 of his message, as far as they were able to receive it; and to them  
he never used to speak except in parables; but in private to his  
own disciples he explained everything.

In the evening of the same day, Jesus said to them: "Let us go across." So, leaving the crowd behind, they took him with them, just as he was, in the boat; and there were other boats with him. A violent squall came on, and the waves kept dashing into the boat, so that the boat was actually filling. Jesus was in the stern asleep on the cushion; and the disciples roused him and cried: "Teacher! Is it nothing to you that we are lost?" Jesus rose and rebuked the wind, and said to the sea: "Hush! Be still!" Then the wind dropped, and a great calm followed. "Why are you so timid?" he exclaimed. "Have you no faith yet?" But they were struck with great awe, and said to one another: "Who can this be that even the wind and the sea obey him?"

They came to the other side of the Sea — the country of the Gerasenes; and, as soon as Jesus had got out of the boat, he met a man coming out of the tombs, who was under the power of a foul spirit, and who made his home in the tombs. No one had ever been able to secure him, even with a chain; for, though he had many times been left secured with fetters and chains, he had snapped the chains and broken the fetters to pieces, and no one could master him. Night and day alike, he was continually shrieking in the tombs and among the hills, and cutting himself with stones. Catching sight of Jesus from a distance, he ran and bowed to the ground before him, shrieking out in a loud voice: "What do you want with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? For God's sake do not torment me!" For Jesus had said: "Come out from the man, you foul spirit." And he asked him: "What is your name?" "My name," he said, "is Legion, for there are many of us;" and he begged Jesus again and again not to send them away out of that country.

There was a large drove of pigs close by, feeding on the hillside; and the spirits begged Jesus: "Send us into the pigs so that we can take possession of them." Jesus gave them leave. They came out, and entered into the pigs; and the drove — about two thousand in number — rushed down the steep slope into the Sea and were drowned in the Sea.

Then the men who tended them ran away, and carried the news to the town, and to the country around; and the people went to see what had happened. When they came to Jesus, they

found the possessed man sitting there, clothed and in his right mind — the man who had had the ‘Legion’ in him — and they were awe-struck. Then those who had seen it related to them all that had happened to the possessed man, as well as about the pigs; so they began to beg Jesus to leave their neighborhood.

As Jesus was getting into the boat, the possessed man begged him to let him stay with him. But Jesus refused. “Go back to your home, to your own people,” he said, “and tell them of all that the Lord has done for you, and how he took pity on you.” So the man went, and began to proclaim in the district of the Ten Towns all that Jesus had done for him; and everyone was amazed.

By the time Jesus had recrossed in the boat to the opposite shore, a great number of people had gathered to meet him, and were standing by the Sea. One of the Presidents of the Synagogue, whose name was Jaerius, came and, as soon as he saw Jesus, threw himself at his feet with repeated entreaties. “My little daughter,” he said, “is at the point of death; I beg you to come and place your hands on her so that her life may be spared.” So Jesus went with him. A great number of people followed Jesus, and kept pressing around him.

Meanwhile a woman who for twelve years had suffered from hemorrhage, and undergone much at the hands of many doctors, (spending all she had without obtaining any relief, but, on the contrary, growing worse), heard about Jesus, came behind in the crowd, and touched his cloak. “If I can only touch his clothes,” she said, “I will get well!” At once her bleeding stopped, and she felt in herself that she was cured of her complaint. Jesus at once became aware of the power that had gone out from him, and, turning around in the crowd, he said: “Who touched my clothes?”

“You see the people pressing around you,” exclaimed his disciples, “and yet you say ‘Who touched me?’” But Jesus looked about to see who had done it. Then the woman, in fear and trembling, knowing what had happened to her, came and threw herself down before him, and told him the whole truth. “Daughter,” he said, “your faith has delivered you. Go, and peace be with you; be free from your complaint.”

Before he had finished speaking, some people from the house

of the President of the Synagogue came and said: "Your daughter is dead! Why should you trouble the teacher further?" But Jesus, overhearing what they were saying, said to the President of the Synagogue: "Do not be afraid; only have faith." And he allowed no one to accompany him, except Peter, James, and John, the brother of James. Presently they reached the President's house, where Jesus saw a scene of confusion — people weeping and wailing incessantly. "Why this confusion and weeping?" he said on entering. "The little child is not dead; she is asleep." They began to laugh at him; but he sent them all out, and then, with the child's father and mother and his companions, went into the room where she was lying. Taking her hand, Jesus said to her: "Taleitha, koum!" — which means 'little girl, I am speaking to you — Rise!' The little girl stood up at once, and began to walk about; for she was twelve years old. And, as soon as they saw it, they were overwhelmed with amazement; but Jesus repeatedly cautioned them not to let anyone know of it, and told them to give her something to eat.

On leaving that place, Jesus, followed by his disciples, went to his own part of the country. When the Sabbath came, he began to teach in the Synagogue; and the people, as they listened, were deeply impressed. "Where did he get this?" they said, "and what is this wisdom that has been given him? And these miracles which he is doing? Is not he the carpenter, the son of Mary, and the brother of James, and Joses, and Judas, and Simon? And are not his sisters, too, living here among us?" This proved a hindrance to their believing in him; on which Jesus said: "A prophet is not without honor, except in his own country, and among his own relations, and in his own home." And he could not work any miracle there, beyond placing his hands on a few infirm persons, and curing them; and he wondered at the want of faith shown by the people. Jesus went around the villages, one after another, teaching.

He called the Twelve to him, and began to send them out as his messengers, two and two, and gave them authority over foul spirits. He instructed them to take nothing but a staff for the

9 journey — not even bread, or a bag, or coins in their purse; but  
10 they were to wear sandals, and not to put on a second coat.  
11 “Whenever you go to stay at a house,” he said, “remain there  
12 until you leave that place; and if a place does not welcome you,  
13 or listen to you, as you go out of it shake off the dust that is on  
the soles of your feet, as a protest against them.” So they set out,  
and proclaimed the need of repentance. They drove out many  
demons, and anointed with oil many who were infirm, and  
cured them.

14 Now King Herod heard of Jesus; for his name had become  
well known. People were saying — “John the Baptizer must  
15 have risen from the dead, and that is why these miraculous pow-  
ers are active in him.” Others again said — “He is Elijah,” and  
16 others — “He is a prophet, like one of the great prophets.” But  
when Herod heard of him, he said — “The man whom I behead-  
ed — John — he must be risen!”

17 For Herod himself had sent and arrested John, and put him  
in prison, in chains, to please Herodias, the wife of his brother  
18 Philip, because Herod had married her. For John had said to  
Herod — “You have no right to be living with your brother’s  
19 wife.” So Herodias was incensed against John, and wanted to  
20 put him to death, but was unable to do so, because Herod stood  
in fear of John, knowing him to be an upright and holy man, and  
protected him. He had listened to John, but still remained much  
perplexed, and yet he found pleasure in listening to him.

21 A suitable opportunity, however, occurred when Herod, on  
his birthday, gave a dinner to his high officials, and his generals,  
22 and the foremost men in Galilee. When his daughter — that is,  
the daughter of Herodias — came in and danced, she delighted  
Herod and those who were dining with him. “Ask me for what-  
ever you like,” the king said to the girl, “and I will give it to you”;  
23 and he swore to her that he would give her whatever she asked  
24 him — up to half his kingdom. The girl went out, and said to her  
mother “What must I ask for?”

25 “The head of John the Baptizer,” answered her mother. So she  
went in as quickly as possible to the king, and made her request.  
“I want you,” she said, “to give me at once, on a dish, the head  
26 of John the Baptist.” The king was much distressed; yet, because

of his oath and of the guests at his table, he did not like to refuse her. He immediately dispatched one of his bodyguard, with orders to bring John's head. The man went and beheaded John in the prison, and, bringing his head on a dish, gave it to the girl, and the girl gave it to her mother. 27 28

When John's disciples heard of it, they came and took his body away, and laid it in a tomb. 29

When the apostles came back to Jesus, they told him all that they had done and all that they had taught. "Come by yourselves privately to some lonely spot," he said, "and rest for a while" — for there were so many people coming and going that they had not time even to eat. So they set off privately in their boat for a lonely spot. Many people saw them going, and recognized them, and from all the towns they flocked together to the place on foot, and got there before them. On getting out of the boat, Jesus saw a great crowd, and his heart was moved at the sight of them, because they were 'like sheep without a shepherd'; and he began to teach them many things. When it grew late, his disciples came up to him, and said: "This is a lonely spot, and it is already late. Send the people away, so that they may go to the farms and villages around and buy themselves something to eat." But Jesus answered: "It is for you to give them something to eat." "Are we to go and spend almost a year's wages on bread," they asked, "to give them to eat?" 30 31 32 33 34 35 36 37

"How many loaves have you?" he asked; "Go, and see." When they had found out, they told him: "Five, and two fishes." Jesus directed them to make all the people take their seats on the green grass, in parties; and they sat down in groups — in hundreds, and in fifties. Taking the five loaves and the two fishes, Jesus looked up to heaven, and said the blessing; he broke the loaves into pieces, and gave them to his disciples for them to serve out to the people, and he divided the two fishes also among them all. Everyone had sufficient to eat; and they picked up enough broken pieces to fill twelve baskets, as well as some of the fish. The people who ate the bread were five thousand in number. 38 39 40 41 42 43 44

Immediately afterwards Jesus made his disciples get into the boat, and cross over in advance, in the direction of Bethsaida, 45

46 while he himself was dismissing the crowd. After he had taken  
47 leave of the people, he went away up the hill to pray. When  
48 evening fell, the boat was out in the middle of the Sea, and Jesus  
49 on the shore alone. Seeing them laboring at the oars — for  
50 the wind was against them — about three hours after midnight  
51 Jesus came towards them, walking on the water, intending to  
52 join them. But, when they saw him walking on the water, they  
53 thought it was a ghost, and cried out; for all of them saw him,  
54 and were terrified. But Jesus at once spoke to them. "Courage!"  
55 he said, "it is I; do not be afraid!" Then he got into the boat with  
56 them, and the wind dropped. The disciples were utterly amazed,  
for they had not understood about the loaves, their minds being  
slow to learn. When they had crossed over, they landed at  
Gennesaret, and moored the boat. But they had no sooner left  
her than the people, recognizing Jesus, hurried over the whole  
country-side, and began to carry about on mats those who were  
ill, wherever they heard he was. So wherever he went — to vil-  
lages, or towns, or farms — they would lay their sick in the  
market-places, begging him to let them touch only the tassel of  
his cloak; and all who touched were made well.

7 One day the Pharisees and some of the teachers of the law who  
2 had come from Jerusalem gathered around Jesus. They had noticed  
3 that some of his disciples ate their food with their hands  
'defiled,' by which they meant unwashed. (For the Pharisees,  
and indeed all strict Jews, will not eat without first scrupulously  
4 washing their hands, holding in this to the traditions of their  
ancestors. When they come from market, they will not eat without  
5 first sprinkling themselves; and there are many other customs  
which they have inherited and hold to, such as the ceremonial  
washing of cups, and jugs, and copper pans). So the Pharisees  
6 and the teachers of the law asked Jesus this question — "How  
is it that your disciples do not follow the traditions of our  
ancestors, but eat their food with defiled hands?" His answer was:  
7 "It was well said by Isaiah when he prophesied about you hypocrites  
in the words — 'This is a people who honor me with their  
lips, while their hearts are far removed from me; but vainly do



they worship me, For they teach but human precepts.' You neglect God's commandments and hold to human traditions. Wisely do you set aside God's commandments," he exclaimed, "to keep your own traditions! For while Moses said 'Honor your father and your mother,' and 'Let anyone who abuses their father or mother suffer death,' you say 'If a person says to their father or mother "Whatever of mine might have been of service to you is Korban"' (which means 'Given to God') — why, then you do not allow them to do anything further for their father or mother! In this way you nullify the words of God by your traditions, which you hand down; and you do many similar things."

Then Jesus called the people to him again, and said: "Listen to me, all of you, and mark my words. There is nothing external to a person, which by going into them can 'defile' them; but the things that come out from a person are the things that defile them."

When Jesus went indoors, away from the crowd, his disciples began questioning him about this saying. "What, do even you understand so little?" exclaimed Jesus. "Do not you see that there is nothing external to a person, which by going into a person, can 'defile' them, because it does not pass into his heart, but into his stomach, and is afterwards got rid of? — in saying this Jesus pronounced all food 'clean.' "It is what comes out from a person," he added, "that defiles them, for it is from within, out of the hearts of people, that there come evil thoughts — sexual immorality, theft, murder, adultery, greed, wickedness, deceit, indecency, envy, slander, haughtiness, folly; all these wicked things come from within, and do defile a person."

On leaving that place, Jesus went to the district of Tyre and Sidon. He went into a house, and did not wish anyone to know it, but could not escape notice. For a woman, whose little daughter had a foul spirit in her, heard of him immediately, and came and threw herself at his feet — the woman was a foreigner, from Syrian Phoenicia — and she begged him to drive the demon out of her daughter. "Let the children be satisfied first," answered Jesus. "For it is not fair to take the children's food, and throw it to dogs."

"Yes, Master," she replied; "even the dogs under the table do

feed on the children's crumbs."

29 "For saying that," he answered, "you may go. The demon  
30 has gone out of your daughter." The woman went home, and  
found the child lying on her bed, and the demon gone.

31 On returning from the district of Tyre, Jesus went, by way of  
Sidon, to the Sea of Galilee, across the district of the Ten Towns.  
32 Some people brought to him a man who was deaf and almost  
dumb, and they begged Jesus to place his hand on him. Jesus  
33 took him aside from the crowd quietly, put his fingers into the  
34 man's ears, and touched his tongue with saliva. Then, looking  
up to heaven, he sighed, and said to the man: "Ephphatha!"  
35 which means 'Be opened.' The man's ears were opened, the  
string of his tongue was freed, and he began to talk plainly. Je-  
36 sus insisted on their not telling anyone; but the more he insist-  
37 ed, the more perseveringly they made it known, and a profound  
impression was made on the people. "He has done everything  
well!" they exclaimed. "He makes even the deaf hear and the  
dumb speak!"

8 About that time, when there was again a great crowd of people  
who had nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples to him, and  
2 said: "My heart is moved at the sight of all these people, for they  
have already been with me three days and they have nothing  
3 to eat; and if I send them away to their homes hungry, they will  
break down on the way; and some of them have come a long  
distance."

4 "Where will it be possible," his disciples answered, "to get  
sufficient bread for these people in this lonely place?"

5 "How many loaves have you?" he asked. "Seven," they an-  
6 swered. Jesus told the crowd to sit down on the ground. Then  
he took the seven loaves, and, after saying the thanksgiving,  
7 broke them, and gave them to his disciples to serve out; and  
they served them out to the crowd. They had also a few small  
8 fish; and, after he had said the blessing, he told the disciples to  
serve out these as well. The people had sufficient to eat, and they  
9 picked up seven baskets full of the broken pieces that were left.  
There were about four thousand people. Then Jesus dismissed

them. Immediately afterwards, getting into the boat with his disciples, Jesus went to the district of Dalmanutha. 10

Here the Pharisees came out, and began to argue with Jesus, asking him for some sign from the heavens, to test him. Sighing deeply, Jesus said: "Why does this generation ask for a sign? I tell you, no sign will be given it." So he left them to themselves, and, getting into the boat again, went away to the opposite shore. 11 12 13

Now the disciples had forgotten to take any bread with them, one loaf being all that they had in the boat. So Jesus gave them this warning. "Take care," he said, "beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and the leaven of Herod." They began talking to one another about their being short of bread; and, noticing this, Jesus said to them: "Why are you talking about your being short of bread? Do not you yet see or understand? Are your minds still so slow or comprehension? "Though you have eyes, do you not see? And though you have ears, do you not hear?" Do not you remember, when I broke up the five loaves for the five thousand, how many baskets of broken pieces you picked up?" 14 15 16 17 18 19

"Twelve," they said. "And when the seven for the four thousand, how many basketfuls of broken pieces did you pick up?" 20

"Seven," they said. "Do not you understand now?" he repeated. 21

They came to Bethsaida. There some people brought a blind man to Jesus, and begged him to touch him. Taking the blind man's hand, Jesus led him to the outskirts of the village, and, when he had put saliva on the man's eyes, he placed his hands on him, and asked him: "Do you see anything?" The man looked up, and said: "I see the people, for, as they walk about, they look to me like trees." Then Jesus again placed his hands on the man's eyes; and the man saw clearly, his sight was restored, and he saw everything with perfect distinctness. Jesus sent him to his home, and said: "Do not go even into the village." 22 23 24 25 26

Afterwards Jesus and his disciples went into the villages around Caesarea Philippi; and on the way he asked his disciples this question — "Who do people say that I am?" 27

"John the Baptist," they answered, "but others say Elijah, 28

while others say one of the prophets.”

29 “But you,” he asked, “who do you say that I am?” To this Pe-  
30 ter replied: “You are the Christ.” On which Jesus charged them  
31 not to say this about him to anyone. Then he began to teach them  
that the Son of Man must undergo much suffering, and that he  
must be rejected by the councillors, and the chief priests, and the  
teachers of the law, and be put to death, and rise again after three  
32 days. He said all this quite openly. But Peter took Jesus aside,  
33 and began to rebuke him. Jesus, however, turning around and  
seeing his disciples, rebuked Peter. “Out of my sight, Satan!” he  
exclaimed. “For you look at things, not as God does, but as peo-  
ple do.”

34 Calling the people and his disciples to him, Jesus said: “If  
anyone wishes to walk in my steps, let them renounce self, take  
35 up their cross, and follow me. For whoever wishes to save their  
life will lose it, and whoever, for my sake and for the sake of the  
36 good news, will lose their life will save it. What good is it to a  
37 person to gain the whole world and forfeit their life? For what  
could a person give that is of equal value with their life? Whoev-  
38 er is ashamed of me and of my teaching, in this unfaithful and  
wicked generation, of them will the Son of Man be ashamed,  
when he comes in his Father’s glory with the holy angels.”

9 “I tell you,” he added, “that some of those who are standing  
here will not know death until they have seen the kingdom of  
God come in power.”

2 Six days later, Jesus took with him Peter, James, and John,  
and led them up a high mountain alone by themselves. There his  
3 appearance was transformed before their eyes, and his clothes  
became of a more dazzling white than any bleacher in the world  
4 could make them. And Elijah appeared to them, in company  
5 with Moses; and they were talking with Jesus. “Rabbi,” said Pe-  
ter, interposing, “it is good to be here; let us make three tents,  
6 one for you, one for Moses, and one for Elijah.” For he did not  
7 know what to say, because they were much afraid. Then a cloud  
came down and enveloped them; and from the cloud there came  
8 a voice — “This is my dearly loved son; listen to him.” And sud-  
denly, on looking around, they saw that there was now no one  
with them but Jesus alone.

As they were going down the mountainside, Jesus cautioned 9  
them not to relate what they had seen to anyone, until after the  
Son of Man should have risen again from the dead. They seized 10  
on these words and discussed with one another what this 'rising  
from the dead' meant. "How is it," they asked Jesus, "that our 11  
teachers of the law say that Elijah has to come first?"

"Elijah does indeed come first," answered Jesus, "and re- 12  
establish everything; and does not scripture speak, with regard  
to the Son of Man, of his undergoing much suffering and being 13  
utterly despised? But I tell you that Elijah has come, and people  
have treated him just as they pleased, as scripture says of him."

When they came to the other disciples, they saw a great 14  
crowd around them, and some teachers of the law arguing with  
them. But, as soon as they saw Jesus, all the people, in great 15  
astonishment, ran up and greeted him. "What are you arguing  
about with them?" Jesus asked. "Teacher," answered a man in 16  
the crowd, "I brought my son to see you, as he has a dumb spir- 17  
it in him; and, wherever it seizes him, it dashes him down; he  
foams at the mouth and grinds his teeth, and he is pining away. 18  
I asked your disciples to drive the spirit out, but they failed."

"Faithless generation!" exclaimed Jesus. "How long must I 19  
be with you? How long must I have patience with you? Bring  
the boy to me." They brought him to Jesus; but no sooner did 20  
the boy see him than the spirit threw him into convulsions; and  
he fell on the ground, and rolled about, foaming at the mouth.  
"How long has he been like this?" Jesus asked the boy's father. 21  
"From his childhood," he answered; "and it has often thrown  
him into fire and into water to put an end to his life; but, if you 22  
can possibly do anything, take pity on us, and help us!" Why  
say 'possibly'?" Jesus replied. "Everything is possible for one 23  
who has faith." The boy's father immediately cried out: "I have  
faith; help my want of faith!" But, when Jesus saw that a crowd 24  
was quickly collecting, he rebuked the foul spirit: "Deaf and 25  
dumb spirit, it is I who command you. Come out from him and  
never enter him again." With a loud cry the spirit threw the boy 26  
into repeated convulsions, and then came out from him. The boy  
looked like a corpse, so that most of them said that he was dead.  
But Jesus took his hand, and lifted him; and he stood up. 27

28 When Jesus had gone indoors, his disciples asked him  
privately: "Why could not we drive it out?"

29 "A spirit of this kind," he said, "can be driven out only  
by prayer."

30 Leaving that place, Jesus and his disciples went on their way  
31 through Galilee; but he did not wish anyone to know it, for he  
was instructing his disciples, and telling them — "The Son of  
Man is being betrayed into the hands of his fellow men, and they  
will put him to death, but, when he has been put to death, he will  
32 rise again after three days." But the disciples did not understand  
his meaning and were afraid to question him.

33 They came to Capernaum. When Jesus had gone into the  
house, he asked them: "What were you discussing on the way?"  
34 But they were silent; for on the way they had been arguing with  
35 one another which was the greatest. Sitting down, Jesus called  
the Twelve and said: "If anyone wishes to be first, he must be  
36 last of all, and servant of all." Then Jesus took a little child, and  
placed it in the middle of them. Folding it in his arms, he said to  
37 them: "Anyone who, for the sake of my name, welcomes even  
a little child like this is welcoming me, and anyone who wel-  
comes me is welcoming not me, but him who sent me as his mes-  
senger."

38 "Teacher," said John, "we saw a man driving out demons by  
using your name, and we tried to prevent him, because he did  
not follow us."

39 "None of you must prevent the man," answered Jesus, "for  
no one will use my name in working a miracle, and yet find it  
40 easy to speak evil of me. He who is not against us is for us. If  
41 anyone gives you a cup of water because you belong to Christ,  
I tell you, he will assuredly not lose his reward.

42 'And, if anyone puts temptation in the way of one of these  
little ones who believe in me, it would be far better for him if  
he had been thrown into the sea with a great millstone around  
43 his neck. If your hand causes you to sin, cut it off. It would be  
better for you to enter the life maimed, than to have both your  
hands and go into Gehenna, into the fire that cannot be put out.

If your foot causes you to sin, cut it off. It would be better for you 45  
to enter the life lame, than to have both your feet and be thrown  
into Gehenna. If your eye causes you to sin, tear it out. It would 47  
be better for you to enter the kingdom of God with only one eye,  
than to have both eyes and be thrown into Gehenna, where 'their 48  
worm does not die, and the fire is not put out.'

'For it is by fire that everyone will be salted. 49

'Salt is good, but, if the salt should lose its saltiness, what will 50  
you use to season it?

'You must have salt in yourselves, and live at peace with  
one another.'

### *The Journey to Jerusalem*

ON LEAVING THAT PLACE, Jesus went into the district of Judea on 10  
the other side of the Jordan. Crowds gathered about him again;  
and again, as usual, he began teaching them. Presently some 2  
Pharisees came up and, to test him, asked: "Has a husband the  
right to divorce his wife?"

"What direction did Moses give you?" replied Jesus. 3  
"Moses," they said, "permitted a man to 'draw up in writing a  
notice of separation and divorce his wife.'" 4

"It was owing to the hardness of your hearts," said Jesus, 5  
"that Moses gave you this direction; but, at the beginning of the  
Creation, God 'made them male and female.' 'For this reason a 6  
man will leave his father and mother, and the man and his wife 7  
will become one;' so that they are no longer two, but one. What 8  
God himself, then, has yoked together no one must separate." 9

When they were indoors, the disciples asked him again 10  
about this, and he said: "Anyone who divorces his wife and mar-  
ries another woman is guilty of adultery against his wife; and, if 11  
the woman divorces her husband and marries another man, she 12  
is guilty of adultery."

Some of the people were bringing little children to Jesus, 13  
for him to touch them; but the disciples found fault with those  
who had brought them. When, however, Jesus saw this, he was 14  
indignant. "Let the little children come to me," he said, "do not

15 hinder them; for it is to the childlike that the kingdom of God  
16 belongs. I tell you, unless a person receives the kingdom of God  
like a child, they will not enter it at all." Then he folded the chil-  
17 dren in his arms, and, placing his hands on them, gave them his  
blessing.

18 As Jesus was resuming his journey, a man came running  
up to him, and threw himself on his knees before him. "Good  
19 teacher," he asked, "what must I do to gain eternal life?"

20 "Why do you call me good?" answered Jesus. "No one is  
good but God. You know the commandments — 'Do not kill. Do  
21 not commit adultery. Do not steal. Do not say what is false about  
others. Do not cheat. Honor your father and your mother.'"

22 "Teacher," he replied, "I have observed all these from my  
childhood." Jesus looked at the man, and his heart went out to  
him, and he said: "There is still one thing wanting in you; go and  
23 sell all that you have, and give to the poor, and you will have  
wealth in heaven; then come and follow me." But the man's face  
clouded at these words, and he went away distressed, for he had  
great possessions.

24 Then Jesus looked around, and said to his disciples: "How  
hard it will be for people of wealth to enter the kingdom of  
God!" The disciples were amazed at his words. But Jesus said  
again: "My children, how hard a thing it is to enter the kingdom  
25 of God! It is easier for a camel to get through a needle's eye, than  
for a rich person to enter the kingdom of God."

26 "Then who can be saved?" they exclaimed in the greatest  
astonishment. Jesus looked at them, and answered: "With peo-  
27 ple it is impossible, but not with God; for everything is possible  
with God."

28 "But we," began Peter, "we left everything and have fol-  
lowed you."

29 "I tell you," said Jesus, "there is no one who has left house, or  
brothers, or sisters, or mother, or father, or children, or land, for  
30 my sake and for the good news, who will not receive a hundred  
times as much, even now in the present — houses, and brothers,  
and sisters, and mothers, and children, and land — though not  
without persecutions, and, in the age that is coming, eternal life.  
31 But many who are first now will then be last, and the last will



be first.”

One day, when they were on their way, going up to Jerusalem, 32  
Jesus was walking in front of the apostles, who were filled  
with misgivings; while those who were following behind were  
alarmed. Gathering the Twelve around him once more, Jesus  
began to tell them what was about to happen to him. “Listen!” 33  
he said. “We are going up to Jerusalem; and there the Son of  
Man will be betrayed to the chief priests and the teachers of the  
law, and they will condemn him to death, and they will give  
him up to the Gentiles, who will mock him, spit on him, and 34  
scourge him, and put him to death; and after three days he will  
rise again.”

James and John, the two sons of Zebedee, went to Jesus, and 35  
said: “Teacher, we want you to do for us whatever we ask.”

“What do you want me to do for you?” he asked. “Grant us 36  
this,” they answered, “to sit, one on your right, and the other on  
your left, when you come in glory.” 37

“You do not know what you are asking,” Jesus said to them. 38  
“Can you drink the cup that I am to drink? Or receive the bap-  
tism that I am to receive?”

“Yes,” they answered, “we can.” 39

“You will indeed drink the cup that I am to drink,” Jesus said, 40  
“and receive the baptism that I am to receive, but as to a seat at  
my right or at my left — that is not mine to give, but it is for those  
for whom it has been prepared.”

On hearing of this, the ten others were at first very indignant 41  
about James and John. But Jesus called the ten to him, and said: 42  
“Those who are regarded as ruling among the Gentiles lord it  
over them, as you know, and their great men oppress them. But  
among you it is not so. No, whoever wants to become great 43  
among you must be your servant, and whoever wants to take  
the first place among you must be the servant of all; for even the 44  
Son of Man came, not be served, but to serve, and to give his life  
as a ransom for many.” 45

They came to Jericho. When Jesus was going out of the town 46  
with his disciples and a large crowd, Bartimaeus, the son of

47 Timaeus, a blind beggar, was sitting by the roadside. Hearing  
that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to call out: "Jesus, Son of  
48 David, take pity on me." Many of the people kept telling him to  
be quiet; but the man continued to call out all the louder: "Son  
49 of David, take pity on me." Then Jesus stopped. "Call him," he  
said. So they called the blind man. "Courage!" they exclaimed.  
50 "Get up; he is calling you." The man threw off his cloak, sprang  
51 up, and came to Jesus. "What do you want me to do for you?"  
said Jesus, addressing him. "Rabboni," the blind man answered,  
"I want to recover my sight."  
52 "You may go," Jesus said; "your faith has delivered you."  
Immediately he recovered his sight, and began to follow Jesus  
along the road.

### *The Last Days*

11 WHEN THEY HAD ALMOST REACHED JERUSALEM, as far as Bethphage  
and Bethany, near the Mount of Olives, Jesus sent on two of his  
2 disciples. "Go to the village facing you," he said; "and, as soon  
as you get there, you will find a foal tethered, which no one has  
3 ever ridden; untie it, and bring it. And, if anyone says to you  
'Why are you doing that?', say 'The Master wants it, and will be  
4 sure to send it back here at once.'" The two disciples went, and,  
finding a foal tethered outside a door in the street, they untied  
5 it. Some of the bystanders said to them: "What are you doing,  
6 untying the foal?" And the two disciples answered as Jesus had  
7 told them; and they allowed them to go. Then they brought the  
foal to Jesus, and, when they had laid their cloaks on it, he seated  
8 himself on it. Many of the people spread their cloaks on the road,  
while some strewed boughs which they had cut from the fields;  
9 and those who led the way, as well as those who followed, kept  
shouting: "'God save him! Blessed is He who comes in the name  
10 of the Lord!' Blessed is the coming kingdom of our father David!  
'God save him from on high!'"  
11 Jesus entered Jerusalem, and went into the Temple Courts;  
and, after looking around at everything, as it was already late,  
he went out to Bethany with the Twelve.

The next day, after they had left Bethany, Jesus became hungry; and, noticing a fig-tree at a distance in leaf, he went to it to see if by any chance he could find something on it; but, on coming up to it, he found nothing but leaves, for it was not the season for figs. So, addressing the tree, he exclaimed: "May no one ever again eat of your fruit!" And his disciples heard what he said. 12  
13  
14

They came to Jerusalem. Jesus went into the Temple Courts, and began to drive out those who were buying and selling there. He overturned the tables of the money changers, and the seats of the pigeon-dealers, and would not allow anyone to carry anything across the Temple Courts. Then he began to teach. "Does not scripture say," he asked, "'My house will be called a house of prayer for all the nations'? But you have made it a den of robbers.'" Now the chief priests and the teachers of the law heard this and began to look for some way of putting Jesus to death; for they were afraid of him, since all the people were greatly impressed by his teaching. As soon as evening fell, Jesus and his disciples went out of the city. 15  
16  
17  
18  
19

As they passed by early in the morning, they noticed that the fig-tree was withered up from the roots. Then Peter recalled what had occurred. "Look, Rabbi," he exclaimed, "the fig-tree which you doomed is withered up!" 20  
21

"Have faith in God!" replied Jesus. "I tell you that if anyone should say to this hill 'Be lifted up and hurled into the sea!', without ever a doubt in his mind, but in the faith that what he says will be done, he would find that it would be. And therefore I say to you 'Have faith that whatever you ask for in prayer is already granted you, and you will find that it will be.'" 22  
23  
24

'And, whenever you stand up to pray, forgive any grievance that you have against anyone, so that your Father who is in heaven also may forgive you your offenses.'" 25

They came to Jerusalem again. While Jesus was walking about in the Temple Courts, the chief priests, the teachers of the law, and the councillors came up to him. "What authority have you to do these things?" they said. "Who gave you the authority to 27  
28

do them?"

29 "I will put one question to you," said Jesus. "Answer me that,  
30 and then I will tell you what authority I have to act as I do. It is  
31 about John's baptism. Was it of divine or human origin? Answer  
32 me that." They began arguing together; "If we say 'divine,' he  
33 will say 'Why then did not you believe him?' Yet can we say 'hu-  
man'?" — They were afraid of the people, for everyone regarded  
John as undoubtedly a prophet. So their answer to Jesus was —  
"We do not know."

"Then I," replied Jesus, "refuse to tell you what authority I  
have to do these things."

12 Jesus began to speak to them in parables: "A man once plant-  
ed a vineyard, put a fence around it, dug a wine-press, built  
2 a tower, and then let it out to tenants and went abroad. At the  
proper time he sent a servant to the tenants, to receive from  
3 them a share of the produce of the grape harvest; but they seized  
4 him, and beat him, and sent him away empty-handed. A second  
time the owner sent a servant to them; this man, too, the tenants  
5 struck on the head, and insulted. He sent another, but him they  
killed; and so with many others — some they beat and some  
6 they killed. He had still one son, who was very dear to him;  
and him he sent to them last of all. 'They will respect my son,'  
7 he said. But those tenants said to one another 'Here is the heir!  
8 Come, let us kill him, and his inheritance will be ours.' So they  
seized him, and killed him, and threw his body outside the vine-  
9 yard. What will the owner of the vineyard do? He will come and  
put the tenants to death, and he will let the vineyard to others.

10 'Have you never read this passage of scripture? — 'The  
stone which the builders despised has now itself become the  
11 corner-stone; this corner-stone has come from the Lord, and is  
marvelous in our eyes.'"

12 After this his enemies were eager to arrest him, but they were  
afraid of the crowd; for they saw that it was at them that he had  
aimed the parable. So they let him alone, and went away.

13 Afterwards they sent to Jesus some of the Pharisees and of the  
Herodians, to set a trap for him in the course of conversation.

These men came to him and said: "Teacher, we know that you are an honest man, and are not afraid of anyone, for you pay no regard to a person's position, but teach the way of God honestly; are we right in paying taxes to the Emperor, or not? Should we pay, or should we not pay?" Knowing their hypocrisy, Jesus said to them: "Why are you testing me? Bring me a coin to look at." And, when they had brought it, he asked: "Whose head and title are these?" 14 15 16

"The Emperor's," they said; and Jesus replied: "Pay to the Emperor what belongs to the Emperor, and to God what belongs to God." And they wondered at him. 17

Next came some Sadducees — the men who maintain that there is no resurrection. Their question was this — "Teacher, in our scriptures Moses decreed that, should a man's brother die, leaving a widow but no child, the man should take the widow as his wife, and raise up a family for his brother. There were once seven brothers; of whom the eldest took a wife, but died and left no family; and the second took her, and died without family; and so did the third. All the seven died and left no family. The woman herself died last of all. At the resurrection whose wife will she be, all seven brothers having had her as their wife?" 18 19 20 21 22 23

"Is not the reason of your mistake," answered Jesus, "your ignorance of the scriptures and of the power of God? When people rise from the dead, there is no marrying or being married; but they are as angels in heaven." 24 25

"As to the dead, and the fact that they rise, have you never read in the book of Moses, in the passage about the Bush, how God spoke to him saying — 'I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? He is not God of dead people, but of living. You are greatly mistaken." 26 27

Then came up one of the teachers of the law who had heard their discussions. Knowing that Jesus had answered them wisely, he asked him this question: "What is the first of all the commandments?" 28

"The first," answered Jesus, "is — 'Hear, Israel; the Lord our God is the one Lord; and you must love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind," 29 30

31 and with all your strength.' The second is this — 'You must love  
your neighbor as you love yourself.' There is no commandment  
greater than these."

32 "Wisely answered, teacher!" exclaimed the teacher of the  
law. "It is true, as you say, that 'there is one God,' and that 'there  
33 is no other besides him'; and to 'love him with all one's heart,  
and with all one's understanding, and with all one's strength,'  
and to 'love one's neighbor as one loves oneself' is far beyond  
34 all 'burnt offerings and sacrifices.'" Seeing that he had answered  
with discernment, Jesus said to him: "You are not far from the  
kingdom of God."

After that no one ventured to question him further.

35 While Jesus was teaching in the Temple Courts, he asked:  
"How is it that the teachers of the law say that the Christ is to  
36 be David's son? David said himself, speaking under the inspira-  
tion of the Holy Spirit — 'The Lord said to my lord: "Sit at my  
right hand, until I put your enemies beneath your feet.'" David  
37 himself calls him 'lord,' how comes it, then, that he is to be  
his son?"

The mass of the people listened to Jesus with delight. In  
38 the course of his teaching, Jesus said: "See that you are on your  
guard against the teachers of the law, who delight to walk about  
in long robes, and to be greeted in the streets with respect, and  
39 to have the best seats in the Synagogues, and places of honor at  
dinner. They are the men who rob widows of their homes, and  
40 make a pretense of saying long prayers. Their sentence will be  
all the heavier."

41 Then Jesus sat down opposite the chests for the Temple offer-  
ings, and watched how the people put money into them. Many  
42 rich people were putting in large sums; but one poor widow  
came and put in two small coins, worth very little. Then, calling  
43 his disciples to him, Jesus said: "I tell you that this poor widow  
has put in more than all the others who were putting money into  
44 the chests; for everyone else put in something from what he had  
to spare, while she, in her need, put in all she had — everything  
that she had to live on."

As Jesus was walking out of the Temple Courts, one of his disciples said to him: "Teacher, look what fine stones and buildings these are!" 13

"Do you see these great buildings?" asked Jesus. "Not a single stone will be left here on another, which will not be thrown down." 2

When Jesus had sat down on the Mount of Olives, facing the Temple, Peter, James, John and Andrew questioned him privately: "Tell us when this will be, and what will be the sign when all this is drawing to its close." 3 4

Then Jesus began: "See that no one leads you astray. Many will take my name, and come saying 'I am He', and will lead many astray." 5 6

"And, when you hear of wars and rumors of wars, do not be alarmed; such things must occur; but the end is not yet. For 'nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom'; there will be earthquakes in various places; there will be famines. This will be but the beginning of the birth-pangs." 7 8

"See to yourselves! They will betray you to courts of law; and you will be taken to Synagogues and beaten; and you will be brought up before governors and kings for my sake, so that you can bear witness before them. But the good news must first be proclaimed to every nation. Whenever they betray you and hand you over for trial, do not be anxious beforehand as to what you will say, but say whatever is given you at the moment; for it will not be you who speak, but the Holy Spirit. Brother will betray brother to death, and the father his child; and children will turn against their parents, and cause them to be put to death; and you will be hated by everyone because of me. Yet the person who endures to the end will be saved." 9 10 11 12 13

"As soon, however, as you see 'the Foul Desecration' standing where he ought not" (the reader must consider what this means) "then those of you who are in Judea must take refuge in the mountains; and a person on the house-top must not go down, or go in to get anything out of their house: nor must one who is on their farm turn back to get their cloak. And alas for pregnant women, and for those who are nursing infants in those 14 15 16 17

18 days! Pray, too, that this may not occur in winter. For those days  
19 will be a time of distress, the like of which has not occurred  
20 from the beginning of God's creation until now — and never  
will again. And, had not the Lord put a limit to those days, not a  
single soul would escape; but, for the sake of God's own chosen  
people, he did limit them.

21 "And at that time if anyone should say to you 'Look, here is  
22 the Christ!' 'Look, there he is!', do not believe it; for false Christs  
and false prophets will arise, and display signs and marvels, to  
23 lead astray, were it possible, even God's people. But see that you  
are on your guard! I have told you all this beforehand.

24 "In those days, after that time of distress, 'the sun will be  
25 darkened, the moon will not give her light, the stars will be  
falling from the heavens,' and 'the forces that are in the heavens  
26 will be convulsed.' Then will be seen the 'Son of Man coming in  
27 clouds' with great power and glory; and then he will send the  
angels, and gather his people from the four winds, from one end  
of the world to the other.

28 "Learn the lesson taught by the fig-tree. As soon as its  
branches are full of sap, and it is bursting into leaf, you know  
29 that summer is near. And so may you, as soon as you see these  
things happening, know that he is at your doors. I tell you that  
30 even the present generation will not pass away, until all these  
things have taken place. The heavens and the earth will pass  
31 away, but my words will not pass away.

32 "But about 'that day,' or 'the hour,' no one knows — not even  
the angels in heaven, nor yet the Son — but only the Father.

33 "See that you are on the watch; for you do not know when  
34 the time will be. It is like a man going on a journey, who leaves  
his home, puts his servants in charge — each having their special  
35 duty — and orders the porter to watch. Therefore watch,  
for you cannot be sure when the Master of the house is coming  
— whether in the evening, at midnight, at daybreak, or in the  
36 morning — otherwise he might come suddenly and find you  
37 asleep. And what I say to you I say to all — Watch!"

14 It was now two days before the Festival of the Passover and the



unleavened bread. The chief priests and the teachers of the law were looking for an opportunity to arrest Jesus by stealth, and to put him to death; for they said: "Not during the Festival, or the people may riot." 2

When Jesus was still at Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, while he was sitting at the table, a woman came with an alabaster jar of choice spikenard perfume of great value. She broke the jar, and poured the perfume on his head. Some of those who were present said to one another indignantly: "Why has the perfume been wasted like this? This perfume could have been sold for more than a year's wages, and the money given to the poor." 3 4 5

"Leave her alone," said Jesus, as they began to find fault with her, "why are you troubling her? This is a beautiful deed that she has done for me. You always have the poor with you, and whenever you wish you can do good to them; but you will not always have me. She has done what she could; she has perfumed my body beforehand for my burial. And I tell you, wherever, in the whole world, the good news is proclaimed, what this woman has done will be told in memory of her." 6 7 8 9

After this, Judas Iscariot, one of the Twelve, went to the chief priests, to betray Jesus to them. They were glad to hear what he said, and promised to pay him. So he began looking for a good opportunity to betray Jesus. 10 11

On the first day of the Festival of the unleavened bread, when it was customary to kill the Passover lambs, his disciples said to Jesus: "Where do you wish us to go and make preparations for your eating the Passover?" Jesus sent forward two of his disciples and said to them: "Go into the city, and there a man carrying a pitcher of water will meet you; follow him; and, wherever he goes in, say to the owner of the house 'The teacher says — Where is my room where I am to eat the Passover with my disciples?' He will himself show you a large upstairs room, set out ready; and there make preparations for us." So the disciples set out and went into the city, and found everything just as Jesus had told them; and they prepared the Passover. 12 13 14 15 16

17 In the evening he went there with the Twelve, and when they  
18 had taken their places and were eating, Jesus said: "I tell you that  
one of you is going to betray me — one who is eating with me."  
19 They were grieved at this, and began to say to him, one after  
another: "Can it be I?"

20 "It is one of you Twelve," said Jesus, "the one who is dipping  
21 his bread beside me into the dish. True, the Son of Man must go,  
as scripture says of him, yet alas for that man by whom the Son  
of Man is being betrayed! For that man 'it would be better never  
to have been born!'"

22 While they were eating, Jesus took some bread, and, after  
saying the blessing, broke it, and gave it to them, and said: "Take  
23 it; this is my body." Then he took a cup, and, after saying the  
24 thanksgiving, gave it to them, and they all drank from it. "This  
is my covenant-blood," he said, "which is poured out on behalf  
25 of many. I tell you that I will never again drink of the juice of the  
grape, until that day when I will drink it new in the kingdom  
of God."

26 They then sang a hymn, and went out up the Mount of  
27 Olives, presently Jesus said to them: "All of you will fall away;  
for scripture says — 'I will strike down the shepherd, and the  
28 sheep will be scattered.' Yet, after I have risen, I will go before  
you into Galilee."

29 "Even if everyone else falls away," said Peter, "yet I will  
not."

30 "I tell you," answered Jesus, "that you yourself today —  
yes, this very night — before the cock crows twice, will disown  
31 me three times." But Peter vehemently protested: "Even if I  
must die with you, I will never disown you!" And they all said  
the same.

32 Presently they came to a garden known as Gethsemane, and  
33 Jesus said to his disciples "Sit down here while I pray." He took  
with him Peter, James, and John; and began to show signs of  
34 great dismay and deep distress of mind. "I am sad at heart," he  
35 said, "sad even to death; wait here, and watch." Going on a little  
further, he threw himself on the ground, and began to pray that,

if it were possible, he might be spared that hour. "Abba, Father," 36  
he said, "all things are possible to you; take away this cup from  
me; yet, not what I will, but what you will."

Then he came and found the three apostles asleep. "Simon," 37  
he said to Peter, "are you asleep? Could not you watch for one  
hour? Watch and pray," he said to them all, "so that you may not 38  
fall into temptation. True, the spirit is eager, but human nature is  
weak." Again he went away, and prayed in the same words; and 39  
coming back again he found them asleep, for their eyes were 40  
heavy; and they did not know what to say to him.

A third time he came, and said to them: "Sleep on now, and 41  
rest yourselves. Enough! My time has come. Look: the Son of  
Man is being betrayed into the hands of wicked people. Up, and 42  
let us be going. Look! My betrayer is close at hand."

And just then, while he was still speaking, Judas, who was 43  
one of the Twelve, came up; and with him a crowd of people,  
with swords and clubs, sent by the chief priests, the teachers of 44  
the law, and the councillors. Now the betrayer had arranged a  
signal with them. "The man whom I kiss," he had said, "will be 45  
the one; arrest him and take him away safely." As soon as Judas  
came, he went up to Jesus at once, and said: "Rabbi!" and kissed 46  
him. Then the men seized Jesus, and arrested him.

One of those who were standing by drew his sword, and 47  
struck at the high priest's servant, and cut off his ear. But Jesus  
spoke up, and said to the men: "Have you come out, as if after 48  
a robber, with swords and clubs, to take me? I have been among  
you day after day in the Temple Courts teaching, and yet you 49  
did not arrest me; but this is in fulfillment of the scriptures."  
And all the apostles forsook him, and fled. One young man did 50  
indeed follow him, wrapped only in a linen sheet. They tried to 51  
arrest him; but he left the sheet in their hands, and fled naked. 52

Then they took Jesus to the high priest; and all the chief priests, 53  
the councillors, and the teachers of the law assembled. Peter,  
who had followed Jesus at a distance into the courtyard of the 54  
high priest, was sitting there among the police officers, warming  
himself at the blaze of the fire.

55        Meanwhile the chief priest and the whole of the High Council were trying to get such evidence against Jesus as would warrant his being put to death, but they could not find any; for,  
56        though there were many who gave false evidence against him,  
57        yet their evidence did not agree. Presently some men stood up,  
58        and gave this false evidence against him — “We ourselves heard  
59        him say ‘I will destroy this Temple made with hands, and in three days build another made without hands.’” Yet not even on that point did their evidence agree.

60        Then the high priest stood forward, and questioned Jesus. “Have you no answer to make?” he asked. “What is this evidence which these men are giving against you?” But Jesus remained silent, and made no answer.

      A second time the high priest questioned him. “Are you,” he asked, “the Christ, the Son of the Blessed One?”

62        “I am,” replied Jesus, “and you will all see the Son of Man sitting on the right hand of the Almighty; and ‘coming in the clouds of heaven’.” At this the high priest tore his vestments. “Why do we want any more witnesses?” he exclaimed. “You  
63        heard his blasphemy? What is your verdict?” They all condemned him, declaring that he deserved death.

64        Some of those present began to spit at him, and to blindfold his eyes, and strike him, saying, as they did so, “Now play the prophet!” and even the police officers received him with blows.

65        While Peter was in the courtyard down below, one of the high priest’s maidservants came up; and, seeing Peter warming himself, she looked closely at him, and exclaimed: “Why, you were with Jesus, the Nazarene!” But Peter denied it. “I do not know or understand what you mean,” he replied. Then he went  
66        out into the porch; and there the maidservant, on seeing him,  
67        began to say again to the bystanders: “This is one of them!” But  
68        Peter again denied it.

      Soon afterwards the bystanders again said to him: “You certainly are one of them; why you are a Galilean!” But he said to them: “I swear that I do not know the man you are talking about!  
69        May God punish me if I am lying!” At that moment, for the second time, a cock crowed; and Peter remembered the words that  
70        Jesus had said to him — ‘Before a cock has crowed twice, you  
71         
72

will disown me three times'; and, as he thought of it, he began to weep.

As soon as it was daylight, the chief priests, after holding a consultation with the councillors and teachers of the law — that is to say, the whole High Council — put Jesus in chains, and took him away, and gave him up to Pilate. “Are you the king of the Jews?” asked Pilate. “It is true,” replied Jesus. Then the chief priests brought a number of charges against him. So Pilate questioned Jesus again. “Have you no reply to make?” he asked. “Listen, how many charges they are bringing against you.” But Jesus still made no reply whatever; at which Pilate was astonished. 15 2 3 4 5

Now, at the feast, Pilate used to grant the people the release of any one prisoner whom they might ask for. A man called Barabbas was in prison, with the rioters who had committed murder during a riot. So, when the crowd went up and began to ask Pilate to follow his usual custom, he answered: “Do you want me to release the ‘king of the Jews’ for you?” For he was aware that it was out of jealousy that the chief priests had given Jesus up to him. But the chief priests incited the crowd to get Barabbas released instead. Pilate, however, spoke to them again: “What should I do then with the man whom you call the ‘king of the Jews’?” Again they shouted: “Crucify him!” 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13

“Why, what harm has he done?” Pilate kept saying to them. But they shouted furiously: “Crucify him!” And Pilate, wishing to satisfy the crowd, released Barabbas to them, and, after scourging Jesus, gave him up to be crucified. 14 15

The soldiers then took Jesus away into the courtyard — that is the Government house — and they called the whole garrison together. They dressed him in a purple robe, and, having twisted a crown of thorns, put it on him, and then began to salute him. “Long life to you, king of the Jews!” they said. And they kept striking him on the head with a rod, spitting at him, and bowing to the ground before him — going down on their knees; and, when they had left off mocking him, they took off the purple robe, and put his own clothes on him. 16 17 18 19 20

21 They led Jesus out to crucify him; and they compelled a passer-  
by, Simon from Cyrene, who was on his way in from the coun-  
try, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to go with them to carry  
his cross.

22 They brought Jesus to the place which was known as Golgo-  
tha — a name which means ‘place of a Skull.’ There they offered  
23 him drugged wine; but Jesus refused it. Then they crucified him,  
24 and divided his clothes among them, casting lots for them, to  
settle what each should take.

25 It was nine in the morning when they crucified him. The  
26 words of the charge against him, written up over his head, read  
27 — ‘THE KING OF THE JEWS.’ And with him they crucified two  
robbers, one on the right, and the other on the left.

29 The passers-by railed at him, shaking their heads, as they  
said: “Ah! You who would destroy the Temple and build one in  
30 three days, come down from the cross and save yourself!” In the  
31 same way the chief priests, with the teachers of the law, said to  
32 one another in mockery: “He saved others, but he cannot save  
himself! Let the Christ, the ‘king of Israel,’ come down from the  
cross now so that we can see it and believe.” Even the men who  
had been crucified with Jesus insulted him.

33 At midday, a darkness came over the whole country, last-  
34 ing until three in the afternoon. And, at three, Jesus called out  
loudly: ‘Eloi, Eloi, lama sabacthani?’ which means ‘My God,  
35 my God, why have you forsaken me?’ Some of those standing  
around heard this, and said: “Listen! He is calling for Elijah!”  
36 And a man ran, and, soaking a sponge in common wine, put it  
on the end of a rod, and offered it to him to drink, saying as he  
did so: “Wait and let us see if Elijah is coming to take him down.”  
37 But Jesus, giving a loud cry, expired. The Temple curtain was  
38 torn in two from top to bottom. The Roman officer, who was  
39 standing facing Jesus, on seeing the way in which he expired,  
exclaimed: “This man must indeed have been ‘God’s Son!’”

40 There were some women also watching from a distance, among  
them being Mary of Magdala, Mary the mother of James the Lit-  
41 tle and of Joseph, and Salome — all of whom used to accompa-

ny Jesus when he was in Galilee, and attend on him — besides many other women who had come up with him to Jerusalem.

The evening had already fallen, when, as it was the Preparation day — the day before the Sabbath — Joseph from Ramah, a Councillor of good position, who was himself living in expectation of the kingdom of God, came and ventured to go in to see Pilate, and to ask for the body of Jesus. But Pilate was surprised to hear that he had already died. So he sent for the officer, and asked if he were already dead; and, on learning from the officer that it was so, he gave the corpse to Joseph. Joseph, having bought a linen sheet, took Jesus down, and wound the sheet around him, and laid him in a tomb which had been cut out of the rock; and then rolled a stone up against the entrance of the tomb. Mary of Magdala and Mary, the mother of Joseph, were watching to see where he was laid.

### *The Risen Life Announced*

WHEN THE SABBATH WAS OVER, Mary of Magdala, Mary the mother of James, and Salome bought some spices, so that they might go and anoint the body of Jesus. And very early on the first day of the week they went to the tomb, after sunrise. They were saying to one another: "Who will roll away the stone for us from the entrance of the tomb?" But, on looking up, they saw that the stone had already been rolled back; it was a very large one. Going into the tomb, they saw a young man sitting on their right, in a white robe, and they were dismayed; But he said to them: "Do not be dismayed; you are looking for Jesus, the Nazarene, who has been crucified; he has risen, he is not here! Look! Here is the place where they laid him. But go, and say to his disciples and to Peter 'He is going before you into Galilee; there you will see him, as he told you.'" They went out, and fled from the tomb, for they were trembling and bewildered; and they did not say a word to anyone, for they were frightened;

### *A late appendix*

*(Inserted in some manuscripts from an ancient source)*

9 AFTER HIS RISING AGAIN, early on the first day of the week, Jesus  
10 appeared first of all to Mary of Magdala, from whom he had  
11 driven out seven demons. She went and told the news to those  
12 who had been with him and who were now in sorrow and tears;  
13 yet even they, when they heard that he was alive and had been  
14 seen by her, did not believe it. Afterwards, altered in appearance,  
15 he made himself known to two of them, as they were walking,  
16 on their way into the country. They also went and told the rest,  
17 but they did not believe even them. Later on, he made himself  
18 known to the Eleven themselves as they were at a meal, and re-  
19 proached them with their want of faith and their stubbornness,  
20 because they did not believe those who had seen him after he  
had risen from the dead. Then he said to them: "Go into all the  
world, and proclaim the good news to all creation. He who be-  
lieves and is baptized will be saved; but he who refuses to be-  
lieve will be condemned. Moreover these signs will attend those  
who believe. In my name they will drive out demons; they will  
speak with 'tongues'; they will take up snakes in their hands;  
and, if they drink any poison, it will not hurt them; they will  
place their hands on sick people and they will recover." So the  
Lord Jesus, after he had spoken to them, was taken up into heav-  
en, and sat at the right hand of God. But they set out, and made  
the proclamation everywhere, the Lord working with them, and  
confirming the message by the signs which attended it.

### *Another appendix*

BUT ALL THAT HAD BEEN REVEALED TO THEM THEY REPORTED BRIEFLY TO Peter and his companions. Afterwards Jesus himself sent them out, from east to west, the sacred and imperishable proclamation of eternal salvation.



# Luke

*The Good News According to Luke*

## *Dedication*

To his Excellency, Theophilus. 1

Many attempts have been already made to draw up an  
because of those events which have reached their conclusion  
among us, just as they were reported to us by those who from the  
beginning were eye-witnesses, and afterwards became bearers  
of the message. And, therefore, I also, since I have investigated  
all these events with great care from their very beginning, have  
resolved to write a connected history of them for you, in order  
that you may be able to satisfy yourself of the accuracy of the  
story which you have heard from the lips of others. 2  
3  
4

## *Birth, Parentage, Infancy and Boyhood*

IN THE REIGN OF HEROD, king of Judea, there was a priest named  
Zechariah, who belonged to the division called after Abijah.  
His wife, whose name was Elizabeth, was also a descendant of  
Aaron. They were both righteous people, who lived blameless  
lives, guiding their steps by all the commandments and ordi-  
nances of the Lord. But they had no child, Elizabeth being bar-  
ren; and both of them were advanced in years. 5  
6  
7

One day, when Zechariah was officiating as priest before  
God, during the turn of his division, it fell to him by lot, in accor-  
dance with the practice among the priests, to go into the Temple  
of the Lord and burn incense; and, as it was the Hour of Incense,  
the people were all praying outside. And an angel of the Lord  
appeared to him, standing on the right of the Altar of Incense. 8  
9  
10  
11

12 Zechariah was startled at the sight and was awe-struck. But the  
13 angel said to him: "Do not be afraid, Zechariah; your prayer has  
14 been heard, and your wife Elizabeth will bear you a son, whom  
15 you will call by the name John. He will be to you a joy and a de-  
16 light; and many will rejoice over his birth. For he will be great in  
17 the sight of the Lord; he will not drink any wine or strong drink,  
18 and he will be filled with the Holy Spirit from the very hour of  
19 his birth, and will reconcile many of the Israelites to the Lord  
20 their God. He will go before him in the spirit and with the power  
21 of Elijah, 'to reconcile fathers to their children' and the disobe-  
22 dient to the wisdom of the righteous, and so make ready for the  
23 Lord a people prepared for him."

18 "How can I be sure of this?" Zechariah asked the angel. "For  
19 I am an old man and my wife is advanced in years."

19 "I am Gabriel," the angel answered, "who stand in the pres-  
20 ence of God, and I have been sent to speak to you and to bring  
21 you this good news. And now you will be silent and unable  
22 to speak until the day when this takes place, because you did  
23 not believe what I said, though my words will be fulfilled in  
24 due course."

21 Meanwhile the people were watching for Zechariah, won-  
22 dering at his remaining so long in the Temple. When he came  
23 out, he was unable to speak to them, and they perceived that  
24 he had seen a vision there. But Zechariah kept making signs to  
25 them, and remained dumb. And, as soon as his term of service  
26 was finished, he returned home. After this his wife, Elizabeth,  
27 became pregnant and lived in seclusion for five months. "The  
28 Lord has done this for me," she said, "he has shown me kind-  
29 ness and taken away the public disgrace of childlessness under  
30 which I have been living."

26 Six months later the angel Gabriel was sent from God to a town  
27 in Galilee called Nazareth, to a maiden there who was engaged  
28 to a man named Joseph, a descendant of David. Her name was  
29 Mary. Gabriel came into her presence and greeted her, saying:  
30 "You have been shown great favor - the Lord is with you.."

29 Mary was much disturbed at his words, and was wondering

to herself what such a greeting could mean, when the angel spoke again: "Do not be afraid, Mary, for you have found favor with God. And now, you will conceive and give birth to a son, and you will give him the name Jesus. The child will be great and will be called 'Son of the Most High,' and the Lord God will give him the throne of his ancestor David, and he will reign over the descendants of Jacob for ever; And to his kingdom there will be no end."

"How can this be?" Mary asked the angel. "For I have no husband."

"The Holy Spirit will descend on you," answered the angel, "and the Power of the Most High will overshadow you; and therefore the child will be called 'holy,' and 'Son of God.' And Elizabeth, your cousin, is herself also expecting a son in her old age; and it is now the sixth month with her, though she is called barren; for no promise from God will fail to be fulfilled."

"I am the servant of the Lord," exclaimed Mary; "let it be with me as you have said." Then the angel left her.

Soon after this Mary set out, and made her way quickly into the hill-country, to a town in Judah; and there she went into Zechariah's house and greeted Elizabeth. When Elizabeth heard Mary's greeting, the child moved within her, and Elizabeth herself was filled with the Holy Spirit, and cried aloud: "Blessed are you among women, and blessed is your unborn child! But how have I this honor, that the mother of my Lord should come to me? For, as soon as your greeting reached my ears, the child moved within me with delight! Happy indeed is she who believed that the promise which she received from the Lord would be fulfilled."

And Mary said:

"My soul exalts the Lord,  
my spirit delights in God my Savior;  
for he has remembered his humble servant girl;  
And from this hour all ages will count me happy!

Great things has the Almighty done for me;

50           And holy is his name.  
From age to age his mercy rests  
          On those who honor him.

51           Mighty are the deeds of his arm;  
          He scatters the proud with their own devices,  
52           he casts down princes from their thrones,  
          and the humble he uplifts,  
53           the hungry he loads with gifts,  
          and the rich he sends empty away.

54           He has stretched out his hand to his servant Israel,  
          Ever mindful of his mercy  
55           (As he promised to our forefathers)  
          For Abraham and his race for ever."

56           Mary stayed with Elizabeth about three months, and then re-  
57           turned to her home. When Elizabeth's time came, she gave birth  
58           to a son; and her neighbors and relations, hearing of the great  
59           goodness of the Lord to her, came to share her joy. A week later  
60           they met to circumcise the child, and were about to call him  
          'Zechariah' after his father, when his mother spoke up: "No, he  
          is to be called John."

61           "You have no relation of that name!" they exclaimed; and  
62           they made signs to the child's father, to find out what he wished  
63           the child to be called. Asking for a writing-tablet, he wrote  
64           the words — 'His name is John.' Everyone was surprised; and  
65           immediately Zechariah recovered his voice and the use of his  
66           tongue, and began to bless God. All their neighbors were awe-  
          struck at this; and throughout the hill-country of Judea the  
          whole story was much talked about; and all who heard it kept it  
          in mind, asking one another — "What can this child be destined  
          to become?" For the Power of the Lord was with him.

67           Then his father Zechariah was filled with the Holy Spirit,  
          and, speaking under inspiration, said:

68           "Blessed is the Lord, the God of Israel,

Who has visited his people and wrought their deliverance,  
and has raised up for us the Strength of our salvation 69  
In the house of his servant David —

As he promised by the lips of his holy prophets of old — 70  
salvation from our enemies and from the hands of all who 71  
hate us,  
showing mercy to our forefathers, 72  
And mindful of his sacred covenant.

This was the oath which he swore to our forefather Abraham 73  
—  
That we should be rescued from the hands of our enemies, 74  
and should serve him without fear in holiness and righ- 75  
teousness,  
In his presence all our days.

And you, child, will be called prophet of the Most High, 76  
For you will go before the Lord to make ready his way,  
to give his people the knowledge of salvation 77  
In the forgiveness of their sins,

through the tender mercy of our God, 78  
Whereby the Dawn will break on us from heaven,  
to give light to those who live in darkness and the shadow 79  
of death,  
And guide our feet into the way of peace.”

The child grew and became strong in spirit; and he lived in the 80  
Wilds until the time came for his appearance before Israel.

About that time an edict was issued by the Emperor August- 2  
tus that a census should be taken of the whole Empire. (This was 2  
the first census taken while Quirinius was Governor of Syria).  
And everyone went to his own town to be registered. Among 3  
others Joseph went up from the town of Nazareth in Galilee to 4

5 Bethlehem, the town of David, in Judea — because he belonged  
to the family and house of David — To be registered with Mary,  
6 his engaged wife, who was about to become a mother. While  
they were there her time came, and she gave birth to her first  
7 child, a son. And because there was no room for them in the inn,  
8 she swathed him around and laid him in a manger. In that same  
country-side were shepherds out in the open fields, watching  
9 their flocks that night, when an angel of the Lord suddenly stood  
by them, and the glory of the Lord shone around them; and they  
10 were seized with fear. “Have no fear,” the angel said. “For I bring  
you good news of a great joy in store for all the nation. This day  
11 there has been born to you, in the town of David, a Savior, who is  
Christ and Lord. And this will be the sign for you. You will find  
12 the infant swathed, and lying in a manger.”

13 Then suddenly there appeared with the angel a multitude of  
the heavenly Host, praising God, and singing —

14 “glory to God on high,  
And on earth peace among those in whom he finds pleasure.”

15 Now, when the angels had left them and gone back to heaven,  
the shepherds said to one another: “Let us go at once to Bethle-  
hem, and see this thing that has happened, of which the Lord has  
16 told us.” So they went quickly, and found Mary and Joseph, and  
the infant lying in a manger; and, when they saw it, they told of  
17 all that had been said to them about this child. All who heard the  
shepherds were astonished at their story, while Mary treasured  
18 up all that they said, and thought about it often in her thoughts.  
19 And the shepherds went back, giving glory and praise to God  
20 for all that they had heard and seen, as it had been told them.

21 Eight days after the birth of the child, when it was time to cir-  
cumcise him, he received the name Jesus — the name given him  
by the angel before his conception.

22 When the period of purification of mother and child, required

by the law of Moses, came to an end, his parents took the child up to Jerusalem to present him to the Lord, in compliance with the law of the Lord that 'every first-born male will be dedicated to the Lord,' And also to offer the sacrifice required by the law of the Lord — 'a pair of turtle-doves or two young pigeons.'

There was at that time in Jerusalem a man named Simeon, a righteous and devout man, who lived in constant expectation of the Consolation of Israel, and under the guidance of the Holy Spirit. It had been revealed to him by the Holy Spirit that he should not die until he had seen the Lord's Christ. Moved by the Spirit, Simeon came into the Temple Courts, and, when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him what was customary under the law, Simeon himself took the child in his arms, and blessed God, and said:

"Now, Lord, you will let your servant go,  
According to your word, in peace,  
for my eyes have seen the salvation  
Which you have prepared in the sight of all nations —  
A light to bring light to the Gentiles,  
And to be the glory of your people Israel."

While the child's father and mother were wondering at what was said about him, Simeon gave them his blessing, and said to Mary, the child's mother: "This child is appointed to be the cause of the fall and rise of many in Israel, and to be a sign much spoken against — Yes, the sword will pierce your own heart — and so the thoughts in many minds will be disclosed."

There was also a Prophetess named Hannah, a daughter of Phanuel and of the tribe of Asher. She was far advanced in years, having lived with her husband for seven years after marriage, and then a widow, until she had reached the age of eighty-four. She never left the Temple Courts, but, fasting and praying, worshiped God night and day. At that moment she came up, and began publicly to thank God and to speak about the child to all who were looking for the deliverance of Jerusalem.

When the child's parents had done everything required by the law of the Lord, they returned to Galilee to their own town of

40 Nazareth. The child grew and became strong and wise, and the blessing of God was on him.

41 Every year the child's parents used to go to Jerusalem at the  
42 Passover Festival. When Jesus was twelve years old, they went  
43 according to custom to Jerusalem, and had finished their vis-  
44 it; but, when they started to return, the boy Jesus remained be-  
45 hind in Jerusalem, without their knowing it. Thinking that he  
46 was with their fellow travelers, they went one day's journey be-  
47 fore searching for him among their relations and acquaintances;  
48 and then, as they did not find him, they returned to Jerusalem,  
49 searching everywhere for him. It was not until the third day that  
50 they found him in the Temple Courts, sitting among the teach-  
51 ers, now listening to them, now asking them questions. All who  
52 listened to him marveled at his intelligence and his answers.

His parents were amazed when they saw him, and his mother said to him: "My child, why have you treated us like this? Your father and I have been searching for you in great distress."

49 "What made you search for me?" he answered. "Did not you  
50 know that I must be in my Father's house?" His parents did not  
51 understand what he meant. However he went down with them  
52 to Nazareth, and submitted himself to their control; and his  
mother treasured all that was said in her heart. And Jesus grew  
in wisdom as he grew in years, and 'gained the blessing of God  
and people.'

### *The Preparation*

3 IN THE FIFTEENTH YEAR OF THE REIGN OF THE EMPEROR TIBERIUS, when  
Pontius Pilate was Governor of Judea, Herod Ruler of Galilee,  
his brother Philip Ruler of the territory comprising Ituraea and  
2 Trachonitis, and Lysanias Ruler of Abilene, and when Annas  
and Caiaphas were high priests, a command from God came to  
John, the son of Zechariah, while he was in the wilderness. And  
3 John went through the whole district of the Jordan, proclaim-  
4 ing baptism on repentance, for the forgiveness of sins. This was



in fulfillment of what is said in the writings of the prophet Isaiah —

‘The voice of one crying aloud in the wilderness:  
 “Make ready the way of the Lord,  
 Make his paths straight.  
 Every chasm will be filled, 5  
 Every mountain and hill will be leveled,  
 The winding ways will be straightened,  
 The rough roads made smooth,  
 and everyone will see the salvation of God.”’ 6

And John said to the crowds that went to be baptized by him: 7  
 “You children of snakes! Who has prompted you to seek refuge 8  
 from the coming judgment? Let your lives, then, prove your re-  
 pentance; and do not begin to say among yourselves ‘Abraham 9  
 is our ancestor,’ for I tell you that out of these stones God is able  
 to raise descendants for Abraham! Already, indeed, the axe is ly-  
 ing at the root of the trees. Therefore every tree that fails to bear  
 good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire.”

“What are we to do then?” the people asked. “Let anyone 10  
 who has two coats,” answered John, “share with the person who 11  
 has none; and anyone who has food do the same.”

Even tax-gatherers came to be baptized, and said to John: 12  
 “Teacher, what are we to do?”

“Do not collect more than you have authority to demand,” 13  
 John answered. And when some soldiers on active service asked 14  
 “And we — what are we to do?” he said: “Never use violence,  
 or exact anything by false accusation; and be content with  
 your pay.”

Then, while the people were in suspense, and were all de- 15  
 bating with themselves whether John could be the Christ, John, 16  
 addressing them all, said: “I, indeed, baptize you with water; but  
 there is coming one more powerful than I, and I am not fit even  
 to unfasten his sandals. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit  
 and with fire. His winnowing-fan is in his hand so that he may 17  
 clear his threshing-floor, and store the grain in his barn, but the  
 chaff he will burn with a fire that cannot be put out.”

18 And so with many different appeals John told his good  
19 news to the people. But Prince Herod, being rebuked by John  
20 respecting Herodias, the wife of Herod's brother, and for all the  
evil things that he had done, crowned them all by shutting John  
up in prison.

21 Now after the baptism of all the people, and when Jesus had  
22 been baptized and was still praying, the heavens opened, and  
the Holy Spirit descended, in a visible form, like a dove, on him,  
and from the heavens came a voice — "You are my dearly loved  
son; you bring me great joy."

23 When beginning his work, Jesus was about thirty years old.  
He was regarded as the son of Joseph, whose ancestors were —

24 Eli, Mattith, Levi, Melchiah, Janna, Joseph, Mattithiah, Amos,  
25 Nahum, Azaliah, Nogah, Mattith, Mattithiah, Shimei, Joseph,  
26 Josheh, Johanan, Rhesa, Zerubbabel, Shealtiel, Neriah, Melchi-  
27 ah, Addi, Cosam, Elmodam, Er, Joshua, Eliezer, Joram, Mattith,  
28 Levi, Simeon, Judah, Joseph, Jonam, Eliakim, Meleah, Menan,  
29 Mattithiah, Nathan, David, Jesse, Obed, Boaz, Salah, Nahshon,  
30 Amminadab, Arni, Hezron, Perez, Judah, Jacob, Isaac, Abra-  
31 ham, Terah, Nahor, Serug, Reu, Peleg, Eber, Shelah, Kenan,  
32 Arpachshad, Shem, Noah, Lamech, Methuselah, Enoch, Jared,  
Mahalalel, Kenan, Enosh, Seth and Adam the son of God.

33 On returning from the Jordan, full of the Holy Spirit, Jesus was  
34 led by the power of the Spirit through the wilderness for forty  
35 days, tempted by the devil.

36 All that time he ate nothing; and, when it was over, he be-  
37 came hungry. So the devil said to him: "If you are God's Son,  
38 tell this stone to become a loaf of bread." And Jesus answered  
4 him: "Scripture says — 'It is not on bread alone that a person is  
to live.'"

2 And the devil led Jesus up, and showing him in a single mo-  
3 ment all the kingdoms of the earth, said to him: "I will give you  
4 all this power, and the splendor of them; for it has been giv-  
5 en into my hands and I give it to whom I wish. If you worship  
6 me, it will all be yours." And Jesus answered him: "Scripture

says — ‘You should worship the Lord your God, and worship him only.’”

The devil next led him into Jerusalem, and, placing him on the parapet of the Temple, said: “If you are God’s Son throw yourself down from here, for scripture says — ‘He will give his angels commands about you, to guard you safely,’ And ‘On their hands they will lift you up, otherwise you might strike your foot against a stone.’” But Jesus answered him: “It is said — ‘You must not tempt the Lord your God.’”

When he had tried every kind of temptation, the devil left Jesus, until another opportunity.

### *The Work in Galilee*

MOVED BY THE POWER OF THE SPIRIT, Jesus returned to Galilee. Reports about him spread through all that neighborhood; and he began to teach in their Synagogues, and was honored by everyone.

Coming to Nazareth, where he had been brought up, Jesus, as was his custom, went on the Sabbath into the Synagogue, and stood up to read the scriptures. He was given the book of the prophet Isaiah; and Jesus opened the book and found the place where it says —

‘The Spirit of the Lord is on me,  
 For he has consecrated me to bring good news to the poor,  
 He has sent me to proclaim release to captives and restoration of sight to the blind,  
 To set the oppressed at liberty,  
 to proclaim the accepted year of the Lord.’

Then, closing the book and returning it to the attendant, he sat down. The eyes of all in the Synagogue were fixed on him, and Jesus began:

“This very day this passage has been fulfilled in your hearing.”

22 All who were present spoke well of him, and were aston-  
23 ished at the beautiful words that fell from his lips. "Is not he  
Joseph's son?" they asked. "Doubtless," said Jesus, "you will re-  
24 mind me of the saying — 'Doctor, cure yourself;' and you will  
25 say 'Do here in your own country all that we have heard that  
has been done at Capernaum.' I tell you," he continued, "that no  
26 prophet is acceptable in his own country. There were, doubtless,  
many widows in Israel in Elijah's days, when the heavens were  
closed for three years and six months, and a severe famine pre-  
27 vailed throughout the country; and yet it was not to one of them  
that Elijah was sent, but to a widow at Zarephath in Sidonia.  
28 And there were many lepers in Israel in the time of the prophet  
Elisha, yet it was not one of them who was made clean, but Naa-  
29 man the Syrian." All the people in the Synagogue, as they lis-  
30 tened to this, became enraged. Starting up, they drove Jesus out  
of the town, and led him to the brow of the hill on which their  
town stood, intending to hurl him down. But he passed through  
the middle of the crowd and went on his way.

31 Then Jesus went down to Capernaum, a city in Galilee. On the  
32 Sabbath he taught the people. They were amazed at his teaching,  
33 because his words were spoken with authority. In the Synagogue  
there was a man with the spirit of a foul demon in him, who  
34 called out loudly: "Stop! What do you want with us, Jesus of  
Nazareth? Have you come to destroy us? I know who you are —  
35 the Holy One of God!" But Jesus rebuked the demon. "Be silent!  
Come out from him," he said. The demon flung the man down  
36 in the middle of the people, and then came out from him, with-  
out causing him further harm. And they were all lost in amaze-  
ment, and kept saying to one another: "What words are these?  
37 For he gives his commands to the foul spirits with a marvelous  
authority, and they come out." And rumors about Jesus traveled  
through every place in the neighborhood.

38 On leaving the Synagogue, Jesus went into Simon's house.  
Now Simon's mother-in-law was suffering from a severe attack  
39 of fever, and they asked Jesus to cure her. Bending over her,  
he rebuked the fever; the fever left her, and she immediately

got up and began to take care of them. At sunset, all who had friends suffering from various diseases took them to Jesus; and he placed his hands on everyone of them and cured them. And even demons came out from many people, screaming 'You are the Son of God.' Jesus rebuked them, and would not allow them to speak, because they knew that he was the Christ. 40 41

At daybreak, Jesus went out and walked to a lonely spot. But crowds of people began to look for him; and they came to where he was and tried to detain him and prevent his leaving them. Jesus, however, said to them: "I must take the good news of the kingdom of God to the other town also, for that was why I was sent." And he continued to make his proclamation in the Synagogues of Judea. 42 43 44

Once, when the people were pressing around Jesus as they listened to God's message, he happened to be standing by the shore of the Lake of Gennesaret, and saw two boats close to the shore. The fishermen had gone away from them and were washing the nets. So, getting into one of the boats, which belonged to Simon, Jesus asked him to push off a little way from the shore, and then sat down and taught the people from the boat. When he had finished speaking, he said to Simon: "Push off into deep water, and throw out your nets for a haul." 5 2 3 4

"We have been hard at work all night, Sir," answered Simon, "and have not caught anything, but, at your bidding, I will throw out the nets." They did so, and enclosed such a great shoal of fish that their nets began to break. So they signaled to their partners in the other boat to come and help them; and they came and filled both the boats so full of fish that they were almost sinking. When Simon Peter saw this, he threw himself down at Jesus' knees, exclaiming: "Master, leave me, for I am a sinful man!" For he and all who were with him were lost in amazement at the haul of fish which they had made; and so, too, were James and John, Zebedee's sons, who were Simon's partners. "Do not be afraid," Jesus said to Simon; "from today you will catch people." And, when they had brought their boats to shore, they left everything, and followed him. 5 6 7 8 9 10 11

12 On one occasion Jesus was staying in a town, when he saw a  
man who was covered with leprosy. When the leper saw Jesus,  
he threw himself on his face and implored his help: "Master, if  
13 only you are willing, you are able to make me clean." Stretching  
out his hand, Jesus touched him, saying as he did so: "I am  
willing; become clean."

14 Instantly the leprosy left the man; and then Jesus impressed  
on him that he was not to say a word to anyone, "but," he added,  
"set out and show yourself to the priest, and make the offerings  
15 for your cleansing, in the manner directed by Moses, as evidence  
of your cure." However, the story about Jesus spread all the  
more, and great crowds came together to listen to him, and to  
16 be cured of their illnesses; but Jesus used to withdraw to lonely  
places and pray.

17 On one of those days, when Jesus was teaching, some  
Pharisees and Doctors of the law were sitting near by. (They  
had come from all the villages in Galilee and Judea, and from  
Jerusalem; and the power of the Lord was on Jesus, so that he  
18 could work cures.) And there some men brought on a bed a man  
who was paralyzed. They tried to get him in and lay him before  
Jesus; but, finding no way of getting him in owing to the crowd,  
19 they went up on the roof and lowered him through the tiles,  
with his pallet, into the middle of the people and in front of Je-  
sus. When he saw their faith, Jesus said: "Friend, your sins have  
20 been forgiven you." The teachers of the law and the Pharisees  
began debating about this. "Who is this man who speaks so blas-  
phemously?" they asked. "Who can forgive sins except God?"

22 When Jesus became aware of the way in which they were  
debating, he turned to them and exclaimed: "What are you de-  
23 bating with yourselves? Which is the easier? — to say 'Your sins  
have been forgiven you'? Or to say 'Get up, and walk'? But so  
24 that you may know that the Son of Man has power on earth to  
forgive sins" — he spoke to the paralyzed man — "To you I say,  
Get up, and take up your pallet, and go to your home." Instantly  
25 the man stood up before their eyes, took up what he had been  
lying on, and went to his home, praising God. The people, one  
26 and all, were lost in amazement, and praised God; and in great

awe they said: "We have seen marvelous things today!"

After this, Jesus went out; and he noticed a tax-gatherer, named 27  
Levi, sitting in the tax office, and said to him: "Follow me."  
Levi left everything and got up and followed him. And Levi 28  
gave a great entertainment at his house, in honor of Jesus; and 29  
a large number of tax-gatherers and others were having dinner  
with them.

The Pharisees and the teachers of the law belonging to their 30  
party complained of this to the disciples of Jesus." In answer 31  
Jesus said: "It is not those who are well who need a doctor, but  
those who are ill. I have not come to call the religious, but the 32  
outcast, to repent."

"John's disciples," they said to Jesus, "Often fast and say 33  
prayers, and so do the disciples of the Pharisees, while yours are  
eating and drinking!"

But Jesus answered them: "Can you make the groom's 34  
friends fast while the groom is with them? But the days will 35  
come — a time when the groom will be taken away from them;  
and they will fast then, when those days come." Then, as an il- 36  
lustration, Jesus said to them: "No one ever tears a piece from a  
new garment and puts it on an old one; for, if they do, they will 37  
not only tear the new garment, but the piece from the new one  
will not match the old. And no one puts new wine into old wine- 38  
skins; for, if they do, the new wine will burst the skins, and the  
wine itself will run out, and the skins be lost. But new wine must 39  
be put into fresh skins. No one after drinking old wine wishes  
for new. 'No,' they say, 'the old is excellent.'"

One Sabbath Jesus was walking through cornfields, and his 6  
disciples were picking the ears of wheat, and rubbing them in  
their hands, and eating them. "Why are you doing what it is not 2  
allowable to do on the Sabbath?" asked some of the Pharisees.  
Jesus' answer was: "Have not you read even of what David did, 3  
when he was hungry, he and his companions — That he went 4  
into the house of God, and took the consecrated bread and ate  
it, and gave some to his companions, though only the priests are

5 allowed to eat it?" Then Jesus added: "The Son of Man is lord  
even of the Sabbath."

6 On another Sabbath Jesus went into the Synagogue and  
7 taught; and there was a man there whose right hand was with-  
8 ered. The teachers of the law and the Pharisees watched Jesus  
9 closely, to see if he would work cures on the Sabbath, so that  
10 they might find a charge to bring against him. Jesus, however,  
11 knew what was in the their minds, and said to the man whose  
hand was withered: "Stand up and come out into the middle."  
12 The man stood up; and Jesus said to them: "I ask you, is it allow-  
13 able to do good on the Sabbath — or harm? To save a life, or let  
14 it perish?" Then, looking around at them all, he said to the man:  
15 "Stretch out your hand." The man did so; and his hand had be-  
16 come sound. But the teachers of the law and the Pharisees were  
17 goaded to madness, and consulted together what they could do  
to Jesus.

12 Now about that time, Jesus went out, up the hill, to pray,  
13 and spent the whole night in prayer to God. When day came,  
14 he summoned his disciples, and chose twelve of them, whom  
15 he also named 'apostles.' They were Simon (whom Jesus also  
16 named Peter), and his brother Andrew, James, John, Philip,  
17 Bartholomew, Matthew, Thomas, James son of Alphaeus, Simon  
known as the Zealot, Judas son of James, and Judas Iscariot, who  
proved a traitor. Afterwards Jesus came down the hill with them  
and took his stand on a level place. With him were a large crowd  
of his disciples, and great numbers of people from the whole of  
18 Judea, Jerusalem, and the coast district of Tyre and Sidon, who  
19 had come to hear him and to be restored to health. Those, too,  
20 who were troubled with foul spirits were cured; and everyone  
in the crowd was trying to touch him, because a power went out  
from him which restored them all.

20 Then, raising his eyes and looking at his disciples, Jesus  
said:

"Blessed are you who are poor, for yours is the kingdom  
of God.

21 Blessed are you who hunger now, for you will be satisfied.  
Blessed are you who weep now, for you will laugh.



Blessed are you when people hate you, 22  
and when they expel you from among them,  
and insult you,  
and reject your name as an evil thing —  
because of the Son of Man.

Then indeed you may be glad and dance for joy, for be sure 23  
that your reward in heaven will be great; for that is what their  
ancestors did to the prophets. But 24

‘alas for you who are rich,’  
for you have had your comforts in full.  
Alas for you who are sated now, 25  
for you will hunger.  
Alas for you who laugh now,  
for you will mourn and weep.  
Alas for you when everyone speaks well of you; 26  
for this is what their ancestors did to the false prophets.

But to you who hear I say — love your enemies, show kind- 27  
ness to those who hate you, bless those who curse you, pray for 28  
those who insult you. When someone gives one of you a blow on 29  
the cheek, offer the other cheek as well; and, when anyone takes  
away your cloak, do not keep back your coat either. Give to ev- 30  
eryone who asks of you; and, when anyone takes away what is  
yours, do not demand its return. Do to others as you wish them 31  
to do to you.

If you love only those who love you, what thanks will be due 32  
to you? Why, even the outcast love those who love them! For,  
if you show kindness only to those who show kindness to you, 33  
what thanks will be due to you? Even the outcast do that! If you 34  
lend only to those from whom you expect to get something,  
what thanks will be due to you? Even the outcast lend to the out-

35 cast in the hope of getting as much in return! But love your ene-  
mies, and show them kindness, and lend to them, never despair-  
ing. Then your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the  
Most High, for he is kind to the thankless and the bad.

36 Learn to be merciful — even as your Father is merciful. Do  
37 not judge, and you will not be judged; do not condemn, and you  
will not be condemned. Forgive, and you will be forgiven. Give,  
38 and others will give to you. A generous measure, pressed and  
shaken down, and running over, will they pour into your lap;  
For The standard you use will be the standard used for you.”

39 Then, speaking in parables, Jesus said: “Can one blind person  
40 guide another? Will they not both fall into a ditch? A scholar is  
not above their teacher; yet every finished scholar will be like  
41 their teacher. And why do you look at the speck of sawdust in  
someone’s eye, while you pay no attention at all to the plank of  
42 wood in your own? How can you say to your friend ‘Friend, let  
me take out the speck in your eye,’ while you yourself do not see  
the plank in your own? Hypocrite! Take out the plank from your  
own eye first, and then you will see clearly how to take out the  
43 speck in your friend’s. There is no such thing as a good tree bear-  
ing worthless fruit, or, on the other hand, a worthless tree bear-  
44 ing good fruit. For every tree is known by its own fruit. People  
do not gather figs off thorn bushes, nor pick a bunch of grapes  
45 off a bramble. A good person, from the good stores of their heart,  
brings out what is good; while a bad person, from their bad  
stores, brings out what is bad. For what fills someone’s heart will  
46 rise to their lips. Why do you call me ‘Master! Master!’ and yet  
47 fail to do what I tell you? Everyone who comes to me and listens  
to my teaching and acts on it — I will show you to whom they  
48 may be compared. They may be compared to a person building  
a house, who dug, and went deep, and laid the foundation on  
the rock. Then, when a flood came, the river swept down on that  
house, but had no power to shake it, because it had been built  
49 well. But those who have listened and not acted on what they  
have heard may be compared to a person who built a house on

the ground without any foundation. The river swept down on it, and the house immediately collapsed; and great was the crash that followed."

When Jesus had brought to a conclusion all that he had then had 7  
to say to the people, he entered Capernaum.

A captain in the Roman army had a slave whom he valued, 2  
and who was seriously ill — almost at the point of death. And,  
hearing about Jesus, he sent some Jewish councillors to him, 3  
with the request that he would come and save his slave's life.  
When they found Jesus, they earnestly implored him to do so. 4  
"He deserves the favor from you," they said, "For he is devoted 5  
to our nation, and himself built our Synagogue for us." So Jesus 6  
went with them. But, when he was no great distance from the  
house, the captain sent some friends with the message — "Do  
not trouble yourself, Sir; for I am unworthy to receive you under 7  
my roof. That was why I did not even venture to come to you  
myself; but speak, and let my manservant be cured. For I myself 8  
am a man under the orders of others, with soldiers under me;  
and if I say to one of them 'Go,' he goes, and to another 'Come,'  
he comes, and to my slave 'Do this,' he does it." Jesus was sur- 9  
prised to hear these words from him; and, turning to the crowd  
which was following him, he said: "I tell you, nowhere in Israel  
have I met with such faith as this!" And, when the messengers 10  
returned to the house, they found the slave recovered.

Shortly after, Jesus went to a town called Nain, his disciples 11  
and a great crowd going with him. Just as he approached the  
gate of the town, there was a dead man being carried out for 12  
burial — an only son, and his mother was a widow. A large num-  
ber of the people of the town were with her. When he saw her, 13  
the Master was moved with compassion for her, and he said to  
her: "Do not weep." Then he went up and touched the bier, and 14  
the bearers stopped; and Jesus said: "Young man, I am speaking  
to you — Rise!" The dead man sat up and began to talk, and 15  
Jesus restored him to his mother. Everyone was awe-struck and  
began praising God. "A great prophet has arisen among us," they 16  
said; "and God has visited his people."

17 And this story about Jesus spread all through Judea, and in  
the neighboring countries as well.

18 All these events were reported to John by his disciples. So he  
19 summoned two of them, and sent them to the Master to ask  
— “Are you ‘the coming one,’ or are we to look for some one  
else?”

20 When these men found Jesus, they said: “John the Baptist  
has sent us to you to ask — ‘Are you ‘the coming one,’ or are we  
21 to look for somebody else?’” At that very time Jesus had cured  
many people of diseases, afflictions, and wicked spirits, and  
22 had given many blind people their sight. So his answer to the  
question was: “Go and report to John what you have witnessed  
and heard — the blind recover their sight, the lame walk, the  
lepers are made clean, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised to  
23 life, the good news is told to the poor. And blessed is the person  
who finds no hindrance in me.”

24 When John’s messengers had left, Jesus, speaking to the  
25 crowds, began to say with reference to John: “What did you go  
out into the wilderness to look at? A reed waving in the wind? If  
not, what did you go out to see? A man dressed in rich clothing?  
Why, those who are accustomed to fine clothes and luxury live  
26 in royal palaces. What then did you go to see? A prophet? Yes, I  
27 tell you, and far more than a prophet. This is the man of whom  
scripture says —

‘I am sending my messenger ahead of you,  
and he will prepare your way before you.’

28 There is, I tell you, no one born of a woman who is greater  
than John; and yet the least in the kingdom of God is greater  
than he.”

29 (All the people, when they heard this, and even the tax-gath-  
erers, having accepted John’s baptism, acknowledged the jus-  
30 tice of God. But the Pharisees and the students of the law, hav-  
ing rejected John’s baptism, frustrated God’s purpose in regard  
to them.)

“To what then,” Jesus continued, “should I compare the people of the present generation? What are they like? They are like some little children who are sitting in the marketplace and calling out to one another — ‘We have played the flute for you, but you have not danced; We have wailed, but you have not wept!’ For now that John the Baptist has come, not eating bread or drinking wine, you are saying ‘He has a demon in him’; and now that the Son of Man has come, eating and drinking, you are saying ‘Here is a glutton and a wine-drinker, a friend of tax-gatherers and outcasts.’ And yet wisdom is vindicated by all her children.”

One of the Pharisees asked Jesus to dine with him, so Jesus went to his house and took his place at the table. Just then a woman, who was an outcast in the town, having heard that Jesus was eating in the Pharisee’s house, brought an alabaster jar of perfume, and placed herself behind Jesus, near his feet, weeping. Then she began to make his feet wet with her tears, and she dried them with the hair of her head, repeatedly kissing his feet and anointing them with the perfume.

When the Pharisee who had invited Jesus saw this, he said to himself: “Had this man been ‘The prophet,’ he would have known who, and what sort of woman, this is who is touching him, and that she is an outcast.” But, addressing him, Jesus said: “Simon, I have something to say to you.”

“Pray do so, teacher,” Simon answered; and Jesus began: “There were two people who were in debt to a moneylender; one owed five hundred silver coins, and the other fifty. As they were unable to pay, he forgave them both. Which of them, do you think, will love him the more?”

“I suppose,” answered Simon, “it will be the man to whom he forgave the greater debt.”

“You are right,” said Jesus, and then, turning to the woman, he said to Simon: “Do you see this woman? I came into your house — you gave me no water for my feet, but she has made my feet wet with her tears and dried them with her hair. You did not give me one kiss, but she, from the moment I came in, has not

46 ceased to kiss my feet. You did not anoint even my head with oil,  
47 but she has anointed my feet with perfume. And for this, I tell  
you, her sins, many as they are, have been pardoned, because  
she has loved greatly; but one who has little pardoned him, loves  
48 but little." Then he said to the woman: "Your sins have been pardoned."  
49 The other guests began to say to one another: "Who is  
50 this man who even pardons sins?" But Jesus said to the woman:  
"Your faith has delivered you; go, and peace be with you."

8 Shortly afterwards, Jesus went on a journey through the towns  
and villages, proclaiming the good news of the kingdom of  
2 God. With him went the Twelve, as well as some women who  
had been cured of wicked spirits and of infirmities. They were  
Mary, known as Mary of Magdala (from whom seven demons  
3 had been expelled), and Joanna (the wife of Herod's steward,  
Chuza), and Susannah, and many others — all of whom provided  
for Jesus and his apostles out of their own resources.

4 Once, when a great crowd was collecting, and, when the  
people of town after town were flocking to Jesus, he spoke to  
5 them in the form of a parable: "The sower went out to sow his  
seed; and, as he was sowing, some of the seed fell along the path  
6 and was trodden on; and the wild birds ate it up. Other seed fell  
on rock, and, as soon as it began to grow, having no moisture,  
7 withered away. Other seed fell in the middle of brambles, but the  
8 brambles grew up with it and choked it entirely. Other seed fell  
into rich soil, and grew, and gave a hundredfold return." After  
saying this, Jesus cried aloud: "Let those who have ears to hear  
with hear."

9 His disciples asked Jesus the meaning of this parable. "To  
10 you," he said, "the knowledge of the hidden truths of the kingdom  
of God has been imparted, but to others in parables only, so  
that 'though they have eyes they may not see, and though they  
11 have ears, they may not understand.' This is the parable — The  
seed is God's message. By the seed which fell along the path are  
12 meant those who hear the message; but then comes the devil  
and carries away the message from their minds, to prevent their  
13 believing it and being saved. By the seed which fell on the rock

are meant those who, as soon as they hear the message, welcome it joyfully; but they have no root, and believe it only for a time, and, when the time of temptation comes, they draw back. By that which fell among the brambles are meant those who hear the message, but who, as they go on their way, are completely choked by this world's cares and wealth and pleasures, and bring nothing to perfection. But by that in the good ground are meant those who, having heard the message, keep it in the good, rich soil of their hearts, and patiently yield a return.

No one sets light to a lamp and then covers it with a bowl or puts it underneath a couch, but they put it on a lamp-stand, so that anyone who comes in may see the light. Nothing is hidden which will not be brought into the light of day, not ever kept hidden which will not some day become known and come into the light of day. Take care, then, how you listen. For, to all those who have, more will be given; while, from all those who have nothing, even what they seem to have will be taken away."

Presently Jesus' mother and brothers came where he was, but they were not able to join him because of the crowd. So word was brought to him — 'Your mother and your brothers are standing outside, wanting to see you.' His reply, spoken to them all, was: "My mother and my brothers are those who listen to God's teaching and do what it says."

One day about that time, Jesus got into a boat with his disciples and said to them: "Let us go across the lake." So they put off. While they were sailing, Jesus fell asleep. A squall swept down on the lake, and their boat was filling and they were in danger. So the disciples came and roused him. "Sir, Sir," they cried, "we are lost!" Jesus rose and rebuked the wind and the rushing waves, and they fell, and a calm followed. "Where is your faith?" he exclaimed. But in great awe and amazement they said to one another: "Who can this be, who commands even the winds and the waves, and they obey him?"

And they reached the country of the Gerasenes, which is on the opposite side to Galilee; and, on getting ashore, Jesus met a man, who had demons in him, coming out of the town. For a

28 long time this man had worn no clothing, and he had not lived  
in a house, but in the tombs. Catching sight of Jesus, he shrieked  
out and threw himself down before him, and in a loud voice  
exclaimed: "What do you want with me, Jesus, Son of the Most  
29 High God? I beg you not to torment me." For Jesus was com-  
manding the foul spirit to come out from the man. On many oc-  
casions it had seized him, and, even when secured with chains  
and fetters, and watched, he would break through anything that  
bound him, and be driven by the demon into the Wilds.

30 "What is your name?" Jesus asked.

"Legion," he answered (for many demons had taken pos-  
31 session of him); and the demons begged Jesus not to order them  
away into the bottomless pit. There was a drove of many pigs  
32 close by feeding on the hill-side; and the demons begged Jesus  
to give them leave to enter into them. Jesus gave them leave.  
33 They came out from the man and took possession of the pigs;  
and the drove rushed down the steep slope into the lake and  
34 were drowned. When the men who tended them saw what had  
happened, they ran away, and carried the news to the town,  
35 and to the country around. The people went out to see what had  
happened, and, when they came to Jesus, they found the man  
from whom the demons had gone out, sitting, clothed and in his  
36 right mind, at Jesus' feet; and they were awe-struck. Those who  
had seen it told them how the possessed man had been deliv-  
37 ered. Then all the people in the neighborhood of the Gerasenes  
asked Jesus to leave them, for they were terrified. Jesus got into  
38 a boat and returned. The man from whom the demons had  
gone out begged Jesus to let him be with him; but Jesus sent him  
39 away. "Go back to your home," he said, "and relate the story of  
all that God has done for you." So the man went through the  
whole town and proclaimed, as he went, all that Jesus had done  
for him.

40 On his return, Jesus was welcomed by the people; for everyone  
41 was looking out for him. And a man named Jaeirus, who was  
a President of the Synagogue, came to Jesus, and threw himself  
at Jesus' feet, with entreaties that he would come to his house,



because his only daughter, who was about twelve years old, was dying. As Jesus was going, the people were pressing closely around him. And a woman, who had suffered from hemorrhage for twelve years, and whom no one could cure, came up behind and touched the tassel of his cloak. Instantly the hemorrhage ceased.

“Who touched me?” Jesus asked; and, while everyone was denying having done so, Peter exclaimed: “Why, Sir, the people are crowding around you and pressing against you!”

“Somebody touched me,” said Jesus; “for I felt that power had gone out from me.” Then the woman, when she saw that she was discovered, came forward trembling, and threw herself down before him; and, in the presence of all the people, she told him her reason for touching him, and that she had been cured instantly.

“Daughter,” he said, “your faith has delivered you. Go, and peace be with you.”

Before he had finished speaking, some one came from the house of the President of the Synagogue and said: “Your daughter is dead! Do not trouble the teacher further.” But Jesus, hearing this, spoke to the President: “Do not be afraid; only have faith, and she will yet be delivered.” When he reached the house, he did not allow anyone to go in with him, except Peter, John, and James, and the child’s father and mother. And everyone was weeping and mourning for her.

“Do not weep,” Jesus said, “she is not dead; she is asleep.” They began to laugh at him, for they knew that she was dead. But, taking her by the hand, Jesus said in a loud voice: “Child, rise!” The child’s spirit returned to her, and she instantly stood up; and Jesus ordered them to give her something to eat. Her parents were amazed, but Jesus impressed on them that they were not to tell anyone what had happened.

Jesus called the Twelve together, and gave them power and authority over all demons, as well as to cure diseases. He sent them out as his messengers, to proclaim the kingdom of God, and to work cures. “Do not,” he said to them, “take anything for your

4 journey; not even a staff, or a bag, or bread, or any silver, or a  
5 change of clothes with you. Whatever house you go to stay in, re-  
6 main there, and leave from that place. If people do not welcome  
7 you, as you leave that town, shake even the dust off your feet, as  
8 a protest against them." Then they set out and went from village  
9 to village, telling the good news and curing people everywhere.

7 Prince Herod heard of all that was happening, and was  
8 perplexed, because it was said by some that John must be risen  
9 from the dead. Some again said that Elijah had appeared, and  
10 others that one of the old prophets had risen again. But Herod  
11 himself said: "John I beheaded; but who is this of whom I hear  
12 such things?" And he endeavored to see him.

10 When the apostles returned, they related to Jesus all that they  
11 had done. Then Jesus went privately to a town called Bethsaida,  
12 taking the apostles with him. But the people recognized him and  
13 followed him in crowds; and Jesus welcomed them and spoke to  
14 them about the kingdom of God, while he cured those who were  
15 in need of help. The day was drawing to a close, when the twelve  
16 came up to him, and said: "Send the crowd away, so that they  
17 may make their way to the villages and farms around about, and  
18 find themselves lodgings and provisions, for we are in a lonely  
19 spot here." But Jesus said: "It is for you to give them something  
20 to eat."

"We have not more than five loaves and two fishes," they  
14 answered; "unless indeed we are to go and buy food for all these  
15 people." (For the men among them were about five thousand.)  
16 "Get them seated in companies," was his reply, "about fifty in  
17 each." This they did, and got all the people seated. Taking the  
18 five loaves and the two fishes, Jesus looked up to heaven and  
19 said the blessing over them. Then he broke them in pieces, and  
20 gave them to his disciples to set before the people. Everyone  
had sufficient to eat, and what was left of the broken pieces was  
picked up — twelve baskets.

18 Afterwards, when Jesus was alone, praying, his disciples  
19 joined him, and he asked them this question — "Who do the  
20 people say that I am?"

19 "John the Baptist," was their answer; "others, however, say  
20 that you are Elijah, while others say that one of the old prophets

has risen again."

"But you," he went on, "who do you say that I am?" And to this Peter answered: "The Christ of God." 20

Jesus, however, strictly charged them not to say this to anyone; he told them that the Son of Man must undergo much suffering, and be rejected by the councillors, and chief priests, and teachers of the law, and be put to death, and rise on the third day. And to all present he said: "If any one wishes to walk in my steps, let them renounce self, and take up their cross daily, and follow me. For whoever wishes to save their life will lose it, and whoever, for my sake, loses his life — that person will save it. What good does it do someone if, when they have gained the whole world, they have lost or forfeited themselves? Whoever is ashamed of me and of my teaching, the Son of Man will be ashamed of them, when he comes in his glory and the glory of the father and of the holy angels. Indeed, I tell you, some who are standing before me will not know death, until they have seen the kingdom of God." 21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27

About eight days after speaking these words, Jesus went up the mountain to pray, taking with him Peter, John, and James. As he was praying, the aspect of his face was changed, and his clothing became of a glittering whiteness. And all at once two men were talking with Jesus; they were Moses and Elijah, who appeared in a glorified state, and spoke of his departure, which was destined to take place at Jerusalem. Peter and his companions had been overpowered by sleep but, suddenly becoming wide awake, they saw Jesus glorified and the two men who were standing beside him. 28  
29  
30  
31  
32

And, as Moses and Elijah were passing away from Jesus, Peter exclaimed: "Sir, it is good to be here; let us make three tents, one for you, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah." He did not know what he was saying; and, while he was speaking, a cloud came down and enveloped them; and they were afraid, as they passed into the cloud; and from the cloud came a voice which said — "This is my Son, the Chosen One; him you must hear." And, as the voice ceased, Jesus was found alone. The apostles 33  
34  
35  
36

kept silence, and told no one about any of the things that they had seen.

37 The next day, when they had come down from the mountain, a  
38 great crowd met Jesus. And just then a man in the crowd shout-  
ed out: "Teacher, I entreat you to look at my son, for he is my  
39 only child; all at once a spirit will seize him, suddenly shriek out,  
and throw him into convulsions until he foams, and will leave  
40 him only when he is utterly exhausted. I entreated your disciples  
to drive the spirit out, but they could not."

41 "Faithless and perverse generation!" Jesus exclaimed; "how  
long must I be with you and have patience with you? Lead your  
42 son here." While the boy was coming up to Jesus, the demon  
dashed him down and threw him into convulsions. But Jesus  
rebuked the foul spirit, and cured the boy, and gave him back to  
43 his father. And all present were struck with awe at the majesty  
of God.

44 "Listen carefully to my words. For the Son of Man is destined to  
45 be betrayed into the hands of his fellow men." But the disciples  
did not understand the meaning of this; it had been concealed  
from them so that they did not see it, and they were afraid to  
question him as to what he meant.

46 A discussion arose among the disciples as to which of them  
47 was the greatest; and Jesus, knowing of the discussion that was  
occupying their thoughts, took hold of a little child, and placed  
48 it beside him, and then said to them: "Anyone who, for the sake  
of my name, welcomes even this little child is welcoming me;  
and anyone who welcomes me is welcoming him who sent me  
as his messenger. For whoever is least among you all — that  
person is great."

49 John said: "Sir, we saw a man driving out demons by using  
your name, and we tried to prevent him, because he does not  
follow you with us."

50 "None of you must prevent him," Jesus said to John;  
"whoever's not against you is for you."

*The Journey to Jerusalem*

AS THE DAYS BEFORE HIS BEING TAKEN UP TO HEAVEN WERE GROWING  
few, Jesus set his face resolutely in the direction of Jerusalem;  
and he sent on messengers in advance. On their way, they went  
into a Samaritan village to make preparations for him, but the  
people there did not welcome him, because his face was set in  
the direction of Jerusalem. When James and John saw this, they  
said: "Master, do you wish us to call for fire to come down from  
the heavens and consume them?" But Jesus turned and rebuked  
them. And they made their way to another village.

And, while they were on their way, a man said to Jesus: "I will  
follow you wherever you go."

"Foxes have holes," he replied, "and wild birds their nests,  
but the Son of Man has nowhere to lay his head." To another  
man Jesus said: "Follow me."

"Let me first go and bury my father," said the man. But Jesus  
said: "Leave the dead to bury their dead; but go yourself and  
carry far and wide the news of the kingdom of God."

"Master," said another, "I will follow you; but first let me  
say goodbye to my family." But Jesus answered: "No one who  
looks back, after putting their hand to the plow, is fitted for the  
kingdom of God."

After this, the Master appointed seventy-two other disciples,  
and sent them on as his messengers, two and two, in advance,  
to every town and place that he was himself intending to visit.

"The harvest," he said, "is abundant, but the laborers are  
few. Therefore pray to the owner of the harvest to send laborers  
to gather in his harvest. Now, go. Remember, I am sending you  
out as my messengers like lambs among wolves. Do not take  
a purse with you, or a bag, or sandals; and do not stop to greet  
anyone on your journey. Whatever house you go to stay at, be-  
gin by praying for a blessing on it. Then, if anyone there is de-  
serving of a blessing, your blessing will rest on him; but if not,  
it will come back on yourselves. Remain at that same house, and

eat and drink whatever they offer you; for the worker is worth their wages. Do not keep changing from one house to another. 8 Whatever town you visit, if the people welcome you, eat what 9 is set before you; cure the sick there, and tell people 'The kingdom of God is close at hand. But, whatever town you go to visit, 10 if the people do not welcome you, go out into its streets and say 'We wipe off the dust of your town which has clung to Our 11 feet; still, be assured that the kingdom of God is close at Hand.' I tell you that the doom of Sodom will be more bearable on 'that 12 day' than the doom of that town. Alas for you, Chorazin! Alas for you, Bethsaida! For, if the Miracles which have been done in 13 you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have sat in sackcloth and ashes and repented long ago. Yet the doom of Tyre and Sidon will be more bearable at the judgment than yours. 14 And you, Capernaum! Will you 'exalt yourself to heaven'? 'You will go down to the place of death.' Anyone who listens to you 15 is listening to me, and anyone who rejects you is rejecting me; while the person who rejects me is rejecting him who sent me as his messenger."

17 When the seventy-two returned, they exclaimed joyfully: "Master, even the demons submit to us when we use your name." And Jesus replied: "I have had visions of Satan, fallen, 18 like lightning from the heavens. Remember, I have given you the power to 'trample on snakes and scorpions,' and to meet all the 19 strength of the Enemy. Nothing will ever harm you in any way. Yet do not rejoice in the fact that the spirits submit to you, but 20 rejoice that your names have been enrolled in heaven."

21 At that same time, moved to exultation by the Holy Spirit, Jesus said:

"I thank you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that, though you have hidden these things from the wise and learned, you have revealed them to the childlike! Yes, Father, I thank you that this has seemed good to you.

22 Everything has been committed to me by my Father; nor does anyone know who the Son is, except the Father, or who the

Father is, except the Son and those to whom the Son may choose to reveal him."

Then, turning to his disciples, Jesus said to them alone: "Blessed are the eyes that see what you are seeing; for, I tell you, many prophets and kings wished for the sight of the things which you are seeing, yet never heard them." 23 24

Just then a Student of the law came forward to test Jesus further. "Teacher," he said, "what must I do if I am to 'gain eternal life'?" 25

"What is said in the law?" answered Jesus. "What do you read there?" His reply was — 26 27

"You must love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your strength, and with all your mind; and your neighbor as you love yourself."

"You have answered right," said Jesus; "do that, and you will live." But the man, wanting to justify himself, said to Jesus: "And who is my neighbor?" 28 29

To which Jesus replied: "A man was once going down from Jerusalem to Jericho when he fell into the hands of robbers, who stripped him of everything, and beat him, and went away leaving him half dead. As it chanced, a priest was going down by that road. He saw the man, but passed by on the opposite side. A Levite, too, did the same; he came up to the spot, but, when he saw the man, passed by on the opposite side. But a Samaritan, traveling that way, came upon the man, and, when he saw him, he was moved with compassion. He went to him and bound up his wounds, dressing them with oil and wine, and then put him on his own mule, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. The next day he took out two silver coins and gave them to the innkeeper. 'Take care of him,' he said, 'and whatever more you may spend I will myself repay you on my way back.' Now which, do you think, of these three men," asked Jesus, "proved himself a neighbor to the man who fell into the robbers' hands?" 30 31 32 33 34 35 36

37 “The one that took pity on him,” was the answer; on which  
Jesus said: “Go and do the same yourself.”

38 As they continued their journey, Jesus came to a village, where  
39 a woman named Martha welcomed him to her house. She had  
a sister called Mary, who seated herself at the Master’s feet, and  
40 listened to his teaching; but Martha was distracted by the many  
preparations that she was making. So she went up to Jesus and  
said: “Master, do you approve of my sister’s leaving me to make  
preparations alone? Tell her to help me.”

41 “Martha, Martha,” replied the Master, “you are anxious and  
42 trouble yourself about many things; but only a few are neces-  
sary, or rather one. Mary has chosen the good part, and it will not  
be taken away from her.”

11 One day Jesus was at a certain place praying, and, when he  
had finished, one of his disciples said to him: “Master, teach us  
to pray, as John taught his disciples.”

2 “When you pray,” Jesus answered, “say —

‘Father,

May your name be held holy,  
your kingdom come.

3 Give us each day the bread that we will need;

4 and forgive us our sins,

for we ourselves forgive everyone who wrongs us;  
and take us not into temptation.”

5 Jesus also said to them: “Suppose that one of you who has a  
friend were to go to him in the middle of the night and say  
6 ‘Friend, lend me three loaves, for a friend of mine has arrived at  
my house after a journey, and I have nothing to offer him;’ And  
7 suppose that the other should answer from inside ‘Do not trou-  
ble me; the door is already fastened, and my children and I are in  
8 bed; I cannot get up and give you anything’; I tell you that, even  
though he will not get up and give him anything because he is  
a friend, yet because of his persistence he will rouse himself and  
give him what he wants.



And so I say to you — Ask, and your prayer will be granted: 9  
search, and you will find; knock, and the door will be opened to 10  
you. For the person who asks receives, everyone who searches 11  
finds, and to the person who knocks the door will be opened. 12  
What father among you, if his son asks him for a fish, will give 13  
him a snake instead, or, if he asks for an egg, will give him a  
scorpion? If you, then, naturally wicked though you are, know  
how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will the  
Father in heaven give the Holy Spirit to those who ask him!"

Once Jesus was driving out a dumb demon, and, when the de- 14  
mon had gone out, the dumb man spoke. The people were 15  
amazed at this; but some of them said: "He drives out demons 16  
by the help of Beelzebul, the chief of the demons"; while others, 17  
to test him, asked him for some sign from the heavens. Jesus 18  
himself, however, was aware of what they were thinking, and 19  
said to them: "Any kingdom wholly divided against itself be- 20  
comes a desolation; and a divided house falls. So, too, if Satan is 21  
wholly divided against himself, how can his kingdom last? Yet 22  
you say that I drive out demons by the help of Beelzebul. But, 23  
if it is by Beelzebul's help that I drive out demons, by whose 24  
help is it that your own sons drive them out? Therefore they will 25  
themselves be your judges. But, if it is by the hand of God that 26  
I drive out demons, then the kingdom of God must already be 27  
upon you. When a strong man is keeping guard, fully armed,  
over his own mansion, his property is in safety; but, when one  
still stronger has attacked and overpowered him, he takes away  
all the weapons on which the other had relied, and divides his  
spoil. Whoever who is not with me is against me, and the person  
who does not help me to gather is scattering. No sooner does a  
foul spirit leave someone, than it passes through places where  
there is no water, in search of rest; and finding none, it says 'I will  
go back to the home which I left'; but, on coming there, it finds  
it unoccupied, swept, and put in order. Then it goes and brings  
with it seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go  
in, and make their home there; and the last state of that person  
proves to be worse than the first." As Jesus was saying this, a

28 woman in the crowd, raising her voice, exclaimed: "Happy was the mother who bore you and nursed you!" But Jesus replied: "Rather, happy are those who listen to God's message and keep it."

29 As the crowds increased, Jesus began to speak: "This generation is a wicked generation. It is asking a sign, but no sign will be given it except the sign of Jonah. For, as Jonah became a sign to the people of Nineveh, so will the Son of Man be to this generation. At the judgment the Queen of the South will rise up with the people of this generation, and will condemn them, because she came from the ends of the earth to listen to the wisdom of Solomon; and here is more than a Solomon! At the judgment the men of Nineveh will stand up with this generation, and will condemn it, because they repented at Jonah's proclamation; and here is more than a Jonah! No one sets light to a lamp, and then puts it in the cellar or under a basket, but he puts it on the lamp-stand, so that anyone who comes in may see the light. The lamp of the body is your eye. When your eye is unclouded, your whole body, also, is lit up; but, as soon as your eye is diseased, your body, also, is darkened. Take care, therefore, that the inner light is not darkness. If, then, your whole body is lit up, and no corner of it darkened, the whole will be lit up, just as when a lamp gives you light by its brilliance."

37 As Jesus finished speaking, a Pharisee asked him to breakfast with him, and Jesus went in and took his place at the table. The Pharisee noticed, to his astonishment, that Jesus omitted the ceremonial washing before breakfast. But the Master said to him: "You Pharisees do, it is true, clean the outside of the cup and of the plate, but inside you yourselves are filled with greed and wickedness. Fools! Did not the maker of the outside make the inside too? Only give away what is in them in charity, and at once you have the whole clean. But alas for you Pharisees! You pay tithes on mint, rue, and herbs of all kinds, and pass over justice and love to God. These last you ought to have put into practice without neglecting the first. Alas for you Pharisees! You delight

to have the front seat in the Synagogues, and to be greeted in the markets with respect. Alas for you! You are like unsuspected graves, over which men walk unawares." 44

Here one of the students of the law interrupted him by saying: "Teacher, when you say this, you are insulting us also." But Jesus went on: "Alas for you, too, you students of the law! You load people with loads that are too heavy to carry, but do not, yourselves, touch them with one of your fingers. Alas for you! You build the monuments of the prophets whom your ancestors killed. You are actually witnesses to your ancestors' acts and show your approval of them, because, while they killed the prophets, you build tombs for them. That is why the wisdom of God said — "I will send to them prophets and apostles, some of whom they will persecute and kill, in order that the 'blood' of all the prophets 'that has been spilt' since the creation of the world may be exacted from this generation — From the blood of Abel down to the blood of Zechariah, who was slain between the altar and the house of God." Yes, I tell you, it will be exacted from this generation. Alas for you students of the law! You have taken away the key of the door of knowledge. You have not gone in yourselves and you have hindered those who try to go in." 45  
46  
47  
48  
49  
50  
51  
52

When Jesus left the house, the teachers of the law and the Pharisees began to press him hard and question him closely on many subjects, laying traps for him, so as to seize on anything that he might say. 53  
54

Meanwhile the people had gathered in thousands, so that they trod on one another, when Jesus, addressing himself to his disciples, began by saying to them: "Be on your guard against the leaven — that is, the hypocrisy — of the Pharisees. There is nothing, however covered up, which will not be uncovered, nor anything kept secret which will not become known. So all that you have said in the dark will be heard in the light, and what you have spoken in the ear, within closed doors, will be proclaimed on the housetops. To you who are my friends I say, Do not be afraid of those who kill the body, but after that can do no more. I will show you of whom you should be afraid. Be afraid of him 12  
2  
3  
4  
5

6 who, after killing you, has the power to fling you into Gehenna.  
7 Yes, I say, be afraid of him. Are not five sparrows sold for two  
8 copper coins? Yet not one of them has escaped God's notice. No,  
9 even the hairs of your head are all numbered. Do not be afraid;  
10 you are of more value than many sparrows. Everyone, I tell you,  
11 who publicly acknowledges me, the Son of Man, also, will ac-  
12 knowledge before God's angels; but the person who publicly  
13 disowns me will be altogether disowned before God's angels.  
14 Everyone who will say anything against the Son of Man will be  
15 forgiven, but for the person who slanders the Holy Spirit there  
16 will be no forgiveness. Whenever they take you before the Syn-  
17 agogue Courts or the magistrates or other authorities, do not be  
18 anxious as to how you will defend yourselves, or what your de-  
19 fense will be, or what you will say; for the Holy Spirit will show  
20 you at the moment what you ought to say."

21 "Teacher," a man in the crowd said to Jesus, "tell my broth-  
22 er to share the property with me." But Jesus said to him: "Man,  
23 who made me a judge or an arbiter between you?" And then  
24 he added: "Take care to keep yourselves free from every form  
of covetousness; for even in the height of their prosperity a per-  
son's true life does not depend on what they have."

25 Then Jesus told them this parable — "There was once a rich  
26 man whose land was very fertile; and he began to ask himself  
27 'What will I do, for I have nowhere to store my crops? This is  
28 what I will do,' he said; 'I will pull down my barns and build  
29 larger ones, and store all my grain and my goods in them; and I  
30 will say to myself, Now you have plenty of good things put by  
31 for many years; take your ease, eat, drink, and enjoy yourself.'  
32 But God said to the man 'Fool! This very night your life is being  
33 demanded; and as for all you have prepared — who will have  
34 it?' So it is with those who lay by wealth for themselves and are  
not rich to the glory of God."

35 And Jesus said to his disciples: "That is why I say to you,  
36 Do not be anxious about the life here — what you can get to  
37 eat; nor yet about your body — what you can get to wear. For  
38 life is more than food, and the body than its clothes. Think of  
39 the ravens — they neither sow nor reap; they have neither store-  
40 house nor barn; and yet God feeds them! And how much more

precious are you than birds! But which of you, by being anxious, 25  
can prolong your life a moment? And, if you cannot do even the 26  
smallest thing, why be anxious about other things? Think of the 27  
lilies, and how they grow. They neither toil nor spin; yet, I tell  
you, even Solomon in all his splendor was not robed like one 28  
of these. If, even in the field, God so clothes the grass which is  
living today and tomorrow will be thrown into the oven, how 29  
much more will he clothe you, you of little faith! And you — do  
not be always seeking what you can get to eat or what you can 30  
get to drink; and do not waver. These are the things for which all  
the nations of the world are seeking, and your Father knows that 31  
you need them. No, seek his kingdom, and these things will be 32  
added for you. So do not be afraid, my little flock, for your Father  
has been pleased to give you the kingdom.

Sell what belongs to you, and give in charity. Make your- 33  
selves purses that will not wear out — an inexhaustible trea-  
sure in heaven, where no thief comes near, or moth works ruin.  
For where your treasure is, there also will your heart be. Make 34  
yourselves ready, with your lamps alight; and be like servants 35  
who are waiting for their Master's return from his wedding, so 36  
that, when he comes and knocks, they may open the door for  
him at once. Happy are those servants whom, on his return, the 37  
Master will find watching. I tell you that he will make himself  
ready, and have them take their places at the table, and will come  
and serve them. Whether it is late at night, or in the early morn- 38  
ing that he comes, if he finds all as it should be, then happy are  
they. This you do know, that, had the owner of the house known 39  
at what time the thief was coming, he would have been on the  
watch, and would not have let his house be broken into. You 40  
must also prepare, for when you are least expecting him the Son  
of Man will come."

"Master," said Peter, "are you telling this parable with 41  
reference to us or to everyone?"

"Who, then," replied the Master, "is that trustworthy stew- 42  
ard, the careful man, who will be placed by his master over his  
establishment, to give them their rations at the proper time?  
Happy will that servant be whom his master, when he comes 43

44 home, will find doing this. His master, I tell you, will put him in  
45 charge of the whole of his property. But should that servant say  
to himself 'My master is a long time coming,' and begin to beat  
46 the menservants and the maidservants, and to eat and drink  
and get drunk, that servant's master will come on a day when  
he does not expect him, and at an hour of which he is unaware,  
47 and will flog him severely and assign him his place among the  
untrustworthy. The servant who knows his master's wishes and  
yet does not prepare and act accordingly will receive many lash-  
48 es; while one who does not know his master's wishes, but acts  
so as to deserve a flogging, will receive but few. From everyone  
to whom much has been given much will be expected, and from  
the man to whom much has been entrusted the more will be  
49 demanded. I came to cast fire on the earth; and what more can I  
50 wish, if it is already kindled? There is a baptism that I must un-  
51 dergo, and how great is my distress until it is over! Do you think  
that I am here to give peace on earth? No, I tell you, but to cause  
52 division. For from this time, if there are five people in a house,  
they will be divided, three against two, and two against three.

53 'Father will be opposed to son and son to father, moth-  
er to daughter and daughter to mother, mother-in-law to her  
daughter-in-law and daughter-in-law to her mother-in-law.'"

54 And to the people Jesus said: "When you see a cloud rising in  
the west, you say at once 'There is a storm coming,' and come  
55 it does. And when you see that the wind is in the south, you say  
56 'It will be burning hot,' and so it proves. Hypocrites! You know  
how to judge of the earth and the sky; how is it, then, that you  
57 cannot judge of this time? Why do not you yourselves decide  
what is right? When, for instance, you are going with your oppo-  
58 nent before a magistrate, on your way to the court do your best  
to be quit of him; otherwise he might drag you before the judge,  
then the judge will hand you over to the bailiff of the court, and  
59 the bailiff throw you into prison. You will not, I tell you, come  
out until you have paid the very last cent."

Just at that time some people had come to tell Jesus about the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with the blood of their sacrifices. "Do you suppose," replied Jesus, "that, because these Galileans have suffered in this way, they were worse sinners than any other Galileans? No, I tell you; but, unless you repent, you will all perish as they did. Or those eighteen men at Siloam on whom the tower fell, killing them all, do you suppose that they were worse offenders than any other inhabitants of Jerusalem? No, I tell you; but, unless you repent, you will all perish in the same manner."

And Jesus told them this parable — "A man, who had a fig tree growing in his vineyard, came to look for fruit on it, but could not find any. So he said to his gardener 'Three years now I have come to look for fruit on this fig tree, without finding any! Cut it down. Why should it rob the soil?' 'Leave it this one year more, Sir,' the man answered, 'until I have dug around it and manured it. Then, if it bears in future, well and good; but if not, you can have it cut down.'"

Jesus was teaching on a Sabbath in one of the Synagogues, and he saw before him a woman who for eighteen years had suffered from weakness owing to her having an evil spirit in her. She was bent double, and was wholly unable to raise herself. When Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said: "Woman, you are released from your weakness." He placed his hands on her, and she was instantly made straight, and began to praise God. But the President of the Synagogue, indignant that Jesus had worked the cure on the Sabbath, intervened and said to the people: "There are six days on which work ought to be done; come to be cured on one of those, and not on the Sabbath."

"You hypocrites!" the Master answered him. "Does not everyone of you let your ox or your ass loose from its manger, and take it out to drink, on the Sabbath? But this woman, a daughter of Abraham, who has been kept in bondage by Satan for now eighteen years, ought not she to have been released from her bondage on the Sabbath?" As he said this, his opponents all felt ashamed; but all the people rejoiced to see all the wonderful

things that he was doing.

18 So Jesus said: "What is the kingdom of God like? And to  
19 what can I liken it? It is like a mustard seed which a man took  
20 and put in his garden. The seed grew and became a tree, and  
21 'the wild birds roosted in its branches.'" And again Jesus said:  
22 "To what can I liken the kingdom of God? It is like some yeast  
23 which a woman took and covered in three pecks of flour, until  
24 the whole had risen."

25 Jesus went through towns and villages, teaching as he went,  
26 and making his way towards Jerusalem. "Master," some one  
27 asked, "are there but few in the path of salvation?" And Jesus  
28 answered: "Strive to go in by the small door. Many, I tell you, will  
29 seek to go in, but they will not be able, when once the master of  
30 the house has got up and shut the door, while you begin to say,  
31 as you stand outside and knock, 'Sir, open the door for us.' His  
32 answer will be — 'I do not know where you come from.' Then  
33 you will begin to say 'We have eaten and drunk in your pres-  
34 ence, and you have taught in our streets,' and his reply will be  
35 — 'I do not know where you come from. Leave my presence, all  
36 you who are living in wickedness.' There, there will be weeping  
37 and grinding of teeth, when you see Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob,  
38 and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, while you your-  
39 selves are being driven outside. People will come from East and  
40 West, and from North and South, and take their places at the  
41 banquet in the kingdom of God. there are some who are last now  
42 who will then be first, and some who are first now who will then  
43 be last!"

44 Just then some Pharisees came up to Jesus and said: "Go  
45 away and leave this place, for Herod wants to kill you." But Je-  
46 sus answered: "Go and say to that fox 'Look you, I am driving  
47 out demons and will be completing cures today and tomorrow,  
48 and on the third day I will have done.' But today and tomorrow  
49 and the day after I must go on my way, because it cannot be that  
50 a prophet should meet his end outside Jerusalem. Jerusalem!  
51 Jerusalem! You who slays the prophets and stones the messen-  
52 gers sent to you — Oh, how often have I wished to gather your  
53 children around me, as a hen takes her brood under her wings,  
54 and you would not come! Verily your house is left to you deso-



late! And never, I tell you, will you see me, until you say —

‘Blessed is He who comes in the name of the Lord.’”

On one occasion, as Jesus was going, on a Sabbath into the house 14  
of one of the leading Pharisees to dine, they were watching him  
closely. There he saw before him a man who was suffering from 2  
dropsy. “Is it allowable,” said Jesus, addressing the students of 3  
the law and the Pharisees, “to work a cure on the Sabbath, or is  
it not?” They remained silent. Jesus took hold of the man and 4  
cured him, and sent him away. And he said to them: “Which of 5  
you, finding that your son or your ox has fallen into a well, will  
not immediately pull them out on the Sabbath day?” And they 6  
could not make any answer to that.

Observing that the guests were choosing the best places for 7  
themselves, Jesus told them this parable — “When you are invit- 8  
ed by anyone to a wedding banquet, do not seat yourself in the  
best place. Someone of higher rank might have been invited by  
your host; and the host who invited you both will come and say 9  
to you ‘Make room for this person,’ and then you will begin in  
confusion to take the lowest place. No, when you are invited, go 10  
and take the lowest place, so that, when the host who has invit-  
ed you comes, he may say to you ‘Friend, come higher up’; and  
then you will be honored in the eyes of all your fellow guests.  
For everyone who exalts themselves will be humbled, and ev- 11  
eryone who humbles themselves will be exalted.”

Then Jesus went on to say to the man who had invited him: 12  
“When you give a breakfast or a dinner, do not ask your friends,  
or your brothers or sisters, or your relations, or rich neighbors,  
because they might invite you in return, and so you should be 13  
repaid. No, when you entertain, invite the poor, the crippled, the  
lame, the blind; and then you will be happy indeed, since they 14  
cannot reward you; for you will be rewarded at the resurrection  
of the good.”

One of the guests heard what he said and exclaimed: “Happy 15  
will be the person who will eat bread in the kingdom of God!”

16 But Jesus said to him: "A man was once giving a great dinner.  
17 He invited many people, and sent his servant, when it was time  
18 for the dinner, to say to those who had been invited 'Come, for  
everything is now ready.' They all with one accord began to ask  
to be excused. The first said to the servant 'I have bought a field  
and am obliged to go and look at it. I must ask you to consider  
19 me excused.' The next said 'I have bought five pairs of bullocks,  
and I am on my way to try them. I must ask you to consider me  
20 excused'; while the next said 'I am just married, and for that  
21 reason I am unable to come.' On his return the servant told his  
master all these answers. Then in anger the owner of the house  
said to his servant 'Go out at once into the streets and alleys of  
the town, and bring in here the poor, and the crippled, and the  
22 blind, and the lame.' Presently the servant said 'Sir, your order  
23 has been carried out, and still there is room.' 'Go out,' the master  
said, 'into the roads and hedgerows, and make people come in,  
24 so that my house may be filled; for I tell you all that not one of  
those people who were invited will taste my dinner.'"

25 One day, when great crowds of people were walking with  
26 Jesus, he turned and said to them: "If any one comes to me and  
does not hate their father, and mother, and wife, and children,  
and brothers, and sisters, yes and even their life, he can be no dis-  
27 ciple of mine. Whoever does not carry their own cross, and walk  
28 in my steps, can be no disciple of mine. Why, which of you, when  
you want to build a tower, does not first sit down and reckon  
the cost, to see if you have enough to complete it? — Otherwise,  
29 if you have laid the foundation and are not able to finish it, ev-  
30 eryone who sees it will laugh at you, and say 'Here is a person  
31 who began to build and was not able to finish!' Or what king,  
when he is setting out to fight another king, does not first sit  
down and consider if with ten thousand men he is able to meet  
32 one who is coming against him with twenty thousand? And if  
he cannot, then, while the other is still at a distance, he sends en-  
33 voys and asks for terms of peace. And so with everyone of you  
who does not bid farewell to all you have — you cannot be a dis-  
34 ciple of mine. Yes, salt is good; but, if the salt itself should lose  
35 its strength, what will be used to season it? It is not fit either for  
the land or for the manure heap. People throw it away. Let those

who have ears to hear with hear!"

The tax-gatherers and the outcasts were all drawing near to 15  
Jesus to listen to him; but the Pharisees and the teachers of the 2  
law found fault.

"This man always welcomes outcasts, and takes meals with  
them!" they complained.

So Jesus told them this parable — "Who among you who has 3  
a hundred sheep, and has lost one of them, does not leave the 4  
ninety-nine out in the open country, and go after the lost sheep 5  
until he finds it? And, when he has found it, he puts in on his 6  
shoulders rejoicing; and, on reaching home, he calls his friends 7  
and his neighbors together, and says 'Come and rejoice with me,  
for I have found my sheep which was lost.' So, I tell you, there 8  
will be more rejoicing in heaven over one outcast who repents,  
than over ninety-nine religious people, who have no need to 9  
repent. Or again, what woman who has ten silver coins, if she 10  
loses one of them, does not light a lamp, and sweep the house,  
and search carefully until she finds it? And, when she has found 11  
it, she calls her friends and neighbors together, and says 'Come  
and rejoice with me, for I have found the coin which I lost.' So,  
I tell you, there is rejoicing in the presence of God's angels over 12  
one outcast who repents."

Then Jesus continued: "A man had two sons; and the 11  
younger of them said to his father 'Father, give me my share 12  
of the inheritance.' So the father divided the property between 13  
them. A few days later the younger son got together all that he 14  
had, and went away into a distant land; and there he squandered 15  
his inheritance by leading a dissolute life. After he has spent 16  
all that he had, there was a severe famine through all that  
country, and he began to be in actual want. So he went and 17  
engaged himself to one of the people of that country, who sent him  
into his fields to tend pigs. He even longed to satisfy his hunger 18  
with the bean-pods on which the pigs were feeding; and no one  
gave him anything. But, when he came to himself, he said 'How  
many of my father's hired servants have more bread than they  
can eat, while here am I starving to death! I will get up and go

19 to my father, and say to him "Father, I sinned against heaven  
20 and against you; I am no longer fit to be called your son; make  
me one of your hired servants.'" And he got up and went to his  
father. But, while he was still a long way off, his father saw him  
and was deeply moved; he ran and threw his arms around his  
21 neck and kissed him. 'Father,' the son said, 'I sinned against  
heaven and against you; I am no longer fit to be called your son;  
22 make me one of your hired servants.' But the father turned to his  
servants and said 'Be quick and fetch a robe — the very best —  
and put it on him; give him a ring for his finger and sandals for  
23 his feet; and bring the fattened calf and kill it, and let us eat and  
24 make merry; for here is my son who was dead, and is alive again,  
was lost, and is found.' So they began making merry. Meanwhile  
25 the elder son was out in the fields; but, on coming home, when  
26 he got near the house, he heard music and dancing, and he called  
27 one of the servants and asked what it all meant. 'Your brother  
has come back,' the servant told him, 'and your father has killed  
28 the fattened calf, because he has him back safe and sound.' This  
made him angry, and he would not go in. But his father came out  
29 and begged him to do so. 'No,' he said to his father, 'look at all  
the years I have been serving you, without ever once disobeying  
you, and yet you have never given me even a young goat, so that  
30 I might have a merrymaking with my friends. But, no sooner has  
this son of yours come, who has eaten up your property in the  
company of prostitutes, than you have killed the fattened calf for  
31 him.' 'Child,' the father answered, 'you are always with me, and  
32 everything that I have is yours. We could but make merry and  
rejoice, for here is your brother who was dead, and is alive; who  
was lost, and is found.'"

16 Jesus said to his disciples: "There was a rich man who had  
a steward; and this steward was maliciously accused to him of  
2 wasting his estate. So the master called him and said 'What is  
this that I hear about you? Give in your accounts, for you cannot  
3 act as steward any longer.' 'What am I to do,' the steward asked  
himself, 'now that my master is taking the steward's place away  
from me? I have not strength to dig, and I am ashamed to beg. I  
4 know what I will do, so that, as soon as I am turned out of my  
5 stewardship, people may welcome me into their homes.' One by

one he called up his master's debtors. 'How much do you owe my master?' he asked of the first. 'Four hundred and forty gallons of oil,' answered the man. 'Here is your agreement,' he said; 'sit down at once and make it two hundred and twenty.' And you, the steward said to the next, 'how much do you owe?' 'Seventy quarters of wheat,' he replied. 'Here is your agreement,' the steward said; 'make it fifty-six.' His master complimented this dishonest steward on the shrewdness of his action. And indeed men of the world are shrewder in dealing with their fellow men than those who have the light. And I say to you 'Win friends for yourselves with your dishonest money,' so that, when it comes to an end, there may be a welcome for you into the Eternal Home. The person who is trustworthy in the smallest matter is trustworthy in a great one also; and the person who is dishonest in the smallest matter is dishonest in a great one also. So, if you have proved untrustworthy with the 'dishonest money,' who will trust you with the true? And, if you have proved untrustworthy with what does not belong to us, who will give you what is really our own? No servant can serve two masters, for, either they will hate one and love the other, or else they will attach themselves to one and despise the other. You cannot serve both God and Money."

All this was said within hearing of the Pharisees, who were lovers of money, and they began to sneer at Jesus.

"You," said Jesus, "are the ones who justify themselves before the world, but God can read your hearts; and what is highly esteemed among people may be an abomination in the sight of God. The law and the prophets sufficed until the time of John. Since then the good news of the kingdom of God has been told, and everybody has been forcing their way into it. It would be easier for the heavens and the earth to disappear than for one stroke of a letter in the law to be lost. Everyone who divorces his wife and marries another woman is an adulterer, and the man who marries a divorced woman is an adulterer. There was once a rich man, who dressed in purple robes and fine linen, and feasted every day in great splendor. Near his gateway there had been laid a beggar named Lazarus, who was covered with

21 sores, and who longed to satisfy his hunger with what fell from  
the rich man's table. Even the dogs came and licked his sores.  
22 After a time the beggar died, and was taken by the angels to be  
23 with Abraham. The rich man also died and was buried. In the  
place of death he looked up in his torment, and saw Abraham  
24 at a distance and Lazarus at his side. So he called out 'Pity me,  
Father Abraham, and send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger  
in water and cool my tongue, for I am suffering agony in this  
25 flame.' 'Child,' answered Abraham, 'remember that you in your  
lifetime received what you thought desirable, just as Lazarus  
received what was not desirable; but now he has his consol-  
26 ation here, while you are suffering agony. And not only that, but  
between you and us there lies a great chasm, so that those who  
wish to pass from here to you cannot, nor can they cross from  
27 there to us.' 'Then, Father,' he said, 'I beg you to send Lazarus to  
my father's house — For I have five brothers to warn them, so  
28 that they may not come to this place of torture also.' 'They have  
the writings of Moses and the prophets,' replied Abraham; 'let  
29 them listen to them.' 'But, Father Abraham,' he urged, 'if some  
one from the dead were to go to them, they would repent.' 'If  
30 they do not listen to Moses and the prophets,' answered Abra-  
ham, 'they will not be persuaded, even if some one were to rise  
31 from the dead.'"

17 Jesus said to his disciples: "It is inevitable that there should be  
temptations but sorrow awaits the person who does the tempt-  
2 ing! It would be good for them if they had been flung into the sea  
with a millstone around their neck, rather than that they should  
3 prove a trap even one of these little ones. Be on your guard! If  
your brother or sister does wrong, rebuke them; but if they re-  
4 pent, forgive them. Even if they wrong you seven times a day,  
but turns to you every time and says 'I am sorry,' you must for-  
give them."

5 "Give us more faith," said the apostles to the Master; but the  
6 Master said: "If your faith were only like a mustard seed, you  
could say to this mulberry tree 'Be uprooted and planted in the  
7 sea,' and it would obey you. Which of you, if he had a servant

ploughing, or tending the sheep, would say to him, when he came in from the fields, 'Come at once and take your place at the table,' Instead of saying 'Prepare my dinner, and then make yourself ready and serve me while I am eating and drinking, and after that you will eat and drink yourself'? Does he feel grateful to his servant for doing what he is told? And so with you — when you have done all that you have been told, still say 'We are but useless servants; we have done no more than we ought to have done.'"

On the way to Jerusalem Jesus passed between Samaria and Galilee. As he was entering a village, ten lepers met him. Standing still, some distance off, they called out loudly: "Jesus! Sir! Pity us!" When Jesus saw them, he said: "Go and show yourselves to the priest." And, as they were on their way, they were made clean. One of them, finding he was cured, came back, praising God loudly, and threw himself on his face at Jesus' feet, thanking him for what he had done; and this man was a Samaritan. "Were not all the ten made clean? exclaimed Jesus. But the nine — where are they? Were there none to come back and praise God except this foreigner? Get up," he said to him, "and go on your way. Your faith has delivered you."

Being once asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God was to come, Jesus answered: "The kingdom of God does not come in a way that can be seen, nor will people say 'Look, here it is!' or 'There it is!'; for the kingdom of God is within you! The day will come," he said to his disciples, "when you will long to see but one of the days of the Son of Man, and will not see it. People will say to you 'There he is! Or 'Here he is!' Do not go and follow them. For, just as lightning will lighten and flare from one side of the heavens to the other, so will it be with the Son of Man. But first he must undergo much suffering, and he must be rejected by the present generation. As it was in the days of Noah, so will it be again in the days of the Son of Man. They were eating and drinking and marrying and being married, up to the very day on which Noah entered the ark, and then the flood came

28 and destroyed them all. So, too, in the days of Lot. People were  
 29 eating, drinking, buying, selling, planting, building; but, on the  
 30 very day on which Lot came out of Sodom, it rained fire and sul-  
 31 phur from the skies and destroyed them all. It will be the same  
 32 on the day on which the Son of Man reveals himself. On that day,  
 33 if a person is on their house-top and their goods in the house,  
 34 they must not go down to get them; nor again must one who is  
 35 on the farm turn back. Remember Lot's wife. Whoever is eager  
 36 to get the most out of their life will lose it; but whoever will lose  
 37 it will preserve it. On that night, I tell you, of two people on the  
 same bed, one will be taken and the other left; of two women  
 grinding grain together, one will be taken and the other left."

"Where will it be, Master?" asked the disciples. "Where there  
 is a body," said Jesus, "there will the vultures flock."

18 Jesus told his disciples a parable to show them that they should  
 2 always pray and never despair. "There was," he said, "in a cer-  
 3 tain town a judge, who had no fear of God nor regard for peo-  
 4 ple. In the same town there was a widow who went to him again  
 5 and again, and said 'Grant me justice against my opponent.' For  
 6 a time the judge refused, but afterwards he said to himself 'Al-  
 7 though I am without fear of God or regard for people, yet, as this  
 8 widow is so troublesome, I will grant her justice, to stop her from  
 9 plaguing me with her endless visits.'" Then the Master added:  
 10 "Listen to what this iniquitous judge says! And God — will not  
 11 he see that his own people, who cry to him night and day, have  
 12 justice done them — though he holds his hand? He will, I tell  
 you, give them justice soon enough! Yet, when the Son of Man  
 comes, will he find faith on earth?"

9 Another time, speaking to people who were satisfied that they  
 10 were religious, and who regarded everyone else with scorn,  
 11 Jesus told this parable — "Two men went up into the Temple  
 12 Courts to pray. One was a Pharisee and the other a tax-gatherer.  
 The Pharisee stood forward and began praying to himself in this  
 way — 'God, I thank you that I am not like other men — thieves,  
 rogues, adulterers — or even like this tax-gatherer. I fast twice



a week, and give a tenth of everything I get to God.’ Meanwhile the tax-gatherer stood at a distance, not venturing even ‘to raise his eyes to heaven’; but he kept striking his breast and saying ‘God, have mercy on me, a sinner.’ This man, I tell you, went home pardoned, rather than the other; for everyone who exalts himself will be humbled, while everyone who humbles himself will be exalted.” 13 14

Some of the people were bringing even their babies to Jesus, for him to touch them; but, when the disciples saw it, they began to find fault with those who had brought them. Jesus, however, called the little children to him. “Let the little children come to me,” he said, “and do not hinder them; for it is to the child-like that the kingdom of God belongs. I tell you, unless a man receives the kingdom of God like a child, he will not enter it at all.” 15 16 17

And one of the Presidents asked Jesus this question — “Good teacher, what must I do if I am to gain eternal life?” 18

“Why do you call me good?” answered Jesus. “No one is good but God. You know the commandments — ‘Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not say what is false about others, Honor your father and your mother.’” 19 20

“I have observed all these,” he replied, “from childhood.” Hearing this, Jesus said to him: “There is one thing still lacking in you; sell everything that you have, and distribute to the poor, and you will have wealth in heaven; then come and follow me.” But the man became greatly distressed on hearing this, for he was extremely rich. Seeing this, Jesus said to his disciples: “How hard it is for the wealthy to enter the kingdom of God! It is easier, indeed, for a camel to get through a needle’s eye than for a rich person to enter the kingdom of God!” 21 22 23 24 25

“Then who can be saved?” asked those who heard this. But Jesus said: “What is impossible with people is possible with God.” 26 27

“But we,” said Peter, “we left what belonged to us and followed you.” 28

29 "I tell you," he answered, "that there is no one who has left  
house, or wife, or brothers, or parents, or children, for the sake of  
30 the kingdom of God, who will not receive many times as much  
in the present, and in the age that is coming eternal life."

31 Gathering the Twelve around him, Jesus said to them: "Listen!  
We are going up to Jerusalem; and there everything that is writ-  
32 ten in the prophets will be done to the Son of Man. For he will  
be given up to the Gentiles, mocked, insulted and spat on; they  
33 will scourge him, and then put him to death; and on the third  
34 day he will rise again." The apostles did not comprehend any of  
this; his meaning was unintelligible to them, and they did not  
understand what he was saying.

35 As Jesus was getting near Jericho, a blind man was sitting by  
the roadside, begging. Hearing a crowd going by, the man asked  
36 what was the matter; and, when people told him that Jesus of  
37 Nazareth was passing, he shouted out: "Jesus, Son of David,  
38 take pity on me!" Those who were in front kept telling him to  
39 be quiet, but he continued to call out the louder: "Son of David,  
40 take pity on me!" Then Jesus stopped and ordered the man to be  
brought to him. And, when he had come close up to him, Jesus  
41 asked him: "What do you want me to do for you?"

42 "Master," he said, "I want to recover my sight." And Jesus  
said: "Recover your sight, your faith has delivered you." Instant-  
43 ly he recovered his sight, and began to follow Jesus, praising  
God. And all the people, on seeing it, gave glory to God.

19 Jesus entered Jericho and made his way through the town. There  
2 was a man there, known by the name of Zacchaeus, who was a  
3 commissioner of taxes and a rich man. He tried to see what Jesus  
was like; but, being short, he was unable to do so because of the  
4 crowd. So he ran on ahead and climbed into a mulberry tree, to  
5 see Jesus, for he knew that he must pass that way. When Jesus  
came to the place, he looked up and said to him: "Zacchaeus, be  
quick and come down, for I must stop at your house today." So

Zacchaeus got down quickly, and joyfully welcomed him. On 6  
seeing this, everyone began to complain: "He has gone to stay 7  
with a man who is an outcast." But Zacchaeus stood forward 8  
and said to the Master: "Listen, Master! I will give half my prop-  
erty to the poor, and, if I have defrauded anyone of anything, I  
will give him back four times as much."

"salvation has come to this house today," answered Jesus, 9  
"for even this man is a son of Abraham. The Son of Man has 10  
come to 'search for those who are lost' and to save them."

As the people were listening to this, Jesus went on to tell 11  
them a parable. He did so because he was near Jerusalem, and  
because they thought that the kingdom of God was going to be  
proclaimed at once. He said: "A nobleman once went to a dis- 12  
tant country to receive his appointment to a kingdom and then  
return. He called ten of his servants and gave them ten pounds 13  
of silver each, and told them to trade with them during his ab-  
sence. But his subjects hated him and sent envoys after him to 14  
say 'We will not have this man as our king.' On his return, af- 15  
ter having been appointed king, he directed that the servants to  
whom he had given his money should be summoned, so that  
he might learn what amount of trade they had done. The first 16  
came up, and said 'Sir, your ten pounds have made a hundred.'  
'Well done, good servant!' exclaimed the master. 'As you have 17  
proved trustworthy in a very small matter, I appoint you gov-  
ernor over ten towns.' When the second came, he said 'Your ten 18  
pounds, Sir, have produced fifty.' So the master said to him 'And 19  
you I appoint over five towns.' Another servant also came and 20  
said 'Sir, here are your ten pounds; I have kept them put away  
in a handkerchief. For I was afraid of you, because you are a 21  
stern man. You take what you have not planted, and reap what  
you have not sown.' The master answered 'Out of your own 22  
mouth I judge you, you worthless servant. You knew that I am  
a stern man, that I take what I have not planted, and reap what 23  
I have not sown? Then why did not you put my money into a  
bank? And I, on my return, could have claimed it with interest. 24  
Take away from him the ten pounds,' he said to those standing 25  
by, 'and give them to the one who has the hundred.' 'But, Sir,'

26 they said, 'he has a hundred pounds already!' 'I tell you,' he an-  
 27 swered, 'that, to him who has, more will be given, but, from him  
 who has nothing, even what he has will be taken away. But as  
 for my enemies, these men who would not have me as their king,  
 bring them here and put them to death in my presence.'"

28 After saying this, Jesus went on in front, going up to  
 Jerusalem.

### *The Last Days*

29 IT WAS WHEN JESUS HAD ALMOST REACHED BETHPHAGE AND BETHANY,  
 near the Mount of Olives, that he sent on two of the disciples.  
 30 "Go to the village facing us," he said, "and, when you get there,  
 you will find a foal tethered, which no one has yet ridden; untie  
 31 it and lead it here. And, if anybody asks you 'Why are you unty-  
 32 ing it?,' you are to say this — 'The Master wants it.'" So the two  
 33 who were sent went and found it as Jesus had told them. While  
 they were untying the foal, the owners asked them — "Why are  
 34 you untying the foal?" And the two disciples answered — "The  
 35 Master wants it." Then they led it back to Jesus, and threw their  
 36 cloaks on the foal and put Jesus on it. As he went along, the peo-  
 37 ple kept spreading their cloaks in the road. When he had almost  
 reached the place where the road led down the Mount of Olives,  
 everyone of the many disciples began in their joy to praise God  
 loudly for all the miracles that they had seen:

38 "Blessed is He who comes —  
 Our king — in the name of the Lord!  
 Peace in heaven,  
 And glory on high."

39 Some of the Pharisees in the crowd said to him: "Teacher, re-  
 40 strain your disciples." But Jesus answered: "I tell you that if they  
 are silent, the stones will call out."

41 When he drew near, on seeing the city, he wept over it, and  
 42 said: "If only you had known, while yet there was time — even  
 you — the things that make for peace! But now they have been

hidden from your sight. For a time is coming when your enemies will surround you with earthworks, and encircle you, and hem you in on all sides; they will trample you down and your children within you, and they will not leave in you one stone on another, because you did not know 'the time of your visitation.'"

Jesus went into the Temple Courts and began to drive out those who were selling, saying as he did so: "Scripture says — 'My house will be a house of prayer'; but you have made it 'a den of robbers.'"

Jesus continued to teach each day in the Temple Courts; but the chief priests and teachers of the law were eager to take his life, and so also were the leaders of the people. Yet they could not see what to do, for the people all hung on his words.

On one of these days, when Jesus was teaching the people in the Temple Courts and telling the good news, the chief priests and the teachers of the law, joined by the councillors, confronted him, and addressing him, said: "Tell us what authority you have to do these things. Who is it who has given you this authority?"

"I, too," said Jesus in reply, "will ask you one question. Give me an answer to it. It is about John's baptism — was it of divine or of human origin?" But they began arguing together: "If we say 'divine,' he will say 'Why did not you believe him?' But, if we say 'human,' the people will all stone us, for they are persuaded that John was a prophet." So they answered that they did not know its origin. "Then I," said Jesus, "refuse to tell you what authority I have to do these things."

But Jesus began to tell the people this parable — "A man once planted a vineyard, and then let it out to tenants, and went abroad for a long while. At the proper time he sent a servant to the tenants, so that they could give him a share of the produce of the vineyard. The tenants, however, beat him and sent him away empty-handed. The owner afterwards sent another servant; but the tenants beat and insulted this man too, and sent him away empty-handed. He sent a third; but they wounded this man also,

13 and threw him outside. 'What should I do?' said the owner of  
the vineyard. 'I will send my son, who is very dear to me. Per-  
14 haps they will respect him.' But, on seeing him, the tenants con-  
sulted with one another. 'Here is the heir!' they said. 'Let us kill  
15 him, and then the inheritance will become ours.' So they threw  
him outside the vineyard and killed him. Now what will the  
16 owner of the vineyard do to them? He will come and put those  
tenants to death, and will let the vineyard to others."

17 "heaven forbid!" they exclaimed when they heard it. But  
Jesus looked at them and said: "What then is the meaning of this  
passage? —

'The stone which the builders despised has now itself become  
the corner-stone.'

18 Everyone who falls on that stone will be dashed to pieces, while  
19 anyone on whom it falls — it will scatter him as dust."

After this the teachers of the law and the chief priest were  
eager to lay hands on Jesus then and there, but they were afraid  
of the people; for they saw that it was at them that he had aimed  
20 this parable. Having watched their opportunity, they afterwards  
sent some spies, who pretended to be good men, to catch Jesus  
in the course of conversation, and so enable them to give him up  
21 to the Governor's jurisdiction and authority. These spies asked  
Jesus a question. They said: "Teacher, we know that you are right  
in what you say and teach, and that you do not take any account  
22 of a person's position, but teach the way of God honestly; are we  
23 right in paying tribute to the Emperor or not?" Seeing through  
24 their deceitfulness, Jesus said to them: "Show me a coin. Whose  
head and title are on it?"

25 "The Emperor's," they said; and Jesus replied: "Well then,  
pay to the Emperor what belongs to the Emperor, and to God  
26 what belongs to God." They could not lay hold of this answer  
before the people; and, in their wonder at his reply, they held  
their tongues.

27 Presently there came up some Sadducees, who maintain that  
there is no resurrection. Their question was this — "Teacher,

Moses laid down for us in his writings that — 28

‘Should a man’s married brother die, and should he be childless, the man should take the widow as his wife, and raise up a family for his brother.’

Well, there were once seven brothers; of whom the eldest, after taking a wife, died childless. The second and third brothers both took her as their wife; and so, too, did all seven — dying without children. The woman herself was the last to die. About the woman, then — at the resurrection, whose wife is she to be, all seven brothers having had her as their wife?” 29  
30  
31  
32  
33

“The men and women of this world,” said Jesus, “marry and are given in marriage; but, for those who are thought worthy to attain to that other world and the resurrection from the dead, there is no marrying or being married, nor indeed can they die again, for they are like angels and, having shared in the resurrection, they are God’s children. As to the fact that the dead rise, even Moses indicated that, in the passage about the Bush, when he calls the Lord — 34  
35  
36  
37

‘The God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.’

Now he is not God of dead people, but of living. For in his sight all are alive.” 38

“Well said, teacher!” exclaimed some of the teachers of the law, for they did not venture to question him any further. But Jesus said to them: “How is it that people say that the Christ is to be David’s son? For David, in the book of Psalms, says himself — 39  
40  
41  
42

‘The Lord said to my lord: “Sit at my right hand, until I put your enemies as a stool for your feet.”’ 43

David, then, calls him ‘lord,’ so how is he David’s son?” 44

While all the people were listening, Jesus said to the disciples: “Be on your guard against the teachers of the law, who delight to walk about in long robes, and like to be greeted in the streets 45  
46

47 with respect, and to have the best seats in the Synagogues, and  
places of honor at dinner. These are the men who rob widows of  
their houses, and make a pretense of saying long prayers. Their  
sentence will be all the heavier."

21 Looking up, Jesus saw the rich people putting their gifts into  
2 the chests for the Temple offerings. He saw, too, a widow in poor  
3 circumstances putting two small coins into them. "I tell you", he  
4 said "that this poor widow has put in more than all the others;  
for everyone else here put in something from what he had to  
spare, while she, in her need, has put in all she had to live on."

5 When some of them spoke about the Temple being decorated  
6 with beautiful stones and offerings, Jesus said: "As for these  
things that you are looking at, a time is coming when not one  
stone will be left on another here, which will not be thrown  
7 down." So the disciples questioned Jesus: "But, teacher, when  
will this be? And what sign will there be when this is near?"

8 And Jesus said: "See that you are not led astray; for many  
will take my name, and come saying 'I am He,' and 'The time is  
9 close at hand.' Do not follow them. And, when you hear of wars  
and disturbances, do not be terrified, for these things must oc-  
10 cur first; but the end will not be at once." Then he said to them:  
11 "'Nation will rise against nation and kingdom against king-  
dom,' And there will be great earthquakes, and plagues and  
12 famines in various places, and there will be terrible appearances  
and signs in the heavens. Before all this, they will lay hands on  
you and persecute you, and they will betray you to Synagogues  
and put you in prison, when you will be brought before kings  
13 and governors for the sake of my name. Then will be your op-  
14 portunity of witnessing for me. Make up your minds, therefore,  
15 not to prepare your defense; for I will myself give you words,  
and a wisdom which all your opponents together will be unable  
16 to resist or defy. You will be betrayed even by your parents and  
brothers and sisters and sisters and relations and friends, and  
17 they will cause some of you to be put to death, and you will be  
18 hated by everyone because of me my name. Yet not a single hair  
19 of your heads will be lost! By your endurance you will win your-



selves life. As soon, however, as you see Jerusalem surrounded 20  
by armed camps, then you may know that the hour of her dese- 21  
cratation is at hand. Then those of you who are in Judea must take  
refuge in the mountains, those who are in Jerusalem must leave  
at once, and those who are in the country places must not go  
into it. For these are to be the days of vengeance, when all that 22  
scripture says will be fulfilled. Alas for pregnant women, and 23  
for those who are nursing infants in those days! For there will be  
great suffering in the land, and anger against this people. They  
will fall by the edge of the sword, and will be taken prisoners 24  
to every land, and 'Jerusalem will be under the heel of the Gen- 25  
tiles,' until their day is over — as it will be. There will be signs,  
too, in the sun and moon and stars, and on the earth despair  
among the nations, in their dismay at the roar of the sea and  
the surge. People's hearts will fail them through dread of what 26  
is coming upon the world; for 'the forces of the heavens will be  
convulsed.' Then will be seen the 'Son of Man coming in a cloud' 27  
with power and great glory. And, when these things begin to oc- 28  
cur, look upwards and lift your heads, for your deliverance will  
be at hand."

Then he taught them a lesson, saying — "Look at the fig tree 29  
and all the other trees. As soon as they shoot, you know, as you 30  
look at them, without being told, that summer is near. And so 31  
may you, as soon as you see these things happening, know that  
the kingdom of God is near. I tell you that even the present gen- 32  
eration will not pass away until all has taken place. The heav- 33  
ens and the earth will pass away, but my words will never pass  
away. Be on your guard or your minds will become dulled by 34  
debauches or drunkenness or the anxieties of life, and 'that day'  
will close on you suddenly like a trap. For come it will on all who 35  
are living upon the face of the whole earth. Be on the watch at 36  
all times, and pray that you may have strength to escape all that  
is destined to happen, and to stand in the presence of the Son  
of Man."

During the days, Jesus continued to teach in the Temple Courts, 37  
but he went out and spent the nights on the hill called the

38 'Mount of Olives.' And all the people would get up early in the morning and come to listen to him in the Temple Courts.

22 The feast of the unleavened bread, known as the Passover, was near. The chief priest and the teachers of the law were looking for an opportunity of destroying Jesus, for they were afraid of the people.

3 Now Satan took possession of Judas, who was known as Iscariot, and who belonged to the Twelve; and he went and discussed with the chief priests and officers in charge at the Temple the best way of betraying Jesus to them. They were glad of this, and agreed to pay him. So Judas assented, and looked for an opportunity to betray Jesus to them, in the absence of a crowd.

7 When the day of the Festival of the unleavened bread came, on which the Passover lambs had to be killed, Jesus sent forward Peter and John, saying to them: "Go and make preparations for our eating the Passover."

9 "Where do you wish us to make preparations?" they asked. 10 "Listen," he answered, "when you have got into the city, a man carrying a pitcher of water will meet you; follow him into whatever house he enters; and you will say to the owner of the house 'The teacher says to you — Where is the room where I am to eat the Passover with my disciples?' The man will show you a large upstairs room, set out; there make preparations."

13 So Peter and John went on, and found everything just as Jesus had told them, and they prepared the Passover.

14 When the time came, Jesus took his place at the table, and the apostles with him. "I have most earnestly wished," he said, "to eat this Passover with you before I suffer. For I tell you that I will not eat it again, until it has had its fulfillment in the kingdom of God." Then, on receiving a cup, after saying the thanksgiving, he said: "Take this and share it among you. For I tell you that I will not, after today, drink of the juice of the grape, until the kingdom of God has come." Then Jesus took some bread, and, after saying the thanksgiving, broke it and gave to them, with the words: "This is my body. Yet see! The hand of the man who is betraying me is beside me on the table! True, the Son of Man

is passing, by the way ordained for him, yet alas for that man by whom he is being betrayed!" Then they began questioning one another which of them it could be who was going to do this. 23

And a dispute arose among them as to which of them was to be regarded as the greatest. Jesus, however, said: "The kings of the Gentiles lord it over them, and their oppressors are styled 'Benefactors.' But with you it must not be so. No, let the greatest among you become like the youngest, and him who leads like him who serves. Which is the greater — the master at the table or his servant? Is not it the master at the table? Yet I myself am among you as one who serves. You are the men who have stood by me in my trials; and, just as my Father has assigned me a kingdom, I assign you places, so that you may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and be seated on twelve thrones as judges of the twelve tribes of Israel. Simon! Simon! listen. Satan demanded leave to sift you all like wheat, but I prayed for you, Simon, that your faith should not fail. And you, when you have returned to me, are to strengthen the others." 24 25 26 27 28 29 30 31 32

"Master," said Peter, "with you I am ready to go both to prison and to death." 33

"I tell you, Peter," replied Jesus, "the cock will not crow to-day until you have disowned all knowledge of me three times." Then he said to them all: "When I sent you out as my messengers, without either purse, or bag, or sandals, were you in need of anything?" 34 35

"No; nothing," they answered. "Now, however," he said, "he who has a purse must take it and his bag as well; and he who has not must sell his cloak and buy a sword. For, I tell you, that passage of scripture must be fulfilled in me, which says — 'He was counted among the godless'; indeed all that refers to me is finding its fulfillment." 36 37

"Master," they exclaimed, "look, here are two swords!" 38

"Enough!" said Jesus.

Jesus then went out, and made his way as usual to the Mount of Olives, followed by his disciples. And, when he reached the spot, he said to them: "Pray that you may not fall into tempta- 39 40

41 tion." Then he withdrew about a stone's throw, and knelt down  
42 and began to pray. "Father," he said, "if it is your pleasure, spare  
43 me this cup; only, not my will but your be done." Presently  
44 there appeared to him an angel from heaven, who strengthened  
45 him. And, as his anguish became intense, he prayed still more  
46 earnestly, while his sweat was like great drops of blood falling  
47 on the ground. Then he rose from praying, and came to the disci-  
48 ples and found them sleeping for sorrow. "Why are you asleep?"  
49 he asked them. "Rise and pray so that you don't fall into tempta-  
50 tion." While he was still speaking, a crowd appeared in sight, led  
51 by the man called Judas, who was one of the Twelve. Judas ap-  
52 proached Jesus, to kiss him; on which Jesus said to him: "Judas,  
53 is it by a kiss that you betray the Son of Man?" But when those  
54 who were around Jesus saw what was going to happen, they  
55 exclaimed: "Master, should we use our swords?" And one of  
56 them struck the high priest's servant and cut off his right ear;  
57 on which Jesus said: "Let me at least do this"; and, touching his  
58 ear, he healed the wound. Then, turning to the chief priests and  
59 officers in charge at the Temple and councillors, who had come  
60 for him, he said: "Have you come out, as if after a robber, with  
swords and clubs? When I was with you day after day in the  
Temple Courts, you did not lay hands on me; but now your time  
has come, and the power of darkness."

54 Those who had taken Jesus prisoner took him away into the  
55 house of the high priest. Peter followed at a distance. But, when  
56 they had lit a fire in the centre of the courtyard and had all sat  
57 down there, Peter seated himself in the middle of them. Present-  
58 ly a maidservant saw him sitting near the blaze of the fire. Fixing  
59 her eyes on him, she said: "Why, this man was one of his com-  
60 panions!" But Peter denied it. "I do not know him," he replied. A  
little while afterwards some one else — a man — saw him and  
said: "Why, you are one of them!"

59 "No," Peter said, "I am not." About an hour later another  
60 man declared positively: "This man also was certainly with him.  
Why, he is a Galilean!" But Peter said: "I do not know what you  
are speaking about." Instantly, while he was still speaking, a

cock crowed. And the Master turned and looked at Peter; and Peter remembered the words that the Master had said to him — “Before a cock has crowed today, you will disown me three times”; and he went outside and wept bitterly. 61 62

The men who held Jesus kept making sport of him and beating him. They blindfolded him and then questioned him. “Now play the prophet,” they said; “who was it that struck you?” And they heaped many other insults on him. 63 64 65

At daybreak the National Council met — both the chief priests and the teachers of the law — and took Jesus before their High Council. “If you are the Christ,” they said, “tell us so.” 66 67

“If I tell you,” replied Jesus, “you will not believe me; and, if I question you, you will not answer. But from this hour ‘the Son of Man will be seated on the right hand of God Almighty.’” 68 69

“Are you, then, the Son of God?” they all asked. “It is true,” answered Jesus, “I am.” At this they exclaimed: “Why do we want any more evidence? We have heard it ourselves from his own lips!” 70 71

Then they all rose in a body and led Jesus before Pilate. And they began to accuse him: “This is a man whom we found misleading our people, preventing them from paying taxes to the Emperor, and giving out that he himself is ‘Christ, a king.’” 23 2

“Are you the king of the Jews?” Pilate asked him. “It is true,” replied Jesus. But Pilate, turning to the chief priests and the people, said: “I do not see anything to find fault with in this man.” But they insisted: “He is stirring up the people by his teaching all through Judea; he began with Galilee and has now come here.” Hearing this, Pilate asked if the man was a Galilean; and, having satisfied himself that Jesus came under Herod’s jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who also was at Jerusalem at the time. When 3 4 5 6 7

Herod saw Jesus, he was exceedingly pleased, for he had been wanting to see him for a long time, having heard a great deal about him; and he was hoping to see some sign given by him. So he questioned him at some length, but Jesus made no reply. 8 9

10 Meanwhile the chief priests and the teachers of the law stood  
11 by and vehemently accused him. And Herod, with his soldiers,  
12 treated Jesus with scorn; he mocked him by throwing a gorgeous  
robe around him, and then sent him back to Pilate. And Herod  
and Pilate became friends that very day, for before that there had  
been ill-will between them.

13 So Pilate summoned the chief priests, and the leading men,  
14 and the people, and said to them: "You brought this man before  
me charged with misleading the people; and yet, for my part,  
15 though I examined him before you, I did not find this man to  
blame for any of the things of which you accuse him; nor did  
16 Herod either; for he has sent him back to us. And, as a fact, he has  
not done anything deserving death; so I will have him scourged,  
18 and then release him." But they began to shout as one man: "Kill  
19 this fellow, but release Barabbas for us." (Barabbas was a man  
who had been put in prison for a riot that had broken out in the  
20 city and for murder.) Pilate, however, wanting to release Jesus,  
21 called to them again; but they kept calling out: "Crucify, cruci-  
fy him!"

22 "Why, what harm has this man done?" Pilate said to them  
for the third time. "I have found nothing in him for which he  
could be condemned to death. So I will have him scourged, and  
23 then release him." But they persisted in loudly demanding his  
24 crucifixion; and their clamor gained the day. Pilate decided that  
25 their demand should be granted. He released the man who had  
been put in prison for riot and murder, as they demanded, and  
gave Jesus up to be dealt with as they pleased.

26 And, as they were leading Jesus away, they laid hold of Simon  
from Cyrene, who was on his way in from the country, and they  
put the cross on his shoulders, for him to carry it behind Jesus.  
27 There was a great crowd of people following him, many being  
women who were beating their breasts and wailing for him. So  
28 Jesus turned and said to them: "Women of Jerusalem, do not  
weep for me, but weep for yourselves and for your children. A  
29 time, I tell you, is coming, when it will be said — 'Happy are  
the women who are barren, and those who have never borne

children or nursed them!' At that time people will begin to say 30  
to the mountains 'Fall on us,' and to the hills 'Cover us.' If what 31  
you see is done while the tree is green, what will happen when  
it is dry?" There were two others also, criminals, led out to be ex- 32  
ecuted with Jesus. When they had reached the place called 'The 33  
Skull,' there they crucified Jesus and the criminals, one on the  
right, and one on the left. Then Jesus said: "Father, forgive them; 34  
they do not know what they are doing." His clothes they divided  
among them by casting lots. Meanwhile the people stood look- 35  
ing on. Even the leading men said with a sneer: "He saved oth-  
ers, let him save himself, if he is God's Christ, his chosen one."  
The soldiers, too, came up in mockery, bringing him common 36  
wine, and saying as they did so: "If you are the king of the Jews,  
save yourself." Above him were the words — 37  
38

'THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.'

One of the criminals who were hanging beside Jesus railed at 39  
him. "Are not you the Christ? Save yourself and us," he said.  
But the other rebuked him. "Have not you," he said, "any fear 40  
of God, now that you are under the same sentence? And we 41  
justly so, for we are only reaping our deserts, but this man has  
not done anything wrong. Jesus," he went on, "do not forget me 42  
when you have come to your kingdom." And Jesus answered: "I 43  
tell you, this very day you will be with me in Paradise."

It was nearly midday, when a darkness came over the whole 44  
country, lasting until three in the afternoon, the sun being 45  
eclipsed; and the Temple curtain was torn down the middle.  
Then Jesus, with a loud cry, said: "Father, into your hands I com- 46  
mit my spirit." And with these words he expired. The Roman 47  
captain, on seeing what had happened, praised God, exclaim-  
ing: "This must have been a good man!" All the people who had 48  
collected to see the sight watched what occurred, and then went  
home beating their breasts. All the friends of Jesus had been 49  
standing at a distance, with the women who accompanied him  
from Galilee, watching all this.

50 Now there was a man of the name of Joseph, who was a member  
51 of the Council, and who bore a good and upright character. (This  
man had not assented to the decision and action of the Council.)  
52 He belonged to Ramah, a town in Judea, and lived in expectation  
53 of the kingdom of God. He now went to see Pilate, and asked for  
the body of Jesus; and, when he had taken it down, he wrapped  
54 it in a linen sheet, and laid him in a tomb cut out of stone, in  
55 which no one had yet been buried. It was the Preparation day,  
and just before the Sabbath began. The women who had accom-  
56 panied Jesus from Galilee followed, and saw the tomb and how  
the body of Jesus was laid, and then went home, and prepared  
spices and perfumes.

### *The Risen Life*

24 DURING THE SABBATH THEY RESTED, as directed by the command-  
ment. But very early on the first day of the week they went to the  
tomb, taking with them the spices that they had prepared. They  
2 found that the stone had been rolled away from the tomb; and,  
3 on going into it, they could not find the body. While they were at  
4 a loss to account for this, all at once two men stood beside them,  
5 in dazzling clothing. But, when in their fear the women bowed  
their faces to the ground, the men said to them: "Why are you  
6 looking among the dead for him who is living? Remember how  
7 he spoke to you before he left Galilee — How he said that the  
Son of Man must be betrayed into the hands of wicked men, and  
8 be crucified, and rise again on the third day." Then they remem-  
9 bered the words of Jesus, and, on returning from the tomb, they  
10 told all this to the Eleven and to all the rest. There were Mary  
of Magdala, and Joanna, and Mary, the mother of James. The  
11 other women, too, spoke about this to the apostles. What they  
said seemed to the apostles mere nonsense, and they did not be-  
lieve them.

13 It happened that very day that two of the disciples were going  
to a village called Emmaus, which was about seven miles from  
14 Jerusalem, talking together, as they went, about all that had just



taken place. While they were talking about these things and discussing them, Jesus himself came up and went on their way with them; but their eyes were blinded so that they could not recognize him. "What is this that you are saying to each other as you walk along?" Jesus asked. They stopped, with sad looks on their faces, and then one of them, whose name was Cleopas, said to Jesus: "Are you staying by yourself at Jerusalem, that you have not heard of the things that have happened there within the last few days?"

"What things do you mean?" asked Jesus. "Why, about Jesus of Nazareth," they answered, "who, in the eyes of God and all the people, was a prophet, whose power was felt in both his words and actions; and how the chief priests and our leading men gave him up to be sentenced to death, and afterwards crucified him. But we were hoping that he was the Destined Deliverer of Israel; yes, and besides all this, it is now three days since these things occurred. And what is more, some of the women among us have greatly astonished us. They went to the tomb at day-break And, not finding the body of Jesus there, came and told us that they had seen a vision of angels who told them that he was alive. So some of our number went to the tomb and found everything just as the women had said; but they did not see Jesus."

Then Jesus said to them: "Foolish men, slow to accept all that the prophets have said! Was not the Christ bound to undergo this suffering before entering into his glory?" Then, beginning with Moses and all the prophets, he explained to them all through the scriptures the passages that referred to himself. When they got near the village to which they were walking, Jesus appeared to be going further; but they pressed him not to do so. "Stay with us," they said, "for it is getting towards evening, and the sun is already low." So Jesus went in to stay with them. After he had taken his place at the table with them, he took the bread and said the blessing, and broke it, and gave it to them. Then their eyes were opened and they recognized him; but he disappeared from their sight. "How our hearts glowed," the disciples said to each other, "while he was talking to us on the road, and when he explained the scriptures to us!"

33 Then they immediately got up and returned to Jerusalem,  
34 where they found the Eleven and their companions all together,  
35 who told them that the Master had really risen, and had appeared  
36 to Simon. So they also related what had happened during their  
37 walk, and how they had recognized Jesus at the breaking of  
38 the bread. While they were still talking about these things,  
39 Jesus himself stood among them. In their terror and alarm they  
40 thought they saw a spirit, but Jesus said to them: "Why are you  
41 so startled? And why do doubts arise in your minds? Look at my  
42 hands and my feet, and you will know that it is I. Feel me, and  
43 look at me, for a spirit has not flesh and bones, as you see that  
44 I have." While they were still unable to believe it all, overcome  
45 with joy, and were wondering if it were true, Jesus said to them:  
46 "Have you anything here to eat?" They handed him a piece of  
47 broiled fish, and he took it and ate it before their eyes. "This is  
48 what I told you," he said, "when I was still with you — that every-  
49 thing that had been written about me in the law of Moses, the  
50 prophets, and the Psalms, must be fulfilled."

51 Then he enabled them to understand the meaning of the  
52 scriptures, saying to them: "Scripture says that the Christ should  
53 suffer, and that he should rise again from the dead on the third  
54 day, and that repentance for forgiveness of sins should be pro-  
55 claimed on his authority to all the nations — beginning at  
56 Jerusalem. You yourselves are to be witnesses to all this. And  
57 now I am myself about to send you that which my Father has  
58 promised. But you must remain in the city until you have been  
59 invested with power from above."

60 After this, Jesus led them out as far as Bethany, and there raised  
61 his hands and blessed them. As he was in the act of blessing  
62 them, he left them. They returned to Jerusalem full of joy; and  
63 they were constantly in the Temple Courts, blessing God.

# John

*The Good News According to John*

## *Introduction*

In the beginning the Word was; 1  
and the Word was with God;  
and the Word was God.

He was in the beginning with God; 2  
through him all things came into being, 3  
and nothing came into being apart from him.  
That which came into being in him was life; 4  
and the life was the light of humanity;  
and the light shines in the darkness, 5  
and the darkness never overpowered it.

There appeared a man sent from God, whose name was 6  
John;  
he came as a witness — to bear witness to the light 7  
so that through him everyone might believe.  
He was not the light, 8  
but he came to bear witness to the light.

That was the true light which enlightens everyone coming into 9  
the world.  
He was in the world; 10

and through him the world came into being —  
yet the world did not know him.

- 11 He came to his own —  
yet his own did not receive him.
- 12 But to all who did receive him he gave power to become  
children of God —  
to those who believe in his name.
- 13 For not to natural conception, nor to human instincts, nor to  
human will did they owe the new life,  
but to God.
- 14 And the Word became human, and lived among us,  
(We saw his glory — the glory of the Only Son sent from  
the Father),  
full of love and truth.
- 15 (John bears witness to him; he cried aloud — for it was he who  
spoke —  
“He who is coming’ after me is now before me,  
for he was ever first”);
- 16 out of his fullness we have all received some gift,  
gift after gift of love;
- 17 for the law was given through Moses,  
love and truth came through Jesus Christ.
- 18 No one has ever yet seen God;  
God the Only Son, who is ever with the Father —  
He has revealed him.

### *The Preparation*

- 19 WHEN THE RELIGIOUS AUTHORITIES IN JERUSALEM SENT SOME PRIESTS and  
20 Levites to ask John — “Who are you?”, he told them clearly and  
simply: “I am not the Christ.”
- 21 “What then?” they asked. “Are you Elijah?”  
“No,” he said, “I am not.”

"Are you 'the prophet'?" He answered, "No."

"Who then are you?" they continued; "tell us so that we have an answer to give to those who have sent us. What do you say about yourself?" 22

"I," he answered, "am — 23

"The voice of one crying aloud in the wilderness — "straighten the way of the Lord",

as the prophet Isaiah said."

These men had been sent from the Pharisees; and their next question was: "Why then do you baptize, if you are not the Christ, nor Elijah, nor yet 'the prophet'?" John's answer was — "I baptize with water, but among you stands one whom you do not know; he is coming after me, yet I am not worthy even to unfasten his sandal." This happened at Bethany, across the Jordan, where John was baptizing. 24  
25  
26  
27  
28

The next day John saw Jesus coming towards him, and exclaimed: "Here is the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world! I was talking about him when I said 'After me there is coming a man who ranks ahead of me, because before I was born he already was.' I did not know who he was, but I have come baptizing with water to make him known to Israel." John also said: 29  
30  
31  
32

"I saw the Spirit come down from heaven like a dove and rest on him. I myself did not know him, but he who sent me to baptize with water, he said to me 'He on whom you see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him — he it is who baptizes with the Holy Spirit.' This I have seen myself, and I have declared my belief that he is the Son of God." 33  
34

The next day, when John was standing with two of his disciples, he looked at Jesus as he passed and exclaimed: "There is the Lamb of God!" The two disciples heard him say this, and followed Jesus. But Jesus turned around, and saw them following. "What are you looking for?" he asked. "Rabbi," they answered (or, as we should say, 'teacher'), "where are you staying?" 35  
36  
37  
38

"Come, and you will see," he replied. So they went, and saw 39

where he was staying, and spent that day with him.

40 It was then about four in the afternoon. One of the two, who  
41 heard what John said and followed Jesus, was Andrew, Simon  
42 Peter's brother. He first found his own brother Simon, and said  
43 to him: "We have found the Messiah!" (a word which means  
44 'Christ,' or 'Consecrated'.) Then he brought him to Jesus. Fixing  
45 his eyes on him, Jesus said: "You are Simon, the son of John; you  
46 will be called Cephas" (which means 'Peter,' or 'Rock'). The fol-  
47 lowing day Jesus decided to leave for Galilee. He found Philip,  
48 and said to him: "Follow me." Philip was from Bethsaida, the  
49 same town as Andrew and Peter. He found Nathanael and said  
50 to him: "We have found him of whom Moses wrote in the law,  
51 and of whom the prophets also wrote — Jesus of Nazareth,  
52 Joseph's son!"

46 "Can anything good come out of Nazareth?" asked  
47 Nathanael. "Come and see," replied Philip. When Jesus saw  
48 Nathanael coming towards him, he said: "Here is a true Israelite,  
49 in whom there is no deceit!"

48 "How do you know me?" asked Nathanael. "Even before  
49 Philip called you," replied Jesus, "when you were under the fig  
50 tree, I saw you."

49 "Rabbi," Nathanael exclaimed, "you are the Son of God, you  
50 are king of Israel!"

50 "Do you believe in me," asked Jesus, "because I told you that  
51 I saw you under the fig tree? You will see greater things than  
52 those! In truth I tell you," he added, "you will all see heaven  
53 open, and 'the angels of God ascending and descending' on the  
54 Son of Man."

### *The Work in Judaea, Galilee and Samaria*

2 TWO DAYS AFTER THIS THERE WAS A WEDDING AT CANA IN GALILEE, and  
3 Jesus' mother was there. Jesus himself, too, with his disciples,  
4 was invited to the wedding. And, when the wine ran short, his  
5 mother said to him: "They have no wine left."

4 "What do you want with me?" answered Jesus. "My time has  
5 not come yet." His mother said to the servants: "Do whatever

he tells you." There were standing there six stone water-jars, in accordance with the Jewish rule of 'purification,' each holding twenty or thirty gallons. 6

Jesus said to the servants: "Fill the water-jars with water." 7  
And, when they had filled them to the brim, he added: "Now 8  
take some out, and carry it to the Master of the feast." The servants did so. And, when the Master of the feast had tasted the 9  
water which had now become wine, not knowing where it had come from — although the servants who had taken out the water knew — He called the groom and said to him: "Everyone 10  
puts good wine on the table first, and inferior wine afterwards, when his guests have drunk freely; but you have kept back the good wine till now!" This, the first sign of his mission, Jesus gave 11  
at Cana in Galilee, and by it revealed his glory; and his disciples believed in him.

After this, Jesus went down to Capernaum — he, his mother, 12  
his brothers, and his disciples; but they stayed there only a few days.

Then, as the Jewish Passover was near, Jesus went up to 13  
Jerusalem. In the Temple Courts he found people who were selling 14  
bullocks, sheep, and pigeons, and the money changers at their counters. So he made a whip of cords, and drove them all 15  
out of the Temple Courts, and the sheep and bullocks as well; he scattered the money of the money changers, and overturned their tables, and said to the pigeon-dealers: "Take these things 16  
away. Do not turn my Father's house into a market house." His disciples remembered that scripture said — 'Passion for your house will consume me.' 17

Then some of the religious authorities asked Jesus: "What 18  
sign are you going to show us, since you act in this way?"

"Destroy this temple," was his answer, "and I will raise it in 19  
three days."

"This Temple," the authorities replied, "has been forty-six 20  
years in building, and are you going to 'raise it in three days?'"  
But Jesus was speaking of his body as a temple. Afterwards, 21

when he had risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this; and they believed the passage of scripture, and the words which Jesus had spoken.

23 While Jesus was in Jerusalem, during the Passover Festival,  
24 many came to trust in him, when they saw the signs of his mis-  
25 sion that he was giving. But Jesus did not put himself in their  
power because he knew what was in their hearts. He did not  
need anyone to tell him about people because he could read  
what was in them..

3 Now there was a Pharisee named Nicodemus, who was a lead-  
2 ing man among his people. This man came to Jesus by night, and  
said to him: "Rabbi, we know that you are a teacher come from  
God; for no one could give such signs as you are giving, unless  
God were with him."

3 "In truth I tell you," exclaimed Jesus, "unless a person is  
reborn, they cannot see the kingdom of God."

4 "How can a person," asked Nicodemus, "be born when they  
are old? Can they be born a second time?"

5 "In truth I tell you," answered Jesus, "unless a person owes  
their birth to water and Spirit, they cannot enter the kingdom  
6 of God. All that owes its birth to human nature is human, and  
7 all that owes its birth to the Spirit is spiritual. Do not wonder at  
8 my telling you that you all need to be reborn. The wind blows  
wherever it wants, and you can hear the sound it makes, but you  
do not know where it comes from, or where it goes; it is the same  
with everyone who owes his birth to the Spirit."

9 "How can that be?" asked Nicodemus. "What! You a teacher  
10 of Israel," exclaimed Jesus, "and yet do not understand this! In  
11 truth I tell you that we speak of what we know, and state what  
we have seen; and yet you do not accept our statements. If,  
12 when I tell you earthly things, you do not believe me, how will  
13 you believe me when I tell you of heavenly things? No one has  
ascended to heaven, except him who descended from heaven —  
14 the Son of Man himself. And, as Moses lifted up the snake<sup>1</sup> in  
15 the desert, so must the Son of Man be lifted up; so that everyone



who believes in him may have eternal life.”

For God so loved the world, that he gave his only Son, so that everyone who believes in him may not be lost, but have eternal life. For God did not send his Son into the world to condemn the world, but so that the world might be saved through him. The person who believes in him escapes condemnation, while the person who does not believe in him is already condemned, because they have not believed in the only Son of God. The ground of their condemnation is this, that though the light has come into the world, people preferred the darkness to the light, because their actions were wicked. For the person who lives an evil life hates the light, and will not come to it, fearing that their actions will be exposed; but the person who lives by the truth comes into the light, so it can be clearly seen that God is in all they do.

After this, Jesus went with his disciples into the country parts of Judea; and there he stayed with them, and baptized. John, also, was baptizing at Aenon near Salim, because there were many streams there; and people were constantly coming and being baptized. (For John had not yet been imprisoned). Now a discussion arose between some of John’s disciples and a fellow Jew on the subject of ‘purification;’ and the disciples came to John and said: “Rabbi, the man who was with you on the other side of the Jordan, and to whom you have yourself borne testimony — he, also, is baptizing, and everybody is going to him.” John’s answer was — “A person can gain nothing but what is given them from heaven. You are yourselves witnesses that I said ‘I am not the Christ,’ but ‘I have been sent before him as a messenger.’ It is the groom who has the bride; but the groom’s friend, who stands by and listens to him, is filled with joy when he hears the groom’s voice. This joy I have felt to the full. He must become greater, and I less.”

He who comes from above is above all others; but a child of earth is earthly, and his teaching is earthly, too. He who comes from heaven is above all others. He states what he has seen and

---

<sup>1</sup>A bronze snake on a pole, see Num 21:9

33 what he heard, and yet no one accepts his statement. They who  
34 did accept his statement confirm the fact that God is true. For  
35 he whom God sent as his messenger gives us God's own teach-  
36 ing, for God does not limit the gift of the Spirit. The Father loves  
his Son, and has put everything in his hands. The person who  
believes in the Son has eternal life, while a person who rejects  
the Son will not even see that life, but remains under 'God's dis-  
pleasure.'

4 Now, when the Master heard that the Pharisees had been told  
2 that he was making and baptizing more disciples than John  
3 (Though it was not Jesus himself, but his disciples, who bap-  
4 tized), he left Judea, and set out again for Galilee. He had to pass  
5 through Samaria, and, on his way, he came to a Samaritan town  
6 called Shechem, near the plot of land that Jacob gave to his son  
7 Joseph. Jacob's Spring was there, and Jesus, being tired after his  
8 journey, sat down beside the spring, just as he was. It was then  
9 about midday. A woman of Samaria came to draw water; and Je-  
10 sus said to her — "Give me some to drink," For his disciples had  
11 gone into the town to buy food. "How is it," replied the Samaritan  
12 woman, "that you who are a Jew ask for water from a Samaritan  
13 woman like me?" (For Jews do not associate with Samaritan-  
14 tans). "If you knew of the gift of God," replied Jesus, "and who  
15 it is that is saying to you 'Give me some water,' you would have  
16 asked him, and he would have given you 'living water'."

11 "You have no bucket, Sir, and the well is deep," she said;  
12 "where did you get that 'living water?' Surely you are not  
greater than our ancestor Jacob who gave us the well, and used  
to drink from it himself, and his sons, and his cattle!"

13 "All who drink of this water," replied Jesus, "will be thirsty  
14 again; but whoever once drinks of the water that I will give  
him will never thirst any more; but the water that I will give  
him will become a spring welling up within him — a source of  
eternal life."

15 "Give me this water, Sir," said the woman, "so that I may not  
be thirsty, nor have to come all the way here to draw water."

16 "Go and call your husband," said Jesus, "and then come

back.”

“I have no husband,” answered the woman. “You are right in saying ‘I have no husband,’” replied Jesus, “For you have had five husbands, and the man with whom you are now living is not your husband; in saying that, you have spoken the truth.”

“I see, Sir, that you are a prophet!” exclaimed the woman. “It was on this mountain that our ancestors worshiped; and yet you Jews say that the proper place for worship is in Jerusalem.”

“Believe me,” replied Jesus, “a time is coming when it will be neither on this mountain nor in Jerusalem that you will worship the Father. You Samaritans do not know what you worship; we know what we worship, for salvation comes from the Jews. But a time is coming, indeed it is already here, when the true worshipers will worship the Father spiritually and truly; for such are the worshipers that the Father desires. God is Spirit; and those who worship him must worship spiritually and truly.”

“I know,” answered the woman, “that the Messiah, who is called the Christ, is coming; when once he has come, he will tell us everything.”

“I am he,” Jesus said to her, “I who am speaking to you.” At this moment his disciples came up, and were surprised to find him talking with a woman; but none of them asked ‘What do you want?’ or ‘Why are you talking with her?’ So the woman, leaving her pitcher, went back to the town, and said to the people: “Come and see someone who has told me everything that I have done. Can he be the Christ?” And the people left the town and went to see Jesus.

Meanwhile the disciples kept saying to him: “Take something to eat, Rabbi.”

“I have food to eat,” he answered, “of which you know nothing.”

“Can anyone have brought him anything to eat?” the disciples said to one another. “My food,” replied Jesus, “is to do the will of him who sent me, and to complete his work. Do not you say that it still wants four months to harvest? Why, look up, and see how white the fields are for harvest! Already the reaper is receiving wages and gathering in sheaves for eternal life, so that

37 sower and reaper rejoice together. For here the proverb holds  
38 good — ‘One sows, another reaps.’ I have sent you to reap that  
on which you have spent no labor; others have labored, and you  
have reaped the results of their labor.”

39 Many from that town came to believe in Jesus — Samaritans  
though they were — because the woman had said: ‘He has told  
40 me everything that I have done.’ And, when these Samaritans  
had come to Jesus, they begged him to stay with them, and  
41 he stayed there two days. But far more came to believe in him  
42 because of what he said himself, and they said to the woman:  
“It is no longer because of what you say that we believe in him,  
for we have heard him ourselves and know that he really is the  
Savior of the world.”

43 After these two days Jesus went on to Galilee; for he himself de-  
44 clared that ‘a prophet is not honored in his own country.’ When  
45 he entered Galilee, the Galileans welcomed him, for they had  
seen all that he did at Jerusalem during the Festival, at which  
46 they also had been present. So Jesus came again to Cana in  
Galilee, where he had turned the water into wine. Now there  
was one of the king’s officers whose son was lying ill at Caper-  
47 naum. When this man heard that Jesus had returned from Judea  
to Galilee, he went to him, and begged him to come down and  
48 cure his son; for he was at the point of death. Jesus answered:  
“Unless you all see signs and wonders, you will not believe.”

49 “Sir,” said the officer, “come down before my child dies.”  
50 And Jesus answered: “Go, your son is living.” The man believed  
51 what Jesus said to him, and went; and, while he was on his way  
down, his servants met him, and told him that his child was liv-  
52 ing. So he asked them at what time the boy began to get better.  
“It was yesterday, about one o’clock,” they said, “that the fever  
53 left him.” By this the father knew that it was at the very time  
when Jesus had said to him ‘Your son is living’; and he himself,  
54 with all his household, believed in Jesus. This was the second oc-  
casión on which Jesus gave a sign of his mission on coming from  
Judea to Galilee.

Sometime after this there was a Jewish Festival; and Jesus went 5  
up to Jerusalem. There is in Jerusalem, near the sheep-gate, 2  
a bath with five colonnades around it. It is called in Hebrew  
'Bethesda.' In these colonnades a large number of sick people 3  
were lying — blind, lame, and crippled. One man who was there 5  
had been crippled for thirty-eight years. Jesus saw the man lying 6  
there, and, finding that he had been in this state a long time, said  
to him: "Do you wish to be cured?"

"I have no one, Sir," the sick man answered, "to put me into 7  
the bath when there is a troubling of the water, and, while I am  
getting to it, some one else steps down before me."

"Stand up," said Jesus, "take up your mat, and walk." The 8  
man was cured immediately, and took up his mat and began 9  
walking. Now it was the Sabbath. So the religious authorities  
said to the man who had been cured: "This is the Sabbath; you 10  
must not carry your mat."

"The man who cured me," he answered, "said to me 'Take up 11  
your mat and walk.'"

"Who was it," they asked, "that said to you 'Take up your 12  
mat and walk?'" But the man who had been restored did not  
know who it was; for Jesus had moved away, because there was 13  
a crowd there. Afterwards Jesus found the man in the Temple  
Courts, and said to him: "You are cured now; do not sin again, 14  
or something worse may happen to you."

The man went away, and told the authorities that it was Jesus 15  
who had cured him. And that was why they began to persecute  
Jesus — because he did things of this kind on the Sabbath. But 16  
Jesus replied: "My Father works to this very hour, and I work  
also." This made the authorities all the more eager to kill him, 17  
because not only was he doing away with the Sabbath, but he actu-  
ally called God his own Father — putting himself on an equality 18  
with God. So Jesus made this further reply: "In truth I tell you, 19  
the Son can do nothing of himself; he does only what he sees the  
Father doing; whatever the Father does, the Son does also. For 20  
the Father loves his Son, and shows him everything that he is do-  
ing; and he will show him still greater things — so that you will 21  
be filled with wonder. For, just as the Father raises the dead and

gives them life, so also the Son gives life to whom he pleases. The  
22 Father himself does not judge any one, but has 'entrusted the  
23 work of judging entirely to his Son,' So that everyone may honor  
24 the Son, just as they honor the Father. The person who does not  
honor the Son fails to honor the Father who sent him. In truth I  
tell you that the person who listens to my message and believes  
him who sent me, has eternal life, and does not come under con-  
25 demnation, but has already passed out of death into life. In truth  
I tell you that a time is coming, indeed it is already here, when  
the dead will listen to the voice of the Son of God, and when  
26 those who listen will live. For, just as the Father has inherent life  
within him, so also he has granted to the Son to have inherent life  
27 within him; and, because he is Son of Man, he has also given him  
28 authority to act as judge. Do not wonder at this; for the time is  
coming when all who are in their graves will hear his voice, and  
29 will come out — those who have done good rising to life, and  
30 those who have lived evil lives rising for condemnation. I can do  
nothing of myself; I judge as I am taught; and the judgment that  
I give is just, because my aim is not to do my own will, but the  
will of him who sent me.

31 If I bear testimony to myself, my testimony is not trustwor-  
32 thy; it is another who bears testimony to me, and I know that the  
33 testimony which he bears to me is trustworthy. You have your-  
34 selves sent to John, and he as testified to the truth. But the tes-  
timony which I receive is not from people; I am saying this for  
35 your salvation. He was the 'Lamp that was burning' and shin-  
36 ing, and you were ready to rejoice, for a time, in his light. But the  
testimony which I have is of greater weight than John's; for the  
work that the Father has given me to carry out — the work that  
I am doing — is in itself proof that the Father has sent me as his  
37 messenger. The Father who has sent me has himself borne testi-  
mony to me. You have neither listened to his voice, not seen his  
38 form; and you have not taken his message home to your hearts,  
because you do not believe him whom he sent as his messenger.  
39 You search the scriptures, because you think that you find in  
them immortal life; and, though it is those scriptures that bear  
40 testimony to me, you refuse to come to me to have life.

I do not receive honor from people, but I know this of you, 41  
that you have not the love of God in your hearts. I have come in 42  
my Father's name, and you do not receive me; if another comes 43  
in his own name, you will receive him. How can you believe in 44  
me, when you receive honor from one another and do not desire 45  
the honor which comes from the only God? Do not think that I 46  
will accuse you to the Father; your accuser is Moses, on whom 47  
you have been resting your hopes. For, had you believed Moses,  
you would have believed me, for it was of me that Moses wrote;  
but, if you do not believe his writings, how will you believe  
my teaching?"

After this, Jesus crossed the Sea of Galilee — otherwise called 6  
the Lake of Tiberias. A great crowd of people, however, followed 2  
him, because they saw the signs of his mission in his work 3  
among those who were sick. Jesus went up the hill, and sat down 4  
there with his disciples. It was near the time of the Jewish Festi- 5  
val of the Passover. Looking up, and noticing that a great crowd 6  
was coming towards him, Jesus said to Philip: "Where are we to 7  
buy bread for these people to eat?" He said this to test him, for  
he himself knew what he meant to do. "Even if we spent a years' 8  
wages on bread," answered Philip, "it would not be enough for 9  
each of them to have a little."

"There is a boy here," said Andrew, another of his disciples, 8  
Simon Peter's brother, "Who has five barley loaves and two 9  
fishes; but what is that for so many?"

"Make the people sit down," said Jesus. It was a grassy spot; 10  
so the people, who numbered about five thousand, sat down, 11  
and then Jesus took the loaves, and, after saying the thanksgiv-  
ing, distributed them to those who were sitting down; and the 12  
same with the fish, giving the people as much as they wanted.  
When they were satisfied, Jesus said to his disciples: "Collect the 13  
broken pieces that are left, so that nothing may be wasted." The  
disciples did so, and filled twelve baskets with the pieces of the 14  
five barley loaves, which were left after all had eaten.

When the people saw the signs which Jesus gave, they said: 14  
"This is certainly 'the prophet who was to come' into the world."

15 But Jesus, having discovered that they were intending to come  
and carry him off to make him king, went again up the hill,  
quite alone.

16 When evening fell, his disciples went down to the Sea, and,  
17 getting into a boat, began to cross to Capernaum. By this time  
darkness had set in, and Jesus had not yet come back to them;  
18 the Sea, too, was getting rough, for a strong wind was blowing.  
19 When they had rowed three or four miles, they caught sight of  
him walking on the water and approaching the boat, and they  
20 were frightened. But Jesus said to them: "It is I; do not be afraid!"  
21 And after this they were glad to take him into the boat; and  
the boat at once arrived off the shore, for which they had been  
making.

22 The people who remained on the further side of the Sea had  
seen that only one boat had been there, and that Jesus had not  
gone into it with his disciples, but that they had left without  
23 him. Some boats, however, had come from Tiberias, from near  
the spot where they had eaten the bread after the Master had  
24 said the thanksgiving. So, on the next day, when the people saw  
that Jesus was not there, or his disciples either, they themselves  
got into the boats, and went to Capernaum to look for him. And,  
25 when they found him on the other side of the Sea, they said:  
"When did you get here, Rabbi?"

26 "In truth I tell you," answered Jesus, "it is not because of the  
signs which you saw that you are looking for me, but because  
27 you had the bread to eat and were satisfied. Work, not for the  
food that perishes, but for the food that lasts for eternal life,  
which the Son of Man will give you; for on him the Father —  
God himself — has set the seal of his approval."

28 "How," they asked, "are we to do the work that God wants  
us to do?"

29 "The work that God wants you to do," answered Jesus, "is to  
believe in him whom God sent as his messenger."

30 "What sign, then," they asked, "are you giving, which we  
may see, and so believe you? What is the work that you are do-  
31 ing? Our ancestors had the manna to eat in the desert; as scrip-



ture says — ‘He gave them bread from heaven to eat.’”

“In truth I tell you,” replied Jesus, “Moses did not give you 32  
the bread from heaven, but my Father does give you the true 33  
bread from heaven; for the bread that God gives is that which 33  
comes down from heaven, and gives life to the world.”

“Master,” they exclaimed, “give us that bread always!” 34

“I am the life-giving bread,” Jesus said to them; “whoever 35  
comes to me will never be hungry, and whoever believes in me 36  
will never thirst again. But, as I have said already, you have seen 36  
me, and yet you do not believe in me. All those whom the Father 37  
gives me will come to me; and no one who comes to me will I 37  
ever turn away. For I have come down from heaven, to do, not 38  
my own will, but the will of him who sent me; and his will is 39  
this — that I should not lose one of all those whom he has given 38  
me, but should raise them up at the Last day. For it is the will of 40  
my Father that everyone who sees the Son, and believes in him, 40  
should have immortal life; and I myself will raise him up at the 40  
Last day.”

The people began murmuring against Jesus for saying — ‘I 41  
am the bread which came down from heaven.’ “Is not this Je- 42  
sus, Joseph’s son,” they asked, “whose father and mother we 42  
know? How is it that he now says that he has come down from 42  
heaven?”

“Do not murmur among yourselves,” said Jesus in reply. “No 43  
one can come to me, unless the Father who sent me draws him 44  
to me; and I will raise him up at the Last day. It is said in the 45  
prophets — ‘And they will all be taught by God.’ Everyone who 45  
is taught by the Father and learns from him comes to me. Not 46  
that anyone has seen the Father, except him who is from God — 46  
he has seen the Father. In truth I tell you, the person who believes 47  
in me has eternal life. I am the life-giving bread. Your ancestors 48  
ate the manna in the desert, and yet died. The bread that comes 49  
down from heaven is such that whoever eats of it will never die. 49  
I am the living bread that has come down from heaven. If any- 50  
one eats of this bread, they will live for ever; and the bread that I 51  
will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.”

They began disputing with one another: “How is it possible 52

for this man to give us his flesh to eat?"

53 "In truth I tell you," answered Jesus, "unless you eat the flesh  
of the Son of Man, and drink his blood, you have not life within  
54 you. Everyone who takes my flesh for their food, and drinks my  
blood, has eternal life; and I will raise them up at the Last day.  
55 For my flesh is true food, and my blood true drink. Everyone  
56 who takes my flesh for their food, and drinks my blood, remains  
57 united to me, and I to them. As the living Father sent me as his  
messenger, and as I live because the Father lives, so the person  
58 who takes me for their food will live because I live. That is the  
bread which has come down from heaven — not such as your  
ancestors ate, and yet died; the person who takes this bread for  
their food will live for ever."

59 All this Jesus said in a Synagogue, when he was teaching in  
60 Capernaum. On hearing it, many of his disciples said: "This is  
61 harsh doctrine! Who can bear to listen to it?" But Jesus, aware  
62 that his disciples were murmuring about it, said to them: "Is this  
63 a hindrance to you? What, then, if you should see the Son of Man  
ascending where he was before? It is the Spirit that gives life; hu-  
man strength achieves nothing. In the teaching that I have been  
64 giving you there is Spirit and there is life. Yet there are some of  
you who do not believe in me." For Jesus knew from the first  
who they were that did not believe in him, and who it was that  
65 would betray him; and he added: "This is why I told you that  
66 no one can come to me, unless enabled by the Father." After this  
many of his disciples drew back, and did not go about with him  
67 any longer. So Jesus said to the Twelve: "Do you also wish to  
68 leave me?" But Simon Peter answered: "Master, to whom would  
69 we go? Eternal life is in your teaching; and we have learned to  
believe and to know that you are the Holy One of God."

70 "Did not I myself choose you to be the Twelve?" replied  
71 Jesus; "and yet, even of you, one is playing the 'devil's' part." He  
meant Judas, the son of Simon Iscariot, who was about to betray  
him, though he was one of the Twelve.

7 After this, Jesus went about in Galilee, for he would not do so  
in Judea, because the religious authorities (in Jerusalem) were

eager to put him to death. When the Jewish Festival of Tabernacles was near, his brothers said to him: "Leave this part of the country, and go into Judea, so that your disciples, as well as we, may see the work that you are doing. For no one does a thing privately, if they are seeking to be widely known. Since you do these things, you should show yourself publicly to the world." For even his brothers did not believe in him.

"My time," answered Jesus, "is not come yet, but your time is always here. The world cannot hate you, but it does hate me, because I testify that its ways are evil. Go yourselves up to the Festival; I am not going to this Festival yet, because my time has not yet come." After telling them this, he stayed on in Galilee.

But, when his brothers had gone up to the Festival, Jesus also went up — not publicly, but privately. The authorities were looking for him at the Festival and asking 'Where is he?'; and there were many whispers about him among the people, some saying 'He is a good man;' others: 'No! He is leading the people astray.' No one, however, spoke freely about him, because they were afraid of the authorities.

About the middle of the Festival week, Jesus went up into the Temple Courts, and began teaching. The authorities were astonished. "How has this man got his learning," they asked, "when he has never studied?" So, in reply, Jesus said: "My teaching is not my own; it is his who sent me. If anyone has the will to do God's will, they will find out whether my teaching is from God, or whether I speak on my own authority. The person who speaks on their own authority seeks honor for themselves; but the person who seeks the honor of him that sent him is sincere, and there is nothing false in him. Was not it Moses who gave you the law? Yet not one of you obeys it! Why are you seeking to put me to death?"

"You must be possessed by a demon!" the people exclaimed. "Who is seeking to put you to death?"

"There was one thing I did," replied Jesus, "at which you are all still wondering. "Is he going to kill himself," they exclaimed, "that he says — 'You cannot go where I am going'?" When a

24 man receives circumcision on a Sabbath to prevent the law of  
25 Moses from being broken, how can you be angry with me for  
26 making a man sound and well on a Sabbath? Do not judge by ap-  
27 pearances; judge justly." At this some of the people of Jerusalem  
28 exclaimed: "Is not this the man who they are seeking to put to  
29 death? Yet here he is, speaking out boldly, and they say nothing  
30 to him! Is it possible that our leading men have really discovered  
31 that he is the Christ? Yet we know where this man is from; but,  
32 when the Christ comes, no one will be able to tell where he is  
33 from." Therefore, Jesus, as he was teaching in the Temple Courts,  
34 raised his voice and said: "Yes; you know me and you know  
35 where I am from. Yet I have not come on my own authority, but  
36 he who sent me may be trusted; and him you do not know. I do  
37 know him, for it is from him that I have come, and he sent me as  
38 his messenger." So they sought to arrest him; but no one touched  
39 him, for his time was not come yet. Many of the people, how-  
40 ever, believed in him. "When the Christ comes," they said, "will  
he give more signs of his mission than this man has given?" The  
Pharisees heard the people whispering about him in this way,  
and so the chief priests and the Pharisees sent officers to arrest  
him; on which Jesus said: "I will be with you but a little longer,  
and then I am going to him who sent me. You will look for me,  
and you will not find me; and you will not be able to come where  
I will be."

35 "Where is this man going," the people asked one another,  
36 "that we would not find him? Will he go to our countrymen  
37 abroad, and teach foreigners? What does he mean by saying  
38 'You will look for me, and you will not find me; and you will not  
39 be able to come where I will be'?"

37 On the last and greatest day of the Festival, Jesus, who was  
38 standing by, exclaimed: "If anyone thirsts, let him come to me,  
39 and drink. I tell you what I have myself seen in the presence of  
40 my Father; and you, in the same way, do what you have learned  
from your father." (By this he meant the Spirit, which those who  
had believed in him were to receive; for the Spirit had not yet  
come, because Jesus had not yet been exalted.) But, as it is, you

are seeking to put me to death — a man who has told you the truth as he heard it from God. Abraham did not act in that way. You are doing what your own father does.”

“We are not bastards,” they said, “we have one Father — God himself.” Is not it said in scripture that it is of the race of David, and from Bethlehem, the village to which David belonged, that the Christ is to come?” So there was a sharp division among the people because of Jesus. Some of them wanted to arrest him, and yet no one touched him. When the officers returned to the chief priests and Pharisees, they were asked: “Why have you not brought him?”

“No one ever spoke as he speaks!” they answered. “What! Have you been led astray too?” the Pharisees replied. “Have any of our leading men believed in him, or any of the Pharisees? As for these people who do not know the Law — they are cursed! But one of their number, Nicodemus, who before this had been to see Jesus, said to them: “Does our law pass judgment on a person without first giving them a hearing, and finding out what they have been doing?”

“Are you also from Galilee?” they retorted. “Search, and you will find that no prophet is to arise in Galilee!”

And everyone went home except Jesus, who went to the Mount of Olives<sup>1</sup>. But he went again into the Temple Courts early in the morning, and all the people came to him; and he sat down and taught them. Presently, however, the Teachers of the Law and the Pharisees brought a woman who had been caught in adultery, and placed her in the middle of the Court, and said to Jesus:

“Teacher, this woman was found in the act of adultery. Now Moses, in the Law, commanded us to stone such women to death; what do you say?”

They said this to test him, in order to have a charge to bring against him. But Jesus stooped down, and wrote on the ground

---

<sup>1</sup>This passage is inserted in some manuscripts from an ancient source, and found either after John 7:53 or after Luke 21.38 or elsewhere.

7 with his finger. However, as they continued asking him, he raised himself, and said:

“Let the person among you who has never done wrong throw the first stone at her.”

8 And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground.  
9 When they heard that, they went out one by one, beginning with the eldest; and Jesus was left alone with the woman in the middle of the Court. Raising himself, Jesus said to her:

“Woman, where are they? Did no one condemn you?”

11 “No one, Sir,” she answered.

“Neither do I condemn you,” said Jesus “go, and do not sin again.”

12 Jesus again addressed the people. “I am the light of the world,” he said. “The person who follows me will not walk in darkness, but will have the light of life.”

13 “You are bearing testimony to yourself!” exclaimed the Pharisees, “your testimony is not trustworthy.”

14 “Even if I bear testimony to myself,” answered Jesus, “my testimony is trustworthy; for I know where I came from, and where I am going; but you do not know where I come from, nor where I am going. You judge by appearances; I judge no one. Yet,  
15 even if I were to judge, my judgment would be trustworthy;  
16 because I am not alone, but the Father who sent me is with me. Why, in your own law it is said that the testimony of two persons  
17 is trustworthy. I, who bear testimony to myself, am one, and the  
18 Father who sent me also bears testimony to me.” “Where is your  
19 father, then?” they asked. “You know neither me nor my Father,” replied Jesus. “If you had known me, you would have also  
20 known my Father.” These statements Jesus made in the Treasury, while teaching in the Temple Courts. Yet no one arrested him, for his time had not then come.

21 Jesus again spoke to the people. “I am going away,” he said, “and you will look for me, but you will die in your sin; you cannot come where I am going.”

22 “Is he going to kill himself,” the people exclaimed, “that

he says — ‘You cannot go where I am going?’” “You,” added 23  
Jesus, “are from below, I am from above; you are of this present 24  
world, I am not; and so I told you that you would die in your 24  
sins, for, unless you believe that I am what I am, you will die in 24  
your sins.”

“Who are you?” they asked. “Why ask exactly what I have 25  
been telling you?” said Jesus. “I have still much that concerns 26  
you to speak of and to pass judgment on; yet he who sent me 26  
may be trusted, and I speak to the world only of the things 27  
which I have heard from him.” They did not understand that 27  
he meant the Father. So Jesus added: “When you have lifted up 28  
the Son of Man, then you will understand that I am what I am, 28  
and that I do nothing of myself, but that I say just what the Fa- 29  
ther has taught me. Moreover, he who sent me is with me; he has 29  
not left me alone; for I always do what pleases him.” While he 30  
was speaking in this way, many came to believe in him. So Jesus 31  
went on to say to those who had believed him: “If you remain 31  
constant to my message, you are truly my disciples; and you find 32  
out the truth, and the truth will set you free.” 32

“We are descendants of Abraham,” was their answer, “and 33  
have never yet been in slavery to anyone. What do you mean by 33  
saying ‘you will be set free?’” “In truth I tell you,” replied Jesus, 34  
“everyone who sins is a slave to sin. And a slave does not remain 35  
in the home always; but a son remains always. If, then, the Son 36  
sets you free, you will be free indeed! I know that you are descen- 37  
dants of Abraham; yet you are seeking to put me to death, be- 38  
cause my message finds no place in your hearts. I tell you what 38  
I have myself seen in the presence of my Father; and you, in the 38  
same way, do what you have learned from your father.”

“Our father is Abraham,” was their answer. “If you are Abra- 39  
ham’s children,” replied Jesus, “do what Abraham did. But, as it 40  
is, you are seeking to put me to death — a man who has told you 40  
the truth as he heard it from God. Abraham did not act in that 41  
way. You are doing what your own father does.” 41

“We are not bastards,” they said, “we have one Father — 42  
God himself.”

“If God were your Father,” Jesus replied, “you would have 42

43 loved me, for I came out from God, and now am here; and I have  
not come of myself, but he sent me as his messenger. How is it  
44 that you do not understand what I say? It is because you cannot  
bear to listen to my message. As for you, you are children of your  
Father the devil, and you are determined to do what your father  
loves to do. He was a murderer from the first, and did not stand  
by the truth, because there is no truth in him. Whenever he lies,  
45 he does what is natural to him; because he is a liar, and the father  
of lying. But, as for me, it is because I speak the truth to you that  
46 you do not believe me. Which of you can convict me of sin? Why  
then do not you believe me, if I am speaking truth? The person  
47 who comes from God listens to God's teaching; the reason why  
you do not listen is because you do not come from God."

48 "Are not we right, after all," replied the people, "in saying  
that you are a Samaritan, and are possessed by a demon?"

49 "I am not possessed by a demon," Jesus answered, "but I am  
50 honoring my Father; and yet you dishonor me. Not that I am  
seeking honor for myself; there is one who is seeking my honor,  
51 and he decides. In truth I tell you, if anyone lays my message to  
heart, he will never really die."

52 "Now we are sure that you are possessed by a demon," the  
people replied. "Abraham died, and so did the prophets; and  
yet you say 'If anyone lays my message to heart, they will never  
53 know death.' Are you greater than our ancestor Abraham, who  
died? And the prophets died too. Whom do you make yourself  
out to be?"

54 "If I do honor to myself," answered Jesus, "such honor  
counts for nothing. It is my Father who does me honor — and  
55 you say that he is your God; and yet you have not learned to  
know him; but I know him; and, if I were to say that I do not  
know him, I should be a liar like you; but I do know him, and I  
56 lay his message to heart. Your ancestor Abraham rejoiced that he  
would see my day; and he did see it, and was glad."

57 "You are not fifty years old yet," the people exclaimed, "and  
have you seen Abraham?"

58 "In truth I tell you," replied Jesus, "before Abraham existed I  
59 was." At this they took up stones to throw at him; but Jesus hid



himself, and left the Temple Courts.

As Jesus passed by, he saw a man who had been blind from his birth. "Rabbi," asked his disciples, "who was it that sinned, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?" 9  
2

"Neither the man nor the parents," replied Jesus; "but he was born blind so that the work of God should be made plain in him. We must do the work of him who sent me, while it is day; night is coming, when no one can work. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world." Saying this, Jesus spat on the ground, made clay with the saliva, and put it on the man's eyes. "Go," he said, "and wash your eyes in the Bath of Siloam" (a word which means 'messenger'). So the man went and washed his eyes, and returned able to see. His neighbors, and those who had formerly known him by sight as a beggar, exclaimed: "Is not this the man who used to sit and beg?" 3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8

"Yes," some said, "it is"; while others said: "No, but he is like him." The man himself said: "I am he." 9

"How did you get your sight, then?" they asked. "The man whom they call Jesus," he answered, "made clay, and anointed my eyes, and said to me 'Go to Siloam and wash your eyes.' So I went and washed my eyes, and gained my sight." 10  
11

"Where is he?" they asked. "I do not know," he answered. They took the man, who had been blind, to the Pharisees. Now it was a Sabbath when Jesus made the clay and gave him his sight. So the Pharisees also questioned the man as to how he had gained his sight. "He put clay on my eyes," he answered, "and I washed them, and I can see." 12  
13  
14  
15

"The man cannot be from God," said some of the Pharisees, "for he does not keep the Sabbath." 16

"How is it possible," retorted others, "for a bad man to give signs like this?" So there was a difference of opinion among them, and they again questioned the man; "What do you yourself say about him, for it is to you that he has given sight?" The religious authorities, however, refused to believe that he had been blind and had gained his sight, until they had called his parents and questioned them. "Is this your son," they asked, 17  
18  
19

“who you say was born blind? If so, how is it that he can see now?”

20 “We know that this is our son,” answered the parents, “and  
21 that he was born blind; but how it is that he can see now we do  
not know; nor do we know who it was that gave him his sight.  
Ask him — he is old enough — he will tell you about himself.”  
22 His parents spoke in this way because they were afraid of the  
authorities; for the authorities had already agreed that, if anyone  
23 should acknowledge Jesus as the Christ, he should be expelled  
from their synagogues. This was why his parents said ‘He is old  
24 enough; ask him.’ So the authorities again called the man who  
had been blind, and said to him: “Give God the praise; we know  
that this is a bad man.”

25 “I know nothing about his being a bad man,” he replied;  
“one thing I do know, that although I was blind, now I can  
see.”

26 “What did he do to you?” they asked. “How did he give you  
your sight?”

27 “I told you just now,” he answered, “and you did not listen.  
Why do you want to hear it again? Surely you also do not want  
to become his disciples?”

28 “You are his disciple,” they retorted scornfully; “but we are  
29 disciples of Moses. We know that God spoke to Moses; but, as  
for this man, we do not know where he comes from.”

30 “Well,” the man replied, “this is very strange; you do not  
know where he comes from, and yet he has given me my sight!  
31 We know that God never listens to bad people, but, when a per-  
son is god-fearing and does God’s will, God listens to them.  
32 Since the world began, such a thing was never heard of as any-  
33 one’s giving sight to a person born blind. If this man had not  
been from God, he could not have done anything at all.”

34 “You,” they retorted, “were born totally depraved; and are  
35 you trying to teach us?” So they expelled him. Jesus heard of  
their having put him out; and, when he had found the man, he  
asked: “Do you believe in the Son of Man?”

36 “Tell me who he is, Sir,” he replied, “so that I may believe  
in him.”

“Not only have you seen him,” said Jesus; “but it is he who is now speaking to you.” 37

“Then, Sir, I do believe,” said the man, bowing to the ground before him; and Jesus added: “It was to put people to the test that I came into this world, in order that those that cannot see should see, and that those that can see should become blind.” Hearing this, some of the Pharisees who were with him said: “Then are we blind too?” 38 39 40

“If you had been blind,” replied Jesus, “you would have had no sin to answer for; but, as it is, you say ‘We can see,’ and so your sin remains. In truth I tell you, whoever does not go into the sheepfold through the door, but climbs up at some other place, that person is a thief and a robber; but the person who goes in through the door is shepherd to the sheep. For him the watchman opens the door; and the sheep listen to his voice; and he calls his own sheep by name, and leads them out. When he has brought them all out, he walks in front of them, and his sheep follow him, because they know his voice. They will not follow a stranger, but will run away from him; because they do not know a stranger’s voice.” This was the allegory that Jesus told them, but they did not understand of what he was speaking. So he continued: “In truth I tell you, I am the door for the sheep. All who came before me were thieves and robbers; but the sheep did not listen to them. I am the door; he who goes in through me will be safe, and he will go in and out and find pasture. The thief comes only to steal, to kill, and to destroy; I have come so that they may have life, and may have it in greater fullness. I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd lays down his life for his sheep. The hired man who is not a shepherd, and who does not own the sheep, when he sees a wolf coming, leaves them and runs away; then the wolf seizes them, and scatters the flock. He does this because he is only a hired man and does not care about the sheep. I am the good shepherd; and I know my sheep, and my sheep know me — Just as the Father knows me and I know the Father — and I lay down my life for the sheep. I have other sheep besides, which do not belong to this fold; I must lead them also, and they will listen to my voice; and they will become one flock 41 10 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14 15 16

17 under 'one shepherd.' This is why the Father loves me, because  
18 I lay down my life — to receive it again. No one took it from me,  
but I lay it down of myself. I have authority to lay it down, and  
I have authority to receive it again. This is the command which I  
19 received from my Father." In consequence of these words a dif-  
20 ference of opinion again arose among the people. Many of them  
said: "He is possessed by a demon and is mad; why do you lis-  
21 ten to him?" Others said: "This is not the teaching of one who is  
possessed by a demon. Can a demon give sight to the blind?"

22 Soon after this the Festival of the Rededication was held at  
23 Jerusalem. It was winter; and Jesus was walking in the Temple  
24 Courts, in the Colonnade of Solomon, when the people gathered  
around him, and said: "How long are you going to keep us in  
suspense? If you are the Christ, tell us so frankly."

25 "I have told you so," replied Jesus, "and you do not believe  
me. The work that I am doing in my Father's name bears testi-  
26 mony to me. But you do not believe me, because you are not of  
27 my flock. My sheep listen to my voice; I know them, and they  
28 follow me; and I give them eternal life, and they will not be lost;  
29 nor will anyone snatch them out of my hands. What my Father  
has entrusted to me is more than all else; and no one can snatch  
30 anything out of the Father's hands. The Father and I are one."

31 Some of the people again brought stones to throw at him;  
32 and seeing this, Jesus said: "I have done before your eyes many  
good actions, inspired by the Father; for which of them would  
you stone me?"

33 "It is not for any good action that we would stone you," they  
answered, "but for blasphemy; and because you, who are only  
a man, make yourself out to be God."

34 "Are there not," replied Jesus, "these words in your law —  
35 'I said "You are gods"?' If those to whom God's word were ad-  
36 dressed were said to be 'gods' — and scripture cannot be set  
aside — Do you say of one whom the Father has consecrated  
and sent as his messenger to the world 'You are blaspheming,'  
37 because I said 'I am God's Son'? If I am not doing the work that  
38 my Father is doing, do not believe me; if I am doing it, even

though you do not believe me, believe what that work shows; so that you may understand, and understand more and more clearly, that the Father is in union with me, and I with the Father." The authorities again sought to arrest him; but he escaped their hands. 39

Then Jesus again crossed the Jordan to the place where John used to baptize at first, and stayed there some time, during which many people came to see him. "John gave no sign of his mission," they said; "but everything that he said about this man was true." And many learned to believe in Jesus there. 40  
41  
42

Now a man named Lazarus, of Bethany, was lying ill; he belonged to the same village as Mary and her sister Martha. This Mary, whose brother Lazarus was ill, was the Mary who anointed the Master with perfume, and wiped his feet with her hair. The sisters, therefore, sent this message to Jesus — 'Master, your friend is ill'; and, when Jesus heard it, he said: "This illness is not to end in death, but is to redound to the honor of God, in order that the Son of God may be honored through it." Jesus loved Martha and her sister, and Lazarus. Yet, when he heard of the illness of Lazarus, he still stayed two days in the place where he was. Then, after that, he said to his disciples: "Let us go to Judea again." 11  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7

"Rabbi," they replied, "the authorities there were but just now seeking to stone you; and are you going there again?" 8

"Are not there twelve hours in the day?" answered Jesus. "If someone walks about in the daytime, they do not stumble, because they can see the light of the sun; but, if they walk about at night, they stumble, because they have not the light." And, when he had said this, he added: "Our friend Lazarus has fallen asleep; but I am going so that I may wake him." 9  
10  
11

"If he has fallen asleep, Master, he will get well," said the disciples. But Jesus meant that he was dead; they, however, supposed that he was speaking of natural sleep. Then he said to them plainly: "Lazarus is dead; and I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, so that you may learn to believe in me. But 12  
13  
14  
15

16 let us go to him." At this, Thomas, who was called 'The Twin,'  
17 said to his fellow disciples: "Let us go too, so that we may die  
18 with him." When Jesus reached the place, he found that Lazarus  
19 had been four days in the tomb already. Bethany being only  
20 about two miles from Jerusalem, a number of the people had  
21 come there to comfort Martha and Mary because of brother's  
22 death. When Martha heard that Jesus was coming, she went  
23 to meet him; but Mary sat quietly at home. "Master," Martha  
24 said to Jesus, "if you had been here, my brother would not have  
25 died. Even now, I know that God will grant you whatever you  
26 ask him."

23 "Your brother will rise to life," said Jesus. "I know that he  
24 will," replied Martha, "in the resurrection at the Last day."

25 "I am the resurrection and the life," said Jesus. "He who  
26 believes in me will live, though he die; and he who lives and  
27 believes in me will never die. Do you believe this?"

28 "Yes Master," she answered; "I have learned to believe that  
29 you are the Christ, the Son of God, 'who was to come' into the  
30 world." After saying this, Martha went and called her sister  
31 Mary, and whispered: "The teacher is here, and is asking for  
32 you." As soon as Mary heard that, she got up quickly, and went  
33 to meet him. Jesus had not then come into the village, but was  
34 still at the place where Martha had met him. So the people, who  
35 were in the house with Mary, comforting her, when they saw her  
36 get up quickly and go out, followed her, thinking that she was  
37 going to the tomb to weep there. When Mary came where Jesus  
38 was and saw him, she threw herself at his feet. "Master," she  
39 exclaimed, "if you had been here, my brother would not have  
died!" When Jesus saw her weeping, and the people who had  
come with her weeping also, he groaned deeply, and was great-  
ly distressed. "Where have you buried him?" he asked. "Come  
and see, Master," they answered. Jesus burst into tears. "How he  
must have loved him!" the people exclaimed; but some of them  
said: "Could not this man, who gave sight to the blind man, have  
also prevented Lazarus from dying?" Again groaning inwardly,  
Jesus came to the tomb. It was a cave, and a stone lay against the  
mouth of it. "Move the stone away," said Jesus. "Master," said

Martha, the sister of the dead man, "by this time the smell must be offensive, for this is the fourth day since his death."

"Did not I tell you," replied Jesus, "that, if you would believe in me, you should see the glory of God?" So they moved the stone away; and Jesus, with uplifted eyes, said: 40 41

"Father, I thank you that you have heard my prayer; I know that you always hear me; but I say this for the sake of the people standing near, so that they may believe that you has sent me as your messenger." 42

Then, after saying this, Jesus called in a loud voice: "Lazarus! Come out!" The dead man came out, wrapped hand and foot in a winding-sheet; his face, too, had been wrapped in a cloth. "Set him free," said Jesus, "and let him go." 43 44

In consequence of this, many of the people, who had come to visit Mary and had seen what Jesus did, learned to believe in him. Some of them, however, went to the Pharisees, and told them what he had done. The chief priests and the Pharisees called a meeting of the High Council, and said: "What are we to do, now that this man is giving so many signs? If we let him alone as we are doing, everyone will believe in him; and the Romans will come and will take from us both our city and our Nationality." One of them, however, Caiaphas, who was high priest that year, said to them: "You are utterly mistaken. You do not consider that it is better for you that one person should die for the people, rather than the whole nation should be destroyed." Now he did not say this of his own accord; but, as high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus was to die for the nation — And not for the nation only, but also that he might unite in one body the children of God now scattered far and wide. So from that day they plotted to put Jesus to death. 45 46 47 48 49 50 51 52 53

In consequence of this, Jesus did not go about publicly among the people any more, but left that neighborhood, and went into the country bordering on the wilderness, to a town called 54

55 Ephraim, where he stayed with his disciples. But the Jewish Festival of the Passover was near; and many people had gone up from the country to Jerusalem, for their 'purification,' before the  
 56 Festival began. So they looked for Jesus there, and said to one another, as they stood in the Temple Courts: "What do you think?  
 57 Do you think he will come to the Festival?" The chief priests and the Pharisees had already issued orders that, if anyone learned where Jesus was, he should give information, so that they might arrest him.

### *The Last Days*

12 SIX DAYS BEFORE THE PASSOVER JESUS CAME TO BETHANY, where Lazarus, whom he had raised from the dead, was living. There  
 2 a supper was given in honor at which Martha waited, while  
 3 Lazarus was one of those present at the table. So Mary took a pound of choice spikenard perfume of great value, and anointed the feet of Jesus with it, and then wiped them with her hair. The  
 4 whole house was filled with the scent of the perfume. One of the disciples, Judas Iscariot, who was about to betray Jesus, asked:  
 5 "Why was not this perfume sold for a year's wages, and the  
 6 money given to poor people?" He said this, not because he cared for the poor, but because he was a thief, and, being in charge of  
 7 the purse, used to take what was put in it. "Leave her alone," said Jesus, "so that she may keep it until the day when my body  
 8 is being prepared for burial. The poor you always have with you, but you will not always have me."

9 Now great numbers of people found out that Jesus was at Bethany; and they came there, not only because of him, but also to see Lazarus, whom he had raised from the dead. The  
 10 chief priests, however, plotted to put Lazarus, as well as Jesus, to death, because it was owing to him that many of the people  
 11 had left them, and were becoming believers in Jesus. On the following day great numbers of people who had come to the Festival, hearing that Jesus was on his way to Jerusalem, took palm  
 12 branches, and went out to meet him, shouting as they went:  
 13 "'God save Him! Blessed is He who Comes in the name of the



Lord' — The king of Israel!" Having found a young ass, Jesus seated himself on it, in accordance with the passage of scripture — 'Fear not, people of Zion; Your king is coming to you, Sitting on the foal of an ass.' His disciples did not understand all this at first; but, when Jesus had been exalted, then they remembered that these things had been said of him in scripture, and that they had done these things for him. Meanwhile the people who were with him, when he called Lazarus out of the tomb and raised him from the dead, were telling what they had seen. This, indeed, was why the crowd met him — because people had heard that he had given this sign of his mission. So the Pharisees said to one another: "You see that you are gaining nothing! Why, all the world has run after him!"

Among those who were going up to worship at the Festival were some Greeks, who went to Philip of Bethsaida in Galilee, and said: "Sir, we wish to see Jesus." Philip went and told Andrew, and then together they went and told Jesus. This was his reply — "The time has come for the Son of Man to be exalted. In truth I tell you, unless a grain of wheat falls into the ground and dies, it remains solitary; but, if it dies, it becomes fruitful. A person who loves their life loses it; while someone who hates their life in the present world will preserve it for eternal life. If someone is ready to serve me, let them follow me; and where I am, there my servant will be also. If a person is ready to serve me, my Father will honor them. Now I am distressed at heart and what can I say? Father, bring me safe through this hour — yet it was for this reason that I came to this hour — Father, honor your own name." At this there came a voice from heaven, which said: "I have already honored it, and I will honor it again." The crowd of bystanders, who heard the sound, said that it was thundering. Others said: "An angel has been speaking to him."

"It was not for my sake that the voice came," said Jesus, "but for yours. Now this world is on its trial. Now the Spirit that is ruling this world will be driven out; and I, when I am lifted up from the earth, will draw all people to myself." By these words he indicated what death he was destined to die. "We," replied

the people, "have learned from the law that the 'Christ is to remain for ever'; how is it, then, that you say that the Son of Man must be 'lifted up' Who is this 'Son of Man'?"

35 "Only a little while longer," answered Jesus, "will you have  
the light among you. Travel on while you have the light, so that  
darkness may not overtake you; he who travels in the darkness  
36 does not know where he is going. While you still have the light,  
believe in the light, so that you may be 'children of light.'" After  
he had said this, Jesus went away, and hid himself from them.  
37 But, though Jesus had given so many signs of his mission before  
38 their eyes, they still did not believe in him, in fulfillment of the  
words of the prophet Isaiah, where he says — 'Lord, who has  
believed our teaching? And to whom has the might of the Lord  
39 been revealed?' The reason why they were unable to believe is  
40 given by Isaiah elsewhere, in these words — 'He has blinded  
their eyes, and blunted their mind, so that they should not see  
with their eyes, and perceive with their mind, and turn — And I  
41 should heal them.' Isaiah said this, because he saw Christ's glo-  
42 ry; and it was of him that he spoke. Yet for all this, even among  
the leading men there were many who came to believe in Jesus;  
but, because of the Pharisees, they did not acknowledge it, be-  
cause they were afraid that they should be expelled from their  
43 Synagogues; for they valued honor from people more than hon-  
44 or from God. But Jesus had proclaimed: "He who believes in me  
45 believes, not in me, but in him who sent me; and he who sees  
me sees him who sent me. I have come as a light into the world,  
46 so that no one who believes in me should remain in the dark-  
47 ness. When anyone hears my teaching and pays no heed to it, I  
am not his judge; for I came not to judge the world, but to save  
48 the world. He who rejects me, and disregards my teaching, has  
a judge already — the message which I have delivered will it-  
49 self be his judge at the Last day. For I have not delivered it on  
my own authority; but the Father, who sent me, has himself giv-  
50 en me his command as to what I should say, and what message  
I should deliver. And I know that eternal life lies in keeping his  
command. Therefore, whatever I say, I say only what the Father  
has taught me."

Before the Passover Festival began, Jesus knew that the time had 13  
come for him to leave the world and go to the Father. He had  
loved those who were his own in the world, and he loved them  
to the last. The devil had already put the thought of betraying Je- 2  
sus into the mind of Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon; and at sup- 3  
per, Jesus — although knowing that the Father had put every-  
thing into his hands, and that he had come from God, and was  
to return to God — Rose from his place, and, taking off his upper 4  
garments, tied a towel around his waist. He then poured some 5  
water into the basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and  
to wipe them with the towel which was tied around him. When 6  
he came to Simon Peter, Peter said: "You, Master! Are you going  
to wash my feet?"

"You do not understand now what I am doing," replied 7  
Jesus, "but you will learn by and by."

"You will never wash my feet!" exclaimed Peter. "Unless 8  
I wash you," answered Jesus, "you have nothing in common  
with me."

"Then, Master, not my feet only," exclaimed Simon Peter, 9  
"but also my hands and my head."

"He who has bathed," replied Jesus, "has no need to wash, 10  
unless it be his feet, but is altogether clean; and you," he said to  
the disciples, "are clean, yet not all of you." For he knew who 11  
was going to betray him, and that was why he said 'You are not  
all clean.' When he had washed their feet, and had put on his 12  
upper garments and taken his place, he spoke to them again.  
"Do you understand what I have been doing to you?" he asked.  
"You yourselves call me 'the teacher' and 'the Master', and you 13  
are right, for I am both. If I, then — 'the Master' and 'the teacher'  
— have washed your feet, you also ought to wash one another's 14  
feet; for I have given you an example, so that you may do just as I  
have done to you. In truth I tell you, a servant is not greater than 15  
their master, nor yet a messenger than the one who sends them.  
Now that you know these things, happy are you if you do them. 17  
I am not speaking about all of you. I know whom I have chosen;  
but this is in fulfillment of the words of scripture — 'He that is 18  
eating my bread has lifted his heel against me.' For the future I 19

20 will tell you of things before they take place, so that, when they  
take place, you may believe that I am what I am. In truth I tell  
you, the one who receives anyone that I send receives me; and  
the person who receives me receives him who sent me." After  
21 saying this, Jesus was much troubled, and said solemnly: "In  
22 truth I tell you that it is one of you who will betray me." The dis-  
ciples looked at one another, wondering whom he meant. Next  
23 to Jesus, in the place on his right hand, was one of his disciples,  
whom he loved. So Simon Peter made signs to that disciple, and  
24 whispered: "Tell me who it is that he means." Being in this posi-  
25 tion, that disciple leant back on Jesus' shoulder, and asked him:  
"Who is it, Master?"

26 "It is the one," answered Jesus, "to whom I will give a piece  
of bread after dipping it in the dish." And, when Jesus had  
dipped the bread, he took it and gave it to Judas, the son of Si-  
27 mon Iscariot; and it was then, after he had received it, that Satan  
took possession of him. So Jesus said to him: "Do at once what  
28 you are going to do." But no one at the table understood why  
he said this to Judas. Some thought that, as Judas kept the purse,  
29 Jesus meant that he was to buy some things needed for the Fes-  
30 tival, or to give something to the poor. After taking the piece of  
bread, Judas went out immediately; and it was night.

31 When Judas had gone out, Jesus said: "Now the Son of Man has  
32 been exalted, and God has been exalted through him; and God  
will exalt him with himself — yes, he will exalt him forthwith.  
33 My children, I am to be with you but a little while longer. You  
will look for me; and what I said to the people — 'You cannot  
34 come where I am going' — I now say to you. I give you a new  
commandment — love one another; love one another as I have  
35 loved you. It is by this that everyone will recognize you as my  
disciples — by your loving one another."

36 "Where are you going, Master?" asked Peter. "I am going  
where you cannot now follow me," answered Jesus, "but you  
will follow me later."

37 "Why cannot I follow you now, Master?" asked Peter. "I will  
lay down my life for you."

“Will you lay down your life for me?” replied Jesus. “In truth I tell you, the cock will not crow until you have disowned me three times. Do not let your hearts be troubled. Believe in God; believe also in me. In my Father’s Home there are many dwellings. If it had not been so, I should have told you, for I am going to prepare a place for you. And, since I go and prepare a place for you, I will return and take you to be with me, so that you may be where I am; and you know the way to the place where I am going.”

“We do not know where you are going, Master,” said Thomas; “so how can we know the way?” Jesus answered: “I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one ever comes to the Father except through me. If you had recognized me, you would have known my Father also; for the future you will recognize him, indeed you have already seen him.”

“Master, show us the Father,” said Philip, “and we will be satisfied.”

“Have I been all this time among you,” said Jesus, “and yet you, Philip, have not recognized me? The person who has seen me has seen the Father, how can you say, then, ‘Show us the Father’? Do not you believe that I am in union with the Father, and the Father with me? In giving you my teaching I am not speaking on my own authority; but the Father himself, always in union with me, does his own work. Believe me,” he said to them all, “when I say that I am in union with the Father and the Father with me, or else believe me because of the work itself. In truth I tell you, the person who believes in me will themselves do the work that I am doing; and they will do greater work still, because I am going to the Father. Whatever you ask, in my name, I will do, so that the Father may be honored in the Son. If you ask anything, in my name, I will do it. If you love me, you will lay my commands to heart, and I will ask the Father, and he will give you another helper, to be with you always — the Spirit of truth. The world cannot receive this Spirit, because it does not see him or recognize him, but you recognize him, because he is always with you, and is within you. I will not leave you bereaved; I will come to you. In a little while the world will see me no more, but

20 you will still see me; because I am living, you will be living also.  
21 At that time you will recognize that I am in union with the Father, and you with me, and I with you. It is they who have my commands and lays them to heart that loves me; and the person who loves me will be loved by my Father, and I will love them, and will reveal myself to them."

22 "What has happened, Master," said Judas (not Judas Iscariot), "that you are going to reveal yourself to us, and not to the world?"

23 "Whoever loves me," Jesus answered, "will lay my message to heart; and my Father will love him, and we will come to him and make our home with him. The person who does not love me will not lay my message to heart; and the message to which you are listening is not my own, but comes from the Father who sent me. I have told you all this while still with you, but the helper — the Holy Spirit whom the Father will send in my name — will teach you all things, and will recall to your minds all that I have said to you. Peace be with you! My own peace I give you. I do not give to you as the world gives. Do not let your hearts be troubled, or dismayed. You heard me say that I was going away and would return to you. Had you loved me, you would have been glad that I was going to the Father, because the Father is greater than I. And this I have told you now before it happens, so that, when it does happen, you may still believe in me. I will not talk with you much more, for the Spirit that is ruling the world is coming. He has nothing in common with me; but he is coming so that the world may see that I love the Father, and that I do as the Father commanded me. Come, let us be going.

15 I am the True Vine, and my Father is the Vine-grower. Any un-  
2 fruitful branch in me he takes away, and he cleanses every fruit-  
3 ful branch, so that it may bear more fruit. You are already clean  
4 because of the message that I have given you. Remain united  
5 to me, and I will remain united to you. As a branch cannot bear fruit by itself, unless it remains united to the vine; no more can you, unless you remain united to me. I am the Vine, you are the branches. If you remains united to me, while I remain unit-

ed to you — you bear fruit plentifully; for you can do nothing  
6 apart from me. If anyone does not remain united to me, they  
are thrown away, as a branch would be, and withers up. Such  
7 branches are collected and thrown into the fire, and are burnt.  
8 If you remain united to me, and my teaching remains in your  
9 hearts, ask whatever you wish, and it will be yours. It is by your  
10 bearing fruit plentifully, and so showing yourselves my disci-  
11 ples, that my Father is honored. As the Father has loved me, so  
12 have I loved you; remain in my love. If you lay my commands  
13 to heart, you will remain in my love; just as I have laid the Fa-  
14 ther's commands to heart and remain in his love. I have told you  
15 all this so that my own joy may be yours, and that your joy may  
16 be complete. This is my command — love one another, as I have  
17 loved you. No one can give greater proof of love than by laying  
18 down their life for their friends. And you are my friends, if you  
19 do what I command you. I no longer call you 'servants,' because  
20 a servant does not know what their master is doing; but I have  
21 given you the name of 'friends,' because I made known to you  
22 everything that I learned from my Father. It was not you who  
23 chose me, but I who chose you, and I appointed you to go and  
24 bear fruit — fruit that should remain, so that the Father might  
25 grant you whatever you ask in my name. I am giving you these  
commands that you may love one another. If the world hates  
you, you know that it has first hated me. If you belonged to the  
world, the world would love its own. Because you do not belong  
to the world, but I have chosen you out of the world — that is  
why the world hates you. Remember what I said to you — 'A  
servant is not greater than their master.' If they have persecuted  
me, they will also persecute you; if they have laid my message to  
heart, they will lay yours to heart also. But they will do all this to  
you, because you believe in my name, for they do not know him  
who sent me. If I had not come and spoken to them, they would  
have had no sin to answer for; but as it is, they have no excuse  
for their sin. The person who hates me hates my Father also. If  
I had not done among them such work as no one else ever did,  
they would have had no sin to answer for; but, as it is, they have  
both seen and hated both me and my Father. And so is fulfilled

26 what is said in their law — ‘They hated me without cause.’ But,  
when the helper comes, whom I will send to you from the Father — the Spirit of truth, who comes from the Father — will  
27 bear testimony to me; yes, and you also are to bear testimony,  
16 because you have been with me from the first. I have spoken to  
you in this way so that you may not falter. They will expel you  
2 from their Synagogues; indeed the time is coming when anyone who kills you will think that they are making an offering to  
3 God. They will do this, because they have not learned to know  
4 the Father, or even me. But I have spoken to you of these things  
so that, when the time for them comes, you may remember that  
5 I told you about them myself. I did not tell you all this at first,  
because I was with you. But now I am to return to him who sent  
me; and yet not one of you asks me — ‘Where are you going?’ Although your hearts are full of sorrow at all that I have been saying  
6 to you. Yet I am only telling you the truth; it is for your good  
7 that I should go away. For otherwise the helper will never come  
to you, but, if I leave you, I will send him to you. And he, when  
8 he comes, will bring conviction to the world as to sin, and as to  
righteousness, and as to judgment; as to sin, for people do not  
9 believe in me; as to righteousness, for I am going to the Father,  
10 and you will see me no longer; as to judgment, for the Spirit that  
is ruling this world has been condemned. I have still much to say  
11 to you, but you cannot bear it now. Yet when he — The Spirit of  
12 truth — comes, he will guide you into all truth; for he will not  
13 speak on his own authority, but he will speak of all that he hears;  
and he will tell you of the things that are to come. He will honor  
14 me; because he will take of what is mine, and will tell it to you.  
Everything that the Father has is mine; that is why I said that he  
15 takes of what is mine, and will tell it to you. In a little while you  
16 will no longer see me; and then in a little while you will see me  
indeed.” At this some of his disciples said to one another: “What  
17 does he mean by saying to us ‘In a little while you will not see  
me, and then in a little while you will see me indeed’; and by saying  
18 ‘Because I am going to the Father’? What does he mean by ‘In  
a little while’?” they said; “we do not know what he is speaking  
19 about.” Jesus saw that they were wanting to ask him a question,



and said: "Are you trying to find out from one another what I meant by saying 'In a little while you will not see me; and then in a little while you will see me indeed'? In truth I tell you that you will weep and mourn, but the world will rejoice; you will suffer pain, but your pain will turn to joy. A woman in labor is in pain because her time has come; but no sooner is the child born, than she forgets her trouble in her joy that a child has been born into the world. You, in the same way, are sorry now; but I will see you again, and your hearts will rejoice, and no one will rob you of your joy. And at that time you will not ask me anything; in truth I tell you, if you ask the Father for anything, he will grant it to you in my name. So far you have not asked for anything, in my name; ask, and you will receive, so that your joy may be complete. I have spoken to you of all this in figures; a time is coming, however, when I will not speak any longer to you in figures, but will tell you about the Father plainly. You will ask, at that time, in my name; and I do not say that I will intercede with the Father for you; for the Father himself loves you, because you have loved me, and have believed that I came from the Father. I came out from the Father, and have come into the world; and now I am to leave the world, and go to the Father."

"At last," exclaimed the disciples, "you are using plain words and not speaking in figures at all. Now we are sure that you know everything, and need not wait for anyone to question you. This makes us believe that you did come from God."

"Do you believe that already?" Jesus answered. "Listen! A time is coming — indeed it has already come — when you are to be scattered, each going his own way, and to leave me alone; and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me. I have spoken to you in this way, so that in me you may find peace. In the world you will find trouble; yet, take courage! I have conquered the world."

After saying this, Jesus raised his eyes heaven-wards, and said: 17

"Father, the hour has come; honor your Son, so that your Son may honor you; even as you gave him power over all humanity, 2

3 so that he should give eternal life to all those whom you has given  
4 him. And the eternal life is this — to know you the one true  
5 God, and Jesus Christ whom you has sent as your messenger. I  
6 have honored you on earth by completing the work which you  
7 has given me to do; and now do you honor me, Father, at your  
8 own side, with the honor which I had at your side before the  
9 world began. I have revealed you to those whom you gave me  
10 from the world; they were your own, and you gave them to me;  
11 and they have laid your message to heart. They recognize now  
12 that everything that you gave me was from you; for I have given  
13 them the teaching which you gave me, and they received it,  
14 and clearly understood that I came from you, and they believed  
15 that you has sent me as your messenger. I intercede for them; I  
16 am not interceding for the world, but for those whom you has  
17 given me, for they are your own — All that is mine is yours, and  
18 all that is yours is mine — and I am honored in them. Now I am  
19 to be in this world no longer, but they are still to be in the world,  
20 and I am to come to you. Holy Father, keep them by that revelation  
21 of your name which you has given me, so that they may be  
22 one, as we are. Whilst I was with them, I kept them by that revelation,  
and I have guarded them; and not one of them has been lost,  
except that lost soul — in fulfillment of scripture. But now I am  
to come to you; and I am speaking like this, while still in the  
world, so that they may have my own joy, in all its fullness,  
in their hearts. I have given them your message; and the world  
hated them, because they do not belong to the world, even as I  
do not belong to the world. I do not ask you to take them out of  
the world, but to keep them from evil. They do not belong to the  
world, even as I do not belong to the world. Consecrate them by  
the truth; your message is truth. Just as you has sent me as your  
messenger to the world, so I send them as my messengers to the  
world. And it is for their sakes that I am consecrating myself,  
so that they also may be truly consecrated. But it is not only for  
them that I am interceding, but also for those who believe in me  
through their message, that they all may be one — that as you,  
Father, are in union with us — and so the world may believe that  
you have sent me as your messenger. I have given them the hon-

or which you has given me, so that they may be one as we are  
one — I in union with them and you with me — that so they may  
be perfected in their union, and so that the world may know that  
you have sent me as your messenger, and that you have loved  
them as you have loved me. Father, my desire for all those whom  
you have given me is that they may be with me where I am, so  
that they may see the honor which you have given me; for thou  
did love me before the beginning of the world. Righteous Father,  
though the world did not know you, I knew you; and these  
people knew that you have sent me as your messenger. I have  
made you known to them, and will do so still; that the love that  
you have had for me may be in their hearts, and that I may be in  
them also.”

When Jesus had said this, he went out with his disciples and  
crossed the brook Kedron to a place where there was a garden,  
into which he and his disciples went. The place was well known  
to Judas, the betrayer, for Jesus and his disciples had often met  
there. So Judas, who had obtained the soldiers of the Roman  
garrison, and some police officers from the chief priests and the  
Pharisees, came there with lanterns, torches, and weapons. Jesus,  
aware of all that was coming upon him, went to meet them,  
and said to them: “For whom are you looking?”

“Jesus of Nazareth,” was their answer. “I am he,” said Jesus.  
(Judas, the betrayer, was also standing with them.) When Jesus  
said ‘I am he,’ they drew back and fell to the ground. So he again  
asked for whom they were looking, and they answered: “Jesus  
of Nazareth.”

“I have already told you that I am he,” replied Jesus, “so, if  
it is for me that you are looking, let these people go.” This was  
in fulfillment of his words — ‘Of those whom you have given  
me I have not lost one.’ At this, Simon Peter, who had a sword  
with him, drew it, and struck the high priest’s servant, and cut  
off his right ear. The servant’s name was Malchus. But Jesus said  
to Peter: “Sheathe your sword. Should I not drink the cup which  
the Father has given me?”

12 So the soldiers of the garrison, with their commanding officer  
13 and the Jewish police, arrested Jesus and bound him, and took  
14 him first of all to Annas. Annas was the father-in-law of Caiaphas, who was high priest that year. It was Caiaphas who had counseled the religious authorities, that it was best that one person should die for the people. Meanwhile Simon Peter followed Jesus, and so did another disciple. That disciple, being well-known to the high priest, went with Jesus into the high priest's courtyard, while Peter stood outside by the door. Presently the other disciple — the one well-known to the high priest — went out and spoke to the portress, and brought Peter in. So the maid-servant said to Peter: "Are not you also one of this man's disciples?"

18 "No, I am not," he said. The servants and police officers were standing around a charcoal fire (which they had made because it was cold), and were warming themselves. Peter, too, was with them, standing and warming himself. The high priest questioned Jesus about his disciples and about his teaching. "For my part," answered Jesus, "I have spoken to all the world openly. I always taught in some Synagogue, or in the Temple Courts, places where everyone assembles, and I never spoke of anything in secret. Why question me? Question those who have listened to me as to what I have spoken about to them. They must know what I said." When Jesus said this, one of the police officers, who was standing near, gave him a blow with his hand. "Do you answer the high priest like that?" he exclaimed. "If I said anything wrong, give evidence about it," replied Jesus; "but if not, why do you strike me?" Annas sent him bound to Caiaphas the high priest. Meanwhile Simon Peter was standing there, warming himself; so they said to him: "Are not you also one of his disciples?" Peter denied it. "No, I am not," he said. One of the high priest's servants, a relation of the man whose ear Peter had cut off, exclaimed: "Did not I myself see you with him in the garden?" Peter again denied it; and at that moment a cock crowed.

28 From Caiaphas they took Jesus to the Government house. It was

early in the morning. But they did not enter the Government house themselves, otherwise they might become 'defiled,' and so be unable to eat the Passover. Therefore Pilate came outside to speak to them. "What charge do you bring against this man?" he asked. "If he had not been a criminal, we should not have given him up to you," they answered. "Take him yourselves," said Pilate, "and try him by your own law."

"We have no power to put anyone to death," the authorities replied — In fulfillment of what Jesus had said when indicating the death that he was destined to die. After that, Pilate went into the Government house again, and calling Jesus up, asked him: "Are you the king of the Jews?"

"Do you ask me that yourself?" replied Jesus, "or did others say it to you about me?"

"Do you take me for a Jew?" was Pilate's answer. "It is your own nation and the chief priests who have given you up to me. What have you done?"

"My kingly power," replied Jesus, "is not due to this world. If it had been so, my servants would be doing their utmost to prevent my being given up to the authorities; but my kingly power is not from the world."

"So you are a king after all!" exclaimed Pilate. "Yes, it is true I am a king," answered Jesus. "I was born for this, I have come into the world for this — to bear testimony to the truth. Everyone who is on the side of truth listens to my voice."

"What is truth?" exclaimed Pilate. After saying this, he went out to the crowd again, and said: "For my part, I find nothing with which he can be charged. It is, however, the custom for me to grant you the release of one man at the Passover Festival. Do you wish for the release of the king of the Jews?"

"No, not this man," they shouted again, "but Barabbas!" This Barabbas was a robber.

After that, Pilate had Jesus scourged. The soldiers made a crown with some thorns and put it on his head and threw a purple robe around him. They kept coming up to him and saying: "Long live the king of the Jews!" and they gave him blow after blow with

4 their hands. Pilate again came outside, and said to the people:  
5 "Look! I am bringing him out to you, so that you may know that  
6 I find nothing with which he can be charged." Then Jesus came  
outside, wearing the crown of thorns and the purple robe; and  
Pilate said to them: "Here is the man!" When the chief priests  
and the police officers saw him, they shouted: "Crucify him!  
Crucify him!"

"Take him yourselves and crucify him," said Pilate. "For my  
part, I find nothing with which he can be charged."

7 "But we," replied the crowd, "have a law, under which he  
deserves death for making himself out to be the Son of God."  
8 When Pilate heard what they said, he became still more alarmed;  
9 and, going into the Government house again, he said to Jesus:  
10 "Where do you come from?" But Jesus made no reply. So Pi-  
late said to him: "Do you refuse to speak to me? Do not you  
know that I have power to release you, and have power to cruci-  
fy you?"

11 "You would have no power over me at all," answered Jesus,  
"if it had not been given you from above; and, therefore, the man  
12 who betrayed me to you is guilty of the greater sin." This made  
Pilate anxious to release him; but the crowd shouted: "If you re-  
lease that man, you are no friend of the Emperor! Anyone who  
13 makes himself out to be a king is setting himself against the Em-  
peror!" On hearing what they said, Pilate brought Jesus out, and  
took his seat on the Bench at a place called 'The Stone Pavement'  
14 — in Hebrew 'Gabbatha.' It was the Passover Preparation day,  
and about noon. Then he said to the crowd: "Here is your king!"  
15 At that the people shouted: "Kill him! Kill him! Crucify him!"

16 "What! Should I crucify your king?" exclaimed Pilate. "We  
have no king but the Emperor," replied the chief priests; so Pilate  
gave Jesus up to them to be crucified.

17 and he went out, carrying his cross himself, to the place which  
18 is named from a scull, or, in Hebrew, Golgotha. There they cruci-  
fied him, and two others with him — one on each side, and Je-  
19 sus between them. Pilate also had these words written and put  
up over the cross — 'JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF

THE JEWS.' These words were read by many people, because 20  
the place where Jesus was crucified was near the city; and they  
were written in Hebrew, Latin and Greek. The chief priests said 21  
to Pilate: "Do not write 'The king of the Jews', but write what  
the man said — 'I am the king of the Jews.'" But Pilate answered: 22  
"What I have written, I have written."

When the soldiers had crucified Jesus, they took his clothes and 23  
divided them into four shares — a share for each soldier — and  
they took the coat also. The coat had no seam, being woven in 24  
one piece from top to bottom. So they said to one another: "Do  
not let us tear it, but let us cast lots for it, to see who will have it."  
This was in fulfillment of the words of scripture —

'They shared my clothes among them,  
And over my clothing they cast lots.'

That was what the soldiers did. Meanwhile near the cross of 25  
Jesus were standing his mother and his mother's sister, as well  
as Mary the wife of Clopas and Mary of Magdala. When Jesus 26  
saw his mother, and the disciple whom he loved, standing near,  
he said to his mother: "There is your son." Then he said to that 27  
disciple: "There is your mother." And from that very hour the  
disciple took her to live in his house.

Afterwards, knowing that everything was now finished, Jesus 28  
said, in fulfillment of the words of scripture: "I am thirsty." There  
was a bowl standing there full of common wine; so they put 29  
a sponge soaked in the wine on the end of a hyssop-stalk, and  
held it up to his mouth. When Jesus had received the wine, he 30  
exclaimed: "All is finished!" Then, bowing his head, he resigned  
his spirit to God. It was the Preparation day, and so, to prevent 31  
the bodies from remaining on the crosses during the Sabbath (for  
that Sabbath was a great day), the Jews asked Pilate to have the  
legs broken and the bodies removed. Accordingly the soldiers 32  
came and broke the legs of the first man, and then those of the  
other who had been crucified with Jesus; but, on coming to him, 33

34 when they saw that he was already dead, they did not break his  
35 legs. One of the soldiers, however, pierced his side with a spear,  
and blood and water immediately flowed from it. This is the  
statement of one who actually saw it — and his statement may  
be relied on, and he knows that he is speaking the truth — and it  
36 is given in order that you also may be convinced. For all this hap-  
pened in fulfillment of the words of scripture — ‘Not one of its  
37 bones will be broken.’ And there is another passage which says  
38 — ‘They will look on him whom they pierced.’ After this, Joseph  
of Ramah, a disciple of Jesus — but a secret one, owing to his  
fear of the religious authorities — begged Pilate’s permission to  
remove the body of Jesus. Pilate gave him leave; so Joseph went  
39 and removed the body. Nicodemus, too — the man who had for-  
merly visited Jesus by night — came with a roll of myrrh and  
40 aloes, weighing nearly a hundred pounds. They took the body  
of Jesus, and wound it in linen with the spices, according to the  
41 Jewish mode of burial. At the place where Jesus had been cruci-  
fied there was a garden, and in the garden a newly made tomb  
42 in which no one had ever been laid. And so, because of its being  
the Preparation day, and as the tomb was close at hand, they laid  
Jesus there.

### *The Risen Life*

20 ON THE FIRST DAY OF THE WEEK, early in the morning, while it was  
still dark, Mary of Magdala went to the tomb, and saw that the  
2 stone had been removed. So she came running to Simon Peter,  
and to that other disciple who was Jesus’ friend, and said to  
them: “They have taken away the Master out of the tomb, and  
3 we do not know where they have laid him!” So, Peter started off  
with that other disciple, and they went to the tomb. The two be-  
4 gan running together; but the other disciple ran faster than Pe-  
ter, and reached the tomb first. Stooping down, he saw the linen  
5 wrappings lying there, but did not go in. Presently Simon Pe-  
6 ter came following behind him, and went into the tomb; and he  
7 looked at the linen wrappings lying there, and the cloth which  
had been on Jesus’ head, not lying with the wrappings, but



rolled up on one side, separately. Then the other disciple, who had reached the tomb first, went inside too, and he saw for himself and was convinced. For they did not then understand the passage of scripture which says that Jesus must rise again from the dead. The disciples then returned to their companions.

Meanwhile Mary was standing close outside the tomb, weeping. Still weeping, she leant forward into the tomb, and perceived two angels clothed in white sitting there, where the body of Jesus had been lying, one where the head and the other where the feet had been. "Why are you weeping?" asked the angels. "They have taken my Master away," she answered, "and I do not know where they have laid him." After saying this, she turned around, and looked at Jesus standing there, but she did not know that it was Jesus. "Why are you weeping? Whom are you seeking?" he asked. Supposing him to be the gardener, Mary answered: "If it was you, Sir, who carried him away, tell me where you have laid him, and I will take him away myself."

"Mary!" said Jesus. She turned around, and exclaimed in Hebrew: "Rabboni!" (or, as we should say, 'teacher'). "Do not hold me," Jesus said; "for I have not yet ascended to the Father. But go to my brothers, and tell them that I am ascending to him who is my Father and their Father, my God and their God." Mary of Magdala went and told the disciples that she had seen the Master, and that he had said this to her.

In the evening of the same day — the first day of the week — after the doors of the room, in which the disciples were, had been shut because they were afraid of the religious authorities, Jesus came and stood among them and said: "Peace be with you"; after which he showed them his hands and his side. The disciples were filled with joy when they saw the Master. Again Jesus said to them: "Peace be with you. As the Father has sent me as his messenger, so I am sending you." After saying this, he breathed on them, and said: "Receive the Holy Spirit; if you remit anyone's sins, they have been remitted; and, if you retain them, they have been retained."

24 But Thomas, one of the Twelve, called 'The Twin,' was not with  
25 them when Jesus came; so the rest of the disciples said to him:  
"We have seen the Master!"

"Unless I see the marks of the nails in his hands," he ex-  
claimed, "and put my finger into the marks, and put my hand  
26 into his side, I will not believe it." A week later the disciples were  
again in the house, and Thomas with them. After the doors had  
been shut, Jesus came and stood among them, and said: "Peace  
27 be with you." Then he said to Thomas: "Place your finger here,  
and look at my hands; and place your hand here, and put it into  
28 my side; and do not refuse to believe, but believe." And Thomas  
exclaimed: "My Master, and my God!"

29 "Is it because you have seen me that you have believed?"  
said Jesus. "Blessed are they who have not seen, and yet have  
believed!"

30 There were many other signs of his mission that Jesus gave in  
presence of the disciples, which are not recorded in this book;  
31 but these have been recorded so that you may believe that Jesus  
is the Christ, the Son of God — and that, through your belief in  
his name, you may have life.

**21** Later on, Jesus showed himself again to the disciples by the Sea  
2 of Tiberias. It was in this way: — Simon Peter, Thomas, who was  
called 'The Twin,' Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, Zebedee's sons,  
and two other disciples of Jesus, were together, when Simon  
3 Peter said: "I am going fishing."

"We will come with you," said the others. They went out and  
4 got into the boat, but caught nothing that night. Just as day was  
breaking, Jesus came and stood on the beach; but the disciples  
5 did not know that it was he. "My children," he said, "have you  
anything to eat?"

6 "No," they answered. "Cast your net to the right of the boat,"  
he said, "and you will find fish." So they cast the net, and now  
7 they could not haul it in because of the quantity of fish. The dis-  
ciple whom Jesus loved said to Peter: "It is the Master!" When  
Simon Peter heard that it was the Master, he fastened his coat

around him (for he had taken it off), and threw himself into the Sea. But the rest of the disciples came in the boat (for they were only about a hundred yards from shore), dragging the net full of fish. When they had come ashore, they found a charcoal fire ready, with some fish already on it, and some bread as well. "Bring some of the fish which you have just caught," said Jesus. So Simon Peter got into the boat and hauled the net ashore full of large fish, a hundred and fifty-three of them; and yet, although there were so many, the net had not been torn. And Jesus said to them: "Come and breakfast." Not one of the disciples ventured to ask him who he was, knowing that it was the Master. Jesus went and took the bread and gave it to them, and the fish too. This was the third time that Jesus showed himself to the disciples after he had risen from the dead.

When breakfast was over, Jesus said to Simon Peter: "Simon, son of John, do you love me more than the others?"

"Yes, Master," he answered, "you know that I am your friend."

"Feed my lambs," said Jesus. Then, a second time, Jesus asked: "Simon, son of John, do you love me?"

"Yes, Master," he answered, "you know that I am your friend."

"Tend my sheep," said Jesus. The third time, Jesus said to him: "Simon, son of John, are you my friend?" Peter was hurt at his third question being 'Are you my friend?'; and exclaimed: "Master, you know everything! You can tell that I am your friend."

"Feed my sheep," said Jesus. "In truth I tell you," he continued, "when you were young, you used to put on your own girdle, and walk wherever you wished; but, when you have grown old, you will have to stretch out your hands, while some one else puts on your girdle, and takes you where you do not wish." Jesus said this to show the death by which Peter was to honor God, and then he added: "Follow me." Peter turned around, and saw the disciple whom Jesus loved following — the one who at the supper leant back on the Master's shoulder, and asked him who

21 it was who would betray him. Seeing him, Peter said to Jesus:  
"Master, what about this man?"

22 "If it is my will that he should wait until I come," answered  
23 Jesus, "what has that to do with you? Follow me yourself." So  
the report spread among his followers that that disciple was not  
to die; yet Jesus did not say that he was not to die, but said "If it  
is my will that he should wait until I come, what has that to do  
with you?"

24 It is this disciple who states these things, and who recorded  
them; and we know that his statement is true.

25 There are many other things which Jesus did; but, if every one  
of them were to be recorded in detail, I suppose that even the  
world itself would not hold the books that would be written.

# Acts

*The Acts of the Apostles*

## *The Church and the Jews*

*The Doings of the Apostles Peter and John*

THE FIRST ACCOUNT WHICH I DREW UP, Theophilus, dealt with 1  
all that Jesus did and taught from the very first, down to 2  
that day on which he was taken up to heaven, after he had, by  
the help of the Holy Spirit, given instructions to the apostles  
whom he had chosen. With abundant proofs, he showed 3  
himself to them, still living, after his death; appearing to them  
from time to time during forty days, and speaking of all that  
related to the kingdom of God. And once, when he had 4  
gathered them together, he charged them not to leave  
Jerusalem, but to wait there for the fulfillment of the Father's  
promise — "that promise," he said, "of which you have heard  
me speak; for, while John baptized with water, you will be 5  
baptized with the Holy Spirit before many days have passed."

So, when the apostles had met together, they asked Jesus 6  
this question — "Master, is this the time when you intend to  
re-establish the kingdom for Israel?" His answer was: "It is not 7  
for you to know times or hours, for the Father has reserved these  
for his own decision; but you will receive power, when the Holy 8  
Spirit will have descended on you, and will be witnesses for me  
not only in Jerusalem, but throughout Judea and Samaria, and  
to the ends of the earth."

No sooner had Jesus said this than he was caught up before 9  
their eyes, and a cloud received him from their sight. While they 10

11 were still gazing up into the heavens, as he went, suddenly two men, clothed in white, stood beside them, and said: "People of Galilee, why are you standing here looking up into the heavens? This same Jesus, who has been taken from you into the heavens, will come in the same way in which you have seen him go into the heavens."

12 Then the apostles returned to Jerusalem from the hill called Olivet, which is about three quarters of a mile from the city.  
13 When they reached Jerusalem, they went to the upstairs room, where they were staying. There were there Peter, John, James, and Andrew, Philip and Thomas, Bartholomew and Matthew, James the son of Alphaeus, Simon the Zealot, and Judas the son  
14 of James. They all united in devoting themselves to prayer, and so did some women, and Mary, the mother of Jesus, and his brothers.

15 About this time, at a meeting of the Lord's followers, when there were about a hundred and twenty present, Peter rose to speak. "Friends," he said, "it was necessary who the prediction of scripture should be fulfilled, which the Holy Spirit made by the lips of David about Judas, who acted as guide to the men that  
17 arrested Jesus, for he was one of our number and had his part allotted him in this work of ours." (This man had bought a piece  
18 of land with the price of his treachery; and, falling heavily, his body had burst open, and all his bowels protruded. This became  
19 known to everyone living in Jerusalem, so that the field came to be called, in their language, 'Akeldama,' which means the 'Field of Blood.')

20 "For in the book of Psalms," Peter continued, "it is said —

'Let his home,  
And let no one live in it';

and also —

'His office let another take.'

21 Therefore, from among the men who have been with us all the time that Jesus, our Master, went in and out among us — From

his baptism by John down to that day on which he was taken 22  
from us — some one must be found to join us as a witness of  
his resurrection." So they put forward two men, Joseph called 23  
Barsabas, whose other name was Justus, and Matthias; and they 24  
offered this prayer —

"Lord, who reads all hearts, show which of these two men  
you have chosen To take the place in this apostolic work, which 25  
Judas has abandoned, to go to his proper place."

Then they drew lots between them; and, the lot having fallen on 26  
Matthias, he was added to the number of the eleven apostles.

In the course of the Festival at the close of the Harvest the dis- 2  
ciples had all met together, when suddenly there came from the 2  
heavens a noise like a strong wind rushing by; it filled the whole  
house in which they were sitting. Then there appeared tongues 3  
of what seemed to be flame, separating, so that one settled on  
each of them; and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and 4  
began to speak with strange 'tongues' as the Spirit prompted  
their utterances.

Now there were then staying in Jerusalem religious Jews 5  
from every country in the world; and, when this sound was 6  
heard, numbers of people collected, in the greatest excitement,  
because each of them heard the disciples speaking in his own  
language. They were utterly amazed, and kept asking in aston- 7  
ishment:

"What! Are not all these people who are speaking Galileans?  
Then how is it that we each of us hear them in our own lan- 8  
guage? Some of us are Parthians, some Medes, some Elamites; 9  
and some of us live in Mesopotamia, in Judea and Cappadocia,  
in Pontus and Roman Asia, in Phrygia and Pamphylia, in Egypt 10  
and the districts of Libya adjoining Cyrene; some of us are vis-  
itors from Rome, either Jews by birth or converts, and some are 11  
Cretans and Arabians — yet we all alike hear them speaking in  
our own tongues of the great things that God has done." They 12  
were all utterly amazed and bewildered.

13 “What does it mean?” they asked one another. But there were some who said with a sneer: “They have had too much new wine.”

14 Then Peter, surrounded by the eleven other apostles, stood up, and, raising his voice, addressed the crowd. “People of Judea,” he began, “and all you who are staying in Jerusalem, let me tell you what this means. Mark well my words. These people are not drunk, as you suppose; for it is only now nine in the morning! No! This is what is spoken of in the prophet Joel —

17 ‘It will come about in the last days,’ God says,  
‘That I will pour out my Spirit on all humanity;  
Your sons and your daughters will become prophets,  
Your young men will see visions,  
And your old men dream dreams;  
18 Yes, even on the slaves — for they are mine — both men and women,  
I will in those days pour out my Spirit,  
And they will become prophets;  
19 And I will show wonders in the heavens above,  
And signs on the earth below —  
Blood and fire and mist of smoke;  
20 The sun will become darkness,  
And the moon blood-red,  
Before the day of the Lord comes — that great and awful day.  
21 Then will everyone who invokes the name of the Lord be saved.’

22 People of Israel, listen to what I am saying. Jesus of Nazareth, a man whose mission from God to you was proved by miracles, wonders, and signs, which God showed among you through  
23 him, as you know full well — He, I say, in accordance with God’s definite plan and with his previous knowledge, was betrayed, and you, by the hands of lawless men, nailed him to a cross and  
24 put him to death. But God released him from the pangs of death and raised him to life, it being impossible for death to retain its hold on him. Indeed he was the one David was referring to when  
25



he said —

‘I have had the Lord ever before my eyes,  
For he stands at my right hand, so that I should not be dis-  
quieted.

Therefore my heart was cheered, and my tongue told its  
delight; 26

Yes, even my body, too, will rest in hope;

For you will not abandon my soul to the place of death, 27

Nor surrender me, your holy one, to undergo corruption.

You have shown me the path to life, 28

You will fill me with gladness in your presence.’

Friends, I can speak to you the more confidently about the pa- 29

triarch David, because he is dead and buried, and his tomb is 30

here among us to this very day. David, then, prophet as he was,

knowing that God ‘had solemnly sworn to him to set one of his 31

descendants on his throne,’ looked into the future, and referred

to the resurrection of the Christ when he said that ‘he had not 32

been abandoned to the place of death, nor had his body under-

gone corruption.’ It was this Jesus, whom God raised to life; and 33

of that we are ourselves all witnesses. And now that he has been

exalted to the right hand of God, and has received from the Fa- 34

ther the promised gift of the Holy Spirit, he has begun to pour

out that gift, as you yourselves now see and hear. It was not 34

David who went up into heaven; for he himself says —

‘The Lord said to my master: “Sit on my right hand,

Until I put your enemies as a footstool under your feet.”’ 35

So let the whole nation of Israel know beyond all doubt, that 36

God has made him both Lord and Christ — this Jesus whom

you crucified.” 37

When the people heard this, they were conscience-smitten,

and said to Peter and the rest of the apostles: “Friends, what can 37

we do?”

“Repent,” answered Peter, “and be baptized every one of 38

you in the faith of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins;

39 and then you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. For the  
promise is for you and for your children, and also for all those  
now far away, who may be called by the Lord our God."

40 Peter spoke to them for a long time using many other argu-  
ments and pleaded with them — "Save yourselves from the per-  
verse spirit of this age." So those who accepted his teaching were  
41 baptized, and about three thousand people joined the disciples  
on that day alone. They devoted themselves to the teaching of  
42 the apostles and to the Common life of the church, to the break-  
ing of the bread and to the Prayers.

43 A deep impression was made on everyone, and many won-  
ders and signs were done at the hands of the apostles. All who  
44 became believers in Christ held everything for the common  
use; they sold their property and their goods, and shared the  
45 proceeds among them all, according to their individual needs.  
Every day they devoted themselves to meeting together in the  
46 Temple Courts, and to the breaking of bread at their homes,  
while they partook of their food in simple-hearted gladness,  
praising God, and winning the goodwill of all the people. And  
47 the Lord daily added to their company those who were in the  
path of salvation.

3 One day, as Peter and John were going up into the Temple Courts  
for the three o'clock Prayers, a man, who had been lame from his  
2 birth, was being carried by. This man used to be set down every  
day at the gate of the Temple called 'the Beautiful Gate,' to beg  
3 of those who went in. Seeing Peter and John on the point of en-  
tering, he asked them to give him something. Peter fixed his eyes  
4 on him, and so did John, and then Peter said: "Look at us."

5 The man was all attention, expecting to get something from  
them; but Peter added: "I have no gold or silver, but I give you  
6 what I have. In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, get up and  
walk." Grasping the lame man by the right hand, Peter lifted  
7 him up. Instantly the man's feet and ankles became strong, and,  
8 leaping up, he stood and began to walk about, and then went  
with them into the Temple Courts, walking, and leaping, and  
9 praising God. All the people saw him walking about and prais-

ing God; and, when they recognized him as the man who used to sit begging at the Beautiful Gate of the Temple, they were utterly astonished and amazed at what had happened to him. While the man still clung to Peter and John, the people all quickly gathered around them in the Colonnade named after Solomon, in the greatest astonishment.

On seeing this, Peter said to the people: "People of Israel, why are you surprised at this? And why do you stare at us, as though we, by any power or piety of our own, had enabled this man to walk? The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, the God of our ancestors, has done honor to his servant Jesus — him whom you gave up and disowned before Pilate, when he had decided to set him free. You, I say, disowned the holy and righteous one, and asked for the release of a murderer! The guide to life you put to death! But God raised him from the dead — and of that we are ourselves witnesses. And it is by faith in the name of Jesus, that this man, whom you all see and know, has — by his name — been made strong. Yes, it is the faith inspired by Jesus that has made this complete cure of the man, before the eyes of you all. And yet, my friends, I know that you acted as you did from ignorance, and your rulers also. But it was in this way that God fulfilled all that he had long ago foretold, as to the sufferings of his Christ, by the lips of all the prophets. Therefore, repent and turn so that your sins may be wiped away; so that happier times may come from the Lord himself, and so that he may send you, in Jesus, your long-appointed Christ. But heaven must be his home, until the days of the Universal Restoration, of which God has spoken by the lips of his holy prophets from the very first. Moses himself said —

'The Lord your God will raise up from among yourselves a prophet, as he raised me. To him you will listen whenever he speaks to you. And it will be that should anyone among the people not listen to that prophet, he will be utterly destroyed.'

Yes, and all the prophets from Samuel onwards, and all their successors who had a message to deliver, told of these days. You yourselves are the heirs of the prophets, and heirs, too, of the

covenant which God made with your ancestors, when he said to Abraham —

‘In your descendants will all the nations of the earth be blessed.’

26 For you, first, God raised up his servant, and sent him to bless  
4 you, by turning each one of you from his wicked ways.” While  
Peter and John were still speaking to the people, the chief priest,  
with the officer in charge at the Temple and the Sadducees, came  
2 up to them, much annoyed because they were teaching the peo-  
ple, and because, through Jesus, they were preaching the res-  
3 urrection from the dead. They arrested the apostles and, as it  
was already evening, had them placed in custody until the next  
4 day. Many, however, of those who had heard the apostles’ mes-  
sage became believers in Christ, the number of the men alone  
amounting to about five thousand.

5 The next day, a meeting of the leaders of the people, the coun-  
cillors, and the teachers of the law was held in Jerusalem. There  
6 were present Annas the high priest, Caiaphas, John, Alexander,  
7 and all who were of High-Priestly rank. They had Peter and John  
brought before them, and questioned them.

“By what power,” they asked, “Or in whose name have men  
like you done this thing?”

8 Then, Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, said: “Leaders of  
9 the people and councillors, since we are on our trial today for  
a kind act done to a helpless man, and are asked in what way  
10 the man here before you has been cured, let me tell you all and  
all the people of Israel, that it is by the name of Jesus Christ of  
Nazareth, whom you crucified and whom God raised from the  
dead — it is, I say, by his name that this man stands here before  
11 you lame no longer. Jesus is ‘the stone which, scorned by you the  
12 builders, has yet become the corner stone.’ And salvation is in  
him alone; for there is no other name in the whole world, given  
to people, to which we must look for our salvation.”

13 When the Council saw how boldly Peter and John spoke, and  
found that they were uneducated men of humble station, they

were surprised, and realized that they had been companions of Jesus. But, when they looked at the man who had been healed, standing there with them, they had nothing to say. So they ordered them out of court, and then began consulting together. 14 15

“What are we to do to these men?” they asked one another. 16  
“That a remarkable sign has been given through them is obvious to everyone living in Jerusalem, and we cannot deny it. But, to prevent this thing from spreading further among the people, let us warn them not to speak in this name any more to anyone whatever.” 17

So they called the apostles in, and ordered them not to speak or teach in the name of Jesus. 18

But Peter and John replied: “Whether it is right, in the sight of God, to listen to you rather than to him — judge for yourselves, for we cannot help speaking of what we have seen and heard.” However, after further warnings, the Council set them at liberty, not seeing any safe way of punishing them, because of the people, for they were all praising God for what had occurred; for the man who was the subject of this miraculous cure was more than forty years old. 19 20 21 22

After they had been set at liberty, the apostles went to their friends and told them what the chief priests and the councillors had said to them. All who heard their story, moved by a common impulse, raised their voices to God in prayer: 23 24

“Sovereign Lord, it is you who has ‘made the heavens, the earth, the sea, and everything that is in them,’ And who, by the lips of our ancestor, your servant David, who spoke under the influence of the Holy Spirit, have said — 25

‘Why did the nations rage,  
And the peoples form vain designs?  
The kings of the earth set their array,  
And its rulers gathered together, 26  
Against the Lord and against his Christ.’

There have indeed gathered together in this city against your holy servant Jesus, whom you has consecrated the Christ, not 27

28 Herod and Pontius Pilate only, but the nations and the people of  
29 Israel besides — Yet only to do what you, by your power and of  
30 your own will, did long ago destine to be done. Now, therefore,  
Lord, mark their threats, and enable your servants, with all  
fearlessness, to tell your message, while you stretch out your  
hand to heal, and cause signs and wonders to take place through  
the name of your holy servant Jesus.”

31 When their prayer was ended, the place in which they were  
assembled was shaken; and they were all filled with the Holy  
Spirit, and began to tell God’s message fearlessly.

32 The whole body of those who had become believers in Christ  
were of one heart and mind. Not one of them claimed any of  
his goods as his own, but everything was held for the common  
33 use. The apostles continued with great power to bear their tes-  
timony to the resurrection of the Lord Jesus, and God’s blessing  
34 rested on them all abundantly. Nor was there anyone in need  
among them, for all who were owners of land or houses sold  
35 them, and brought the proceeds of the sales And laid them at the  
apostles’ feet; and then everyone received a share in proportion  
36 to his wants. A Levite of Cyprian birth, named Joseph, (who had  
received from the apostles the additional name of ‘Barnabas’ —  
37 which means ‘The Consoler,’) Sold a farm that belonged to him,  
and brought the money and laid it at the apostles’ feet.

5 There was, however, a man named Ananias, who, with his wife  
2 Sapphira, sold some property, and, with her connivance, kept  
back some of the proceeds. He brought only a part and laid it at  
the apostles’ feet.

3 “Ananias,” Peter exclaimed, “how is it that Satan has so tak-  
en possession of your heart that you have lied to the Holy Spir-  
4 it, and kept back a part of the money paid for the land? While it  
was unsold, was not it your own? And after it was sold, was not  
the money at your own disposal? How did you come to think of  
such a thing? You have lied, not to people, but to God!”

5 As Ananias heard these words, he fell down and expired;

and everyone who heard of it was appalled. The young men got up, and, winding the body in a sheet, carried it out and buried it. 6

After an interval of about three hours his wife came in, not knowing what had happened. "Is it true," Peter asked, addressing her, "that you sold your land for such a sum?" 7 8

"Yes," she answered, "we did." Then Peter said: "How did you come to agree to provoke the Spirit of the Lord? Listen! The footsteps of those who have buried your husband are at the door; and they will carry you out too." 9

Instantly Sapphira fell down at Peter's feet and expired. On coming in, the young men found her dead; so they carried her out and buried her by her husband's side. The whole church and all who heard of these events were appalled. 10 11

Many signs and wonders continued to occur among the people, through the instrumentality of the apostles, whose custom it was to meet all together in the Colonnade of Solomon; but of the rest no one ventured to join them. On the other hand, the people were full of their praise, and still larger numbers, both of men and women, as they became believers in the Lord, were added to their number. The consequence was that people would bring out their sick even into the streets, and lay them on mattresses and mats, in the hope that, as Peter came by, at least his shadow might fall on some one of them. Besides this, the inhabitants of the towns around Jerusalem flocked into the city, bringing with them their sick and those who were troubled by foul spirits; and they were cured everyone. 12 13 14 15 16

At this the high priest was roused to action, and he and all his supporters (who formed the party of the Sadducees), moved by jealousy, arrested the apostles, and had them placed in custody. An angel of the Lord, however, opened the prison doors at night and led them out. "Go," he said, "and stand in the Temple Courts, and tell the people the whole message of this new life." When they heard this, they went at daybreak into the Temple Courts, and began to teach. The high priest and his party, 17 18 19 20 21

on their arrival, summoned the High Council, including all the leaders of the people among the Israelites, and sent to the jail to fetch the apostles. But, when the officers got there, they did not find them in the prison; so they returned and reported that, while they had found the goal barred securely and the guards posted at the doors, yet, on opening them, they had not found anyone inside. When the officer in charge at the Temple and the chief priests heard their story, they were perplexed about the apostles and as to what all this would lead to. Presently, however, some one came and told them, that the men whom they had put in prison were actually standing in the Temple Courts, teaching the people. Then, the officer went with his men and fetched the apostles — without using violence, for they were afraid of being stoned by the people — And then brought them before the Council. The high priest demanded an explanation from them.

“We gave you strict orders,” he said, “not to teach in this name. Yet you have actually flooded Jerusalem with your teaching, and you want to make us responsible for the death of this man.”

To this Peter and the apostles replied: “We must obey God rather than people. The God of our ancestors raised Jesus, whom you put to death by hanging him on a cross. It is this Jesus whom God has exalted to his right hand, to be a guide and a Savior, to give Israel repentance and forgiveness of sins. And we are witness to the truth of this, and so is the Holy Spirit — the gift of God to those who obey him.”

The members of the Council became frantic with rage on hearing this, and were for putting the apostles to death. But Gamaliel, a Pharisee, who was a Doctor of the law and who was held in universal respect, rose in the Council, and directed that the men should be taken out of court for a little while.

He then said: “People of Israel, take care as to what you intend to do with these men. For not long ago Theudas appeared, professing to be somebody, and was joined by a body of some four hundred men. But he was killed; and all his followers scattered and dwindled away. After him, Judas the Galilean appeared at the time of the census, and induced people to follow



him; Yet he, too, perished and all his followers were dispersed. And, in this present case, my advice to you is not to interfere with these men, but to let them alone, for, if their designs and their work are merely of human origin, they will come to an end; but, if they are of divine origin, you will be powerless to put an end to them — or else you may find yourselves fighting against God!"

The Council followed his advice, and, calling the apostles in, had them flogged, and then, after cautioning them not to speak in the name of Jesus, set them free. But the apostles left the Council, rejoicing that they had been thought worthy to suffer disgrace for that name; and never for a single day, either in the Temple Courts or in private houses, did they cease to teach, or to tell the good news of Jesus, the Christ.

About this time, when the number of the disciples was constantly increasing, complaints were made by the Greek speaking Jews against the Aramaic speaking Jews, that their widows were being overlooked in the daily distribution. The Twelve, therefore, called together the general body of the disciples and said to them: "It is not well for us to see to the distribution at the tables and neglect God's message. Therefore, friends, look for seven men of reputation among yourselves, wise and spiritually-minded men, and we will appoint them to attend to this matter; while we, for our part, will devote ourselves to prayer, and to the delivery of the message."

This proposal was unanimously agreed to; and the disciples chose Stephen — a man full of faith and of the Holy Spirit — and Philip, Prochorus, Nicanor, Timon, Parmenas, and Nicholas of Antioch, a former convert to Judaism; and they brought these men to the apostles, who, after praying, placed their hands on them.

So God's message spread, and the number of the disciples continued to increase rapidly in Jerusalem, and a large body of the priests accepted the faith.

8 Meanwhile Stephen, divinely helped and strengthened, was  
9 showing great wonders and signs among the people. But some  
members of the Synagogue of the Freed Slaves (as it was called),  
Cyrenians, Alexandrians, and Visitors from Cilicia and Roman  
10 Asia, were roused to action and began disputing with Stephen;  
11 yet they were quite unable to withstand the wisdom and the in-  
spiration with which he spoke. Then they induced some men to  
12 assert that they had heard Stephen saying blasphemous things  
against Moses, and against God; and they stirred up the peo-  
ple, as well as the councillors and the teachers of the law, and  
set on Stephen, and arrested him, and brought him before the  
13 High Council. There they produced witnesses who gave false  
evidence.

“This man,” they said, “is incessantly saying things against  
14 this Holy place and the law; indeed, we have heard him declare  
that this Jesus of Nazareth will destroy this place, and change  
15 the customs handed down to us by Moses.” The eyes of all the  
members of the Council were riveted on Stephen, and they saw  
his face looking like the face of an angel.

7 Then the high priest asked: “Is this true?” Stephen replied:  
2 “Brothers and fathers, hear what I have to say. God, who man-  
ifests himself in the glory, appeared to our ancestor Abraham  
when he was in Mesopotamia, and before he settled in Haran,  
3 and said to him — ‘Leave your country and your kindred, and  
4 come into the country that I will show you.’ And so Abraham  
left the country of the Chaldaeans and settled in Haran; and  
from there, after his father’s death, God caused him to migrate  
5 into this country, in which you are now living. God did not at  
that time give him any part of it, not even a foot of ground. But  
he promised to ‘give him possession of it and his descendants  
6 after him, though at that time he had no child. God’s words were  
these — ‘Abraham’s descendants will live in a foreign country,  
7 where they will be enslaved and ill-treated for four hundred  
years. But I myself will judge the nation, to which they will be  
8 enslaved,’ God said, ‘and after that they will leave the country  
and worship me in this place.’ Then God made with Abraham  
the covenant of circumcision; and under it Abraham became  
the father of Isaac, and circumcised him when he was eight

days old; and Isaac became the father of Jacob; and Jacob of the  
Twelve Patriarchs. The Patriarchs, out of jealousy, sold Joseph 9  
into slavery in Egypt; but God was with him, and delivered him 10  
out of all his troubles, and enabled him to win favor and show  
wisdom before Pharaoh, king of Egypt, who appointed him  
Governor of Egypt and of his whole household. Then a famine 11  
spread over the whole of Egypt and Canaan, causing great dis-  
tress, and our ancestors could find no food. Hearing, howev- 12  
er, that there was corn in Egypt, Jacob sent our ancestors there  
on their first visit. In the course of their second visit, Joseph re- 13  
vealed himself to his brothers, and his family became known  
to Pharaoh. Then Joseph sent an urgent invitation to his father 14  
Jacob and to his relations, seventy-five persons in all; and so 15  
Jacob went down into Egypt. There he died, and our ancestors  
also, and their bodies were removed to Shechem, and laid in the 16  
tomb which Abraham had bought for a sum of money from the  
sons of Hamor in Shechem. As the time drew near for the ful- 17  
fillment of the promise which God had made to Abraham, the  
people increased largely in numbers in Egypt, until a new king, 18  
who knew nothing of Joseph, came to the throne. This king act- 19  
ed deceitfully towards our race and ill-treated our ancestors,  
making them abandon their own infants, so that they should  
not be reared. It was just at this time that Moses was born. He 20  
was an exceedingly beautiful child, and for three months was  
brought up in his own father's house; and, when he was aban- 21  
doned, the daughter of Pharaoh found him and brought him  
up as her own son. So Moses was educated in all the learning of 22  
the Egyptians, and proved his ability both by his words and ac-  
tions. When he was in his fortieth year, he resolved to visit his 23  
fellow Israelites; and, seeing an Israelite ill-treated, he defend- 24  
ed him, and avenged the man, who was being wronged, by striking  
down the Egyptian. He thought his own people would under- 25  
stand that God was using him to save them; but they failed to  
do so. The next day he again appeared on the scene, when some 26  
of them were fighting, and tried to make peace between them.  
'Men,' he said, 'you are brothers; how is it that you are ill-treat- 27  
ing one another?' But the man who was ill-treating his fellow

28 workman pushed Moses aside saying — ‘Who made you a ruler  
and judge over us? Do you mean to make away with me as you  
29 did yesterday with that Egyptian?’ At these words Moses took  
to flight, and became an exile in Midian; and there he had two  
30 sons born to him. Forty years had passed when there appeared  
to him, in the desert of Mount Sinai, an angel in a flame of fire  
31 in a bush. When Moses saw it, he was astonished at the vision;  
but on his going nearer to look at it more closely, the voice of the  
32 Lord was heard to say — ‘I am the God of your ancestors, the  
God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.’ Moses trembled, and did not  
33 dare to look. Then the Lord said to him — ‘Take your sandals off  
your feet, for the spot where you are standing is holy ground. I  
34 have seen the oppression of my people who are in Egypt, and  
heard their groans, and I have come down to deliver them. Come  
35 now and I will send you into Egypt.’ This same Moses, whom  
they had disowned with the words — ‘Who made you a ruler  
and a judge?’ was the man whom God sent to be both a ruler  
36 and a deliverer, under the guidance of the angel that had ap-  
peared to him in the bush. He it was who led them out, after he  
had shown wonders and signs in Egypt, in the Red Sea, and in  
37 the desert during forty years. This was the Moses who said to  
the people of Israel — ‘God will raise up for you, from among  
38 yourselves, a prophet, as he raised up me.’ He, too, it was who  
was present at the assembly in the desert, with the angel who  
talked to him on Mount Sinai, and with our ancestors, and who  
39 received living truths to impart to you. Yet our ancestors refused  
him obedience; more than that, they rejected him, and in their  
40 hearts turned back to Egypt, while they said to Aaron — ‘Make  
us Gods who will lead the way for us, since, as for this Moses  
who has brought us out of Egypt, we do not know what has be-  
41 come of him.’ That was the time when they made the calf and  
offered sacrifice to their idol, and held festivities in honor of  
42 their own handiwork! So God turned from them and left them  
to the worship of the Starry Host, as is written in the book of the  
prophets —

‘Did you offer victims and sacrifices to me, house of Israel,  
All those forty years in the desert?’

You took with you the tent where Moloch is worshipped 43  
And the star of the god Rephan —  
The images which you had made to worship.  
Therefore I will exile you beyond Babylon.'

Our ancestors had the tent where they worshipped God in the 44  
desert, constructed, just as he who spoke to Moses had direct- 45  
ed him to make it, after the model which he had seen. This tent,  
which was handed down to them, was brought into this coun-  
try by our ancestors who accompanied Joshua (at the conquest  
of the nations that God drove out before their advance), and re- 46  
mained here until the time of David. David found favor with  
God, and prayed that he might provide the God of Jacob with a 47  
place to reside. But it was Solomon who built a house for God.  
Yet it is not in buildings made by hands that the Most High 48  
dwells. As the prophet says —

'The heavens are a throne for me, 49  
And the earth a stool for my feet.  
What manner of house will you build me, saith the Lord,  
Or what place is there where I may rest?  
Was it not my hand that made all these things?' 50

Stubborn race, heathen in heart and ears, you are for ever resist- 51  
ing the Holy Spirit; your ancestors did it, and you are doing it  
still. Which of the prophets escaped persecution at their hands? 52  
They killed those who foretold the coming of the righteous one;  
of whom you, in your turn, have now become the betrayers and  
murderers — You who received the law as transmitted by angels 53  
and yet failed to keep it."

As they listened to this, the Council grew frantic with rage, 54  
and gnashed their teeth at Stephen. He, filled as he was with the  
Holy Spirit, fixed his eyes intently on the heavens, and saw the  
glory of God and Jesus standing at God's right hand. 55

"Look," he exclaimed, "I see heaven open and the Son of 56  
Man standing at God's right hand!" At this, with a loud shout, 57  
they stopped their ears and all rushed on him, forced him out-  
side the city, and began to stone him, the witnesses laying their 58

59 clothes at the feet of a young man named Saul. And they stoned  
Stephen, while he cried to the Lord: "Lord Jesus! Receive my  
60 spirit!" Falling on his knees, he called out loudly: "Lord! Do not  
charge them with this sin;" and with these words he fell asleep.

8 Saul approved of his being put to death.

On that very day a great persecution broke out against the  
church which was in Jerusalem; and its members, with the ex-  
ception of the apostles, were all scattered over the districts of  
2 Judea and Samaria. Some religious men buried Stephen, with  
3 loud lamentations for him. But Saul began to devastate the  
church; he entered house after house, dragged out men and  
women alike, and threw them into prison.

4 Now those who were scattered in different directions went from  
5 place to place proclaiming the good news. Philip went down  
6 to the city of Samaria, and there began to preach the Christ. The  
people, one and all, listened attentively to what Philip told them,  
7 when they heard of, and saw, the miracles which he was work-  
ing. For there were many instances of people with foul spirits,  
where the spirits, with loud screams, came out of them; and  
8 many who were paralyzed or lame were cured, so that there  
9 was great rejoicing throughout that city. There was staying in the  
city a man named Simon, who had been practicing magic there  
and mystifying the Samaritan people, giving himself out to be  
10 some great being. Everyone, high and low, paid attention to him.  
'This man,' they used to say, 'must be that power of God which  
11 people call "The Great Power."' And they paid attention to him  
because they had for a long time been mystified by his magic  
12 arts. However, when they came to believe Philip, as he told them  
the good news about the kingdom of God and the name of Jesus  
13 Christ, they were baptized, both men and women. Even Simon  
believed, and after his baptism attached himself to Philip, and  
was in his turn mystified at seeing signs and great miracles con-  
stantly occurring.

14 When the apostles at Jerusalem heard that the Samaritans had  
welcomed God's message, they sent Peter and John to them; and  
15 they, on their arrival, prayed that the Samaritans might receive

the Holy Spirit. (As yet the Spirit had not descended on any of them; they had only been baptized into the faith of the Lord Jesus). Then Peter and John placed their hands on them, and they received the Holy Spirit. 16  
17

When Simon saw that it was through the placing of the apostles' hands on them that the Spirit was given, he brought them a sum of money and said: "Give me also this power of yours, so that, if I place my hands on anyone, he may receive the Holy Spirit." 18  
19

"A curse on you and on your money," Peter exclaimed, "for thinking that God's free gift can be bought with gold! You have no share or part in our message, for your 'heart is not right with God.' Therefore repent of this wickedness of yours, and pray to the Lord, that, if possible, you may be forgiven for such a thought; for I see that you have fallen into the 'bitterness of envy' and the 'fetters of sin.'" 20  
21  
22  
23

"Pray to the Lord for me, all of you," Simon answered, "so that none of the things you have spoken of may happen to me." 24

Peter and John, having borne their testimony and delivered the Lord's message, returned to Jerusalem, telling the good news, as they went, in many Samaritan villages. 25

Meanwhile an angel of the Lord had said to Philip: "Set out on a journey southwards, along the road that runs down from Jerusalem to Gaza." (It is now deserted). So Philip set out on a journey; and on his way he came on an official of high rank, in the service of Candace, Queen of the Abyssinians. He was her treasurer, and had been to Jerusalem to worship, and was now on his way home, sitting in his carriage and reading the prophet Isaiah. 26  
27  
28

The Spirit said to Philip: "Go up to the carriage over there and keep close to it." So Philip ran up, and he heard the Abyssinian reading the prophet Isaiah. 29  
30

"Do you understand what you are reading?" he asked. "How can I," the other answered, "unless some one will explain it to me?" and he invited Philip to get up and sit by his side. The passage of scripture which he was reading was this — 31  
32

'Like a sheep, he was led away to slaughter,  
And as a lamb is dumb in the hands of its shearer,  
So he refrains from opening his lips.

33 He was humiliated and justice was denied him.  
Who will tell the story of his generation?  
For his life is cut off from earth.'

34 "Now," said the Treasurer, addressing Philip, "tell me, of whom  
is the prophet speaking? Of himself, or of some one else?" Then  
35 Philip began, and, taking this passage as his text, told him the  
good news about Jesus.

36 Presently, as they were going along the road, they came to  
some water, and the Treasurer exclaimed: "Look! Here is water;  
38 what is to prevent my being baptized?" So he ordered the car-  
riage to stop, and they went down into the water — both Philip  
39 and the Treasurer — and Philip baptized him. But, when they  
came up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught Philip  
away, and the Treasurer saw no more of him; for he continued  
40 his journey with a joyful heart. But Philip was found at Ash-  
dod, and, as he went on his way, he told the good news in all the  
towns through which he passed, until he came to Caesarea.

9 Meanwhile Saul, still breathing murderous threats against the  
disciples of the Lord, went to the high priest, and asked him  
2 to give him letters to the Jewish congregations at Damascus,  
authorizing him, if he found there any supporters of the cause,  
whether men or women, to have them put in chains and brought  
to Jerusalem.

3 While on his journey, as he was nearing Damascus, suddenly  
4 a light from the heavens flashed around him. He fell to the  
ground and heard a voice saying to him — "Saul, Saul, why are  
you persecuting me?"

5 "Who are you, Lord?" he asked.

"I am Jesus, whom you are persecuting," the voice answered;  
6 "Yet stand up and go into the city, and you will be told what you  
must do."

7 The men traveling with Saul were meanwhile standing  
speechless; they heard the sound of the voice, but saw no one.



When Saul got up from the ground, though his eyes were open, 8  
he could see nothing. So his men led him by the hand, and  
brought him into Damascus; and for three days he was unable 9  
to see, and took nothing either to eat or to drink.

Now there was at Damascus a disciple named Ananias, to 10  
whom, in a vision, the Lord said: "Ananias."

"Yes, Lord," he answered. "Go at once," said the Lord, "to the 11  
'Straight Street', and ask at Judas's house for a man named Saul,  
from Tarsus. He is at this moment praying, and he has seen, in a 12  
vision, a man named Ananias coming in and placing his hands  
on him, so that he may recover his sight."

"Lord," exclaimed Ananias, "I have heard from many people 13  
about this man — how much harm he has done at Jerusalem to  
your people there. And, here, too, he holds authority from the 14  
chief priests to put in chains all those who invoke your name."  
But the Lord said to him: "Go, for this man is my chosen instru- 15  
ment to uphold my name before the Gentiles and their kings,  
and the people of Israel. I will myself show him all that he has to 16  
suffer for my name."

So Ananias went, entered the house, and, placing his hands 17  
on Saul, said: "Saul, my brother, I have been sent by the Lord  
— by Jesus, who appeared to you on your way here — so that  
you may recover your sight and be filled with the Holy Spirit." 18  
Instantly it seemed as if a film fell from Saul's eyes, and his sight  
was restored. Then he got up and was baptized, and, after he had 19  
taken food, he felt his strength return.

Saul stayed for some days with the disciples who were at 20  
Damascus, and at once began in the Synagogues to proclaim  
Jesus as the Son of God. All who heard him were amazed. 21

"Is not this," they asked, "the man who worked havoc in 22  
Jerusalem among those that invoke this name, and who had also  
come here for the express purpose of having such persons put  
in chains and taken before the chief priests?" Saul's influence,  
however, kept steadily increasing, and he confounded the Jew-

ish people who lived in Damascus by the proofs that he gave that Jesus was the Christ.

23 After some time some of them laid a plot to kill Saul, but  
24 it became known to him. They even watched the gates day  
25 and night, to kill him; but his disciples let him down by night  
through an opening in the wall, lowering him in a basket.

26 On his arrival in Jerusalem, Saul attempted to join the disci-  
27 ples, but they were all afraid of him, as they did not believe that  
he was really a disciple. Barnabas, however, taking him by the  
hand, brought him to the apostles, and told them the whole sto-  
ry of how Saul on his journey had seen the Lord, and how the  
28 Lord had talked to him, and how in Damascus he had spoken  
out fearlessly in the name of Jesus. After that, Saul remained in  
29 Jerusalem, in close intercourse with the apostles; and he spoke  
fearlessly in the name of the Lord, talking and arguing with the  
30 Jews of foreign birth, who, however, made attempts to kill him.  
But, when the followers found this out, they took him down to  
Caesarea, and sent him on his way to Tarsus.

31 And so it came about that the church, throughout Judea, Galilee,  
and Samaria, enjoyed peace and became firmly established; and,  
ordering its life by respect for the Lord and the help of the Holy  
Spirit, it increased in numbers.

32 Peter, while traveling from place to place throughout the coun-  
try, went down to visit the people of Christ living at Lydda.  
33 There he found a man named Aeneas, who had been bedrid-  
34 den for eight years with paralysis. "Aeneas," Peter said to him,  
"Jesus Christ cures you. Get up, and make your bed." Aeneas  
35 got up at once; and all the inhabitants of Lydda and of the Plain  
of Sharon saw him, and came over to the Lord's side.

36 At Jaffa there lived a disciple whose name was Tabitha, which  
is in Greek 'Dorcas' — a Gazelle. Her life was spent in doing  
37 kind and charitable actions. Just at that time she was taken ill,  
and died; and they had washed her body and laid it out in an

upstairs room. Jaffa was near Lydda, and the disciples, having heard that Peter was at Lydda, sent two men with the request that he come to them without delay. Peter returned with them at once. On his arrival, he was taken upstairs, and all the widows came around him in tears, showing the coats and other clothing which Dorcas had made while she was among them. But Peter sent everybody out of the room, and knelt down and prayed. Then, turning to the body, he said: "Tabitha! Stand up."

She opened her eyes, and, seeing Peter, sat up. Giving her his hand, Peter raised her up, and, calling in the widows and others of Christ's people, presented her to them alive. This became known all through Jaffa, and numbers of people came to believe in the Lord. And Peter stayed some days at Jaffa with a tanner named Simon.

At Caesarea there was a man named Cornelius, a captain in the regiment known as the 'Italian Regiment,' A religious man and one who revered God, with all his household. He was liberal in his charities to the people, and prayed to God constantly. One afternoon, about three o'clock, he distinctly saw in a vision an angel from God come to him, and call him by name. Cornelius fixed his eyes on him and, in great alarm, said: "What is it, Lord?"

"Your prayers and your charities," the angel answered, "have been an acceptable offering to God. And now, send messengers to Jaffa and fetch a man called Simon, who is also known as Peter. He is lodging with a tanner named Simon, who has a house near the sea."

When the angel, who had spoken to him, had gone, Cornelius called two servants and a religious soldier, who was one of his constant attendants, and, after telling them the whole story, sent them to Jaffa.

On the next day, while these men were on their way, just as they were nearing the town, Peter went up on the housetop about midday to pray. He became hungry and wanted something to eat; but while it was being prepared, he fell into a trance, and saw that the heavens were open, and that something like a

12 great sail was descending, let down by its four corners towards  
the earth. In it were all kinds of quadrupeds, reptiles, and birds.  
13 Then he was aware of a voice which said — “Stand up, Peter, kill  
something, and eat.”

14 “No, Lord, I cannot,” answered Peter, “for I have never eaten  
15 anything ‘defiled’ and ‘unclean’.” Again he was aware of a voice  
which said — “What God has pronounced ‘clean’, do not regard  
16 as ‘defiled’.” This happened three times, and then suddenly it  
was all taken up into the heavens.

17 While Peter was still perplexed as to the meaning of the vi-  
sion that he had seen, the men sent by Cornelius, having en-  
18 quired the way to Simon’s house, came up to the gate, and called  
out and asked if the Simon, who was also known as Peter, was  
19 lodging there. Peter was still pondering over the vision, when  
the Spirit said to him: “There are two men looking for you at this  
20 moment. Go down at once and do not hesitate to go with them,  
for I have sent them.”

21 Peter went down to the men and said: “I am the person you  
are looking for. What is your reason for coming?”

22 The men replied: “Our captain, Cornelius, a pious man  
who reverences God and is well spoken of by the whole Jewish  
23 nation, has been instructed by a holy angel to send for you to his  
house, and to listen to what you have to say.” So Peter invited  
them in and entertained them.

The next day he lost no time in setting out with them, accom-  
24 panied by some of the Lord’s followers from Jaffa; and the day  
following he entered Caesarea. Cornelius was expecting them,  
and had invited his relations and intimate friends to meet them.  
25 So, when Peter entered the city, Cornelius met him, and, throw-  
26 ing himself at Peter’s feet, bowed to the ground. Peter, however,  
lifted him up, saying as he did so: “Stand up, I am only human  
like yourself.”

27 Talking with him as he went, Peter entered the house, where  
he found a large gathering of people, to whom he said: “You are  
28 doubtless aware that it is forbidden for a Jew to be intimate with  
a foreigner, or even to enter his house; and yet God has shown  
29 me that I ought not to call anyone ‘defiled’ or ‘unclean.’ That was  
why I came, when I was sent for, without raising any objection.

And now I ask your reason for sending for me."

"Just three days ago this very hour," Cornelius said, "I was 30  
in my house, saying the Afternoon Prayers, when a man in daz- 31  
zling clothing suddenly stood before me. 'Cornelius,' he said, 32  
'your prayer has been heard, and your charities have been ac- 33  
cepted, by God. Therefore send to Jaffa, and invite the Simon, 34  
who is also known as Peter, to come here. He is lodging in the  
house of Simon the tanner, near the sea.' Accordingly I sent to  
you at once, and you have been so good as to come. And now we  
are all here in the presence of God, to listen to all that you have  
been instructed by the Lord to say." Then Peter began.

"I see, beyond all doubt," he said, "that 'God does not show 35  
partiality,' But that in every nation he who reverences him and 36  
does what is right is acceptable to him. God has sent his message 37  
to the Israelites and told them, through Jesus Christ, the good 38  
news of peace — and Jesus is Lord of all! You yourselves know 39  
the story which spread through all Judea, how, beginning from 40  
Galilee, after the baptism which John proclaimed — The story, 41  
I mean, of Jesus of Nazareth, and how God consecrated him his 42  
Christ by enduing him with the Holy Spirit and with power; and 43  
how he went about doing good and curing all who were under 44  
the power of the devil, because God was with him. We are our- 45  
selves, too, witnesses to all that he did in Judea and in Jerusalem; 46  
yet they put him to death by hanging him on a cross! This Jesus  
God raised on the third day, and enabled him to appear, not in-  
deed to everyone, but to witnesses chosen beforehand by God  
— to us, who ate and drank with him after his resurrection from  
the dead. Further, God charged us to proclaim to the people, and  
solemnly affirm, that it is Jesus who has been appointed by God  
judge of the living and the dead. To him it is that all the prophets  
bear witness, when they say that everyone who believes in him  
receives through his name forgiveness of sins."

Before Peter had finished saying these words, the Holy Spir- 44  
it fell on all who were listening to the message. Those converts 45  
from Judaism, who had come with Peter, were amazed that the  
gift of the Holy Spirit had been bestowed even on the Gentiles;  
for they heard them speaking with 'tongues' and extolling God. 46

47 At this Peter asked: "Can anyone refuse the water for the bap-  
48 tism of these people, now that they have received the Holy Spirit  
as we did ourselves?" And he directed that they should be bap-  
tized in the faith of Jesus Christ; after which they asked him to  
stay there a few days longer.

11 The apostles and the followers throughout Judea heard that  
2 even the Gentiles had welcomed God's message. But, when Pe-  
3 ter went up to Jerusalem, those who were converts from Judaism  
4 began to attack him, on the ground that he had visited people  
5 who were not circumcised, and had taken meals with them. So  
6 Peter began to relate the facts to them as they had occurred. "I  
7 was in the town of Jaffa," he said, "and was praying; and, while  
8 in a trance, I saw a vision. There was something like a great sail  
9 descending, let down by its four corners out of the heavens; and  
10 it came right down to me. Looking intently at it, I began to dis-  
11 tinguish quadrupeds, wild beasts, reptiles, and birds; and I also  
12 heard a voice saying to me — 'Stand up, Peter, kill something  
13 and eat.' 'No, Lord, I cannot,' I answered, 'for nothing 'defiled'  
14 or 'unclean' has ever passed my lips.' Then a second time there  
15 came a voice from the heavens. "What God has pronounced  
16 'clean'," it said, "you must not call 'defiled'." This happened  
17 three times, and then all was drawn up again into the heavens.  
At that moment three men, who had been sent from Caesarea to  
see me, came up to the house in which we were. The Spirit told  
me to go with them without hesitation. These six companions  
also went with me. And, when we came into the man's house,  
he told us how he had seen the angel standing in his house, and  
how the angel had said to him — 'Send to Jaffa and fetch the  
Simon, who is also known as Peter; for he will tell you truths,  
which will prove the means of salvation to you and all your  
household.' I had but just begun to speak," continued Peter,  
"when the Holy Spirit fell on them, exactly as on us at the first;  
and I recalled the saying of the Master — 'John baptized with  
water, but you will be baptized with the Holy Spirit.' Since then,  
God had given them the very same gift as he gave us when we  
became believers in Jesus Christ the Master — who was I that I

could thwart God?"

On hearing this statement, they said no more, but broke out into praise of God. "So even to the Gentiles," they exclaimed, "God has granted the repentance which leads to life!" 18

Now those who had been scattered in different directions, in consequence of the persecution that followed the death of Stephen, went as far as Phoenicia, Cyprus, and Antioch, telling the message — but only to Jews. Some of them, however, who were men of Cyprus and Cyrene, on coming to Antioch, addressed themselves also to the Jews of foreign birth, telling them the good news about that Lord Jesus. The power of the Lord was with them, so that a great number who had learned to believe came over to the Lord's side. The news about them reached the ears of the church at Jerusalem, and they sent Barnabas to Antioch. On coming there he saw to his great joy these tokens of the loving kindness of God, and encouraged them all to make up their minds to be faithful to the Lord — For Barnabas was a good man and full of the Holy Spirit and of faith — and a large number of people took their stand on the Lord's side. Afterwards Barnabas left for Tarsus to look for Saul; and, when he had found him, he brought him to Antioch. And so it came about that, for a whole year, they attended the meetings of the church there, and taught a large number of people; and it was in Antioch that the disciples were first called 'Christians.' 19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26

During this time, some prophets came to Antioch from Jerusalem. One of them, named Agabus, came forward and, under the influence of the Spirit, foretold a great famine that was to spread over all the world — a famine which occurred in the reign of Claudius. So the disciples, without exception, determined, in proportion to their means, to send something to help the followers living in Judea. And this they did, sending it to the officers of the church by the hands of Barnabas and Saul. 27  
28  
29  
30

It was at that time that King Herod began to ill-treat some of the 12

2 members of the church. He had James, the brother of John, be-  
3 headed; and, when he saw that the Jews were pleased with this,  
4 he proceeded to arrest Peter also. (This was during the Festival  
5 of the unleavened bread.) After seizing Peter, Herod put him in  
6 prison, and entrusted him to the keeping of four Guards of four  
7 soldiers each, intending, after the Passover, to bring him up be-  
8 fore the people. So Peter was kept in prison, but meanwhile the  
9 prayers of the church were being earnestly offered to God on his  
10 behalf. Just when Herod was intending to bring him before the  
11 people, on that very night Peter was asleep between two sol-  
12 diers, chained to them both, while there were sentries in front  
13 of the door, guarding the prison. Suddenly an angel of the Lord  
14 stood by him, and a light shone in the cell. The angel struck Pe-  
15 ter on the side, and roused him with the words: "Get up quick-  
16 ly." The chains dropped from his wrists, and then the angel said:  
17 "Put on your girdle and sandals." When Peter had done so, the  
18 angel added: "Throw your cloak around you and follow me."

9 Peter followed him out, not knowing that what was happen-  
10 ing under the angel's guidance was real, but thinking that he  
11 was seeing a vision. Passing the first Guard, and then the second,  
12 they came to the iron gate leading into the city, which opened to  
13 them of itself; and, when they had passed through that, and had  
14 walked along one street, all at once the angel left him.

11 Then Peter came to himself and said: "Now I know beyond  
12 all doubt that the Lord has sent his angel, and has rescued me  
13 from Herod's hands and from all that the Jewish people have  
14 been expecting." As soon as he realized what had happened,  
15 he went to the house of Mary, the mother of John who was also  
16 known as Mark, where a number of people were gathered to-  
17 gether, praying. On his knocking at the door in the gate, a maid-  
18 servant, named Rhoda, came to answer it. She recognized Peter's  
19 voice, but in her joy left the gate unopened, and ran in, and told  
20 them that Peter was standing outside.

15 "You are mad!" they exclaimed. But, when she persisted that  
16 it was so, they said: "It must be his spirit!"

16 Meanwhile Peter went on knocking, and, when they opened  
17 the gate and saw him, they were amazed. Peter signed to them  
18 with his hand to be silent, and then told them how the Lord had



brought him out of the prison, adding: "Tell James and the others all this." Then he left the house, and went away to another place.

In the morning there was a great stir among the soldiers — what could have become of Peter! And, when Herod had made further search for him and failed to find him, he closely questioned the Guard, and ordered them away to execution. Then he went down from Judea to stay at Caesarea. 18 19

It happened that Herod was deeply offended with the people of Tyre and Sidon, but they went in a body to him, and, having succeeded in winning over Blastus, the Chamberlain, they begged Herod for a reconciliation, because their country was dependent on the king's for its food supply. On an appointed day Herod, wearing his state robes, seated himself on his throne, and delivered an oration. The people kept shouting: "It is the voice of God, and not of a person!" 20 21 22

Instantly an angel of the Lord struck him, because he did not give God the glory; and he was attacked with worms, and died. Meanwhile the Lord's message kept extending, and spreading far and wide. 23 24

When Barnabas and Saul had carried out their mission, they returned to Jerusalem, and took with them John, who was also known as Mark. 25

## *The Church and the Gentiles*

### *Doings of the Apostle Paul*

AMONG THE MEMBERS OF THE CHURCH AT ANTIOCH THERE WERE SEVERAL prophets and teachers — Barnabas, Simeon who was known by the name of 'Black', Lucius of Cyrene, Manaen, foster-brother of Prince Herod, and Saul. While they were engaged in the worship of the Lord and were fasting, the Holy Spirit said: "Set apart for me Barnabas and Saul, for the work to which I have called them." Accordingly, after fasting and prayer, they placed their 13 2 3

hands on them and dismissed them.

4 Barnabas and Saul, sent on this mission, as they were, by the  
Holy Spirit, went down to Seleucia, and from there sailed to  
5 Cyprus. On reaching Salamis, they began to tell the message of  
God in the Jewish Synagogues; and they had John with them  
6 as an assistant. After passing through the whole island, they  
reached Paphos, where they found an astrologer who pretended  
to be a prophet — a Jew by birth, whose name was Barjoshua.  
7 He was at the court of the Governor, Sergius Paulus, a man of  
intelligence, who sent for Barnabas and Saul and asked to be  
8 told God's message. But Elymas, the astrologer (for that is the  
meaning of the word), opposed them, eager to divert the Gov-  
9 ernor's attention from the faith. However, Saul (who is the same  
as Paul), full of the Holy Spirit, fixed his eyes on him and said:  
10 "You incarnation of deceit and all fraud! You son of the devil!  
You opponent of all that is good! Will you never cease to divert  
11 'the straight paths of the Lord'? Listen! The hand of the Lord is  
on you even now, and you will be blind for a time and unable to  
see the sun." Immediately a mist and darkness fell on him, and  
12 he went feeling about for some one to guide him. When the Gov-  
ernor saw what had happened, he became a believer in Christ,  
being greatly impressed by the teaching about the Lord.

13 After this, Paul and his companions set sail from Paphos and  
went to Perga in Pamphylia, where John left them and returned  
14 to Jerusalem. The others went on from Perga and arrived at An-  
tioch in Pisidia. There they went into the Synagogue on the Sab-  
15 bath and took their seats. After the reading of the law and the  
prophets, the President of the Synagogue sent them this message  
— "Friends, if you have any helpful words to address to the peo-  
16 ple, now is the time to speak." So Paul rose and, motioning with  
his hand, said:

17 "People of Israel and all here who worship God, hear what  
I have to say. The God of this people Israel chose our ancestors,  
and during their stay in Egypt increased the prosperity of the  
people, and then 'with uplifted arm brought them out from that

land.' For about forty years 'he bore with them in the desert'; 18  
then, after destroying seven heathen nations in Canaan, he allotted 19  
their land to this people — For about four hundred and fifty 20  
years. In later times he gave them Judges, of whom the prophet  
Samuel was the last. And, when they demanded a king, God 21  
gave them Saul the son of Kish, a man of the tribe of Benjamin,  
who reigned for forty years. After removing him, he raised 22  
David to the throne, and bore this testimony to him — 'In David,  
the son of Jesse, I have found a man after my own heart, who 23  
will carry out all my purposes.' It was from this man's descen-  
dants that God, in accordance with his promise, gave Israel a 24  
Savior — Jesus; John having first proclaimed, before the appear-  
ance of Jesus, a baptism on repentance for all the people of Is- 25  
rael. As John was drawing towards the end of his career, he said  
what do you suppose that I am? I am not the Christ. But there 26  
is "one coming" after me, whose sandal I am not worthy to un-  
tie.' Brothers and sisters, descendants of Abraham, and all those 27  
among you who worship God, it was to us that the message of  
this salvation was sent. The people of Jerusalem and their lead- 28  
ers, failing to recognize Jesus, and not understanding the utter-  
ances of the prophets that are read every Sabbath, fulfilled them  
by condemning him. They found no ground at all for putting 29  
him to death, and yet demanded his execution from Pilate; and,  
after carrying out everything written about him, they took Je- 30  
sus down from the cross, and laid him in a tomb. But God raised  
him from the dead; and he appeared for many days to those who 31  
had gone up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, and who are  
now witnesses for him to the people. We also have good news 32  
to tell you, about the promise made to our ancestors — That our 33  
children have had this promise completely fulfilled to them by  
God, by his raising Jesus. That is just what is said in the second  
Psalm —

'You are my Son; this day I have become your Father.'

As to his raising Jesus from the dead, never again to return to 34  
corruption, this is what is said —

‘I will give to you the sacred promises made to David;’

35 And, therefore, in another Psalm it is said —

‘You will not give up the Holy One to undergo corruption.’

36 David, after obediently doing God’s will in his own time, ‘fell  
37 asleep and was laid by the side of his ancestors, and did under-  
38 go corruption; but Jesus, whom God raised from the dead, did  
39 not undergo corruption. I would, therefore, like you to know,  
40 friends, that through Jesus forgiveness of sins is being pro-  
claimed to you, and that, in union with him, everyone who be-  
lieves in him is absolved from every sin from which under the  
law of Moses you could not be absolved. Beware, therefore, that  
what is said in the prophets does not come true of you —

41 ‘Look, you despisers, and wonder, and perish;  
For I am doing a deed in your days —

A deed which, though told you in full, you will never  
believe.’”

42 As Paul and Barnabas were leaving the Synagogue, the people  
43 begged for a repetition of this teaching on the next Sabbath.  
44 After the congregation had dispersed, many of the Jews, and  
of the converts who joined in their worship, followed Paul and  
Barnabas, who talked with them and urged them to continue to  
rely on the loving kindness of God.

44 On the following Sabbath, almost all the city gathered to  
45 hear God’s message. But the sight of the crowds of people filled  
the minds of the Jews with jealousy, and they kept contradicting  
46 Paul’s statements in violent language. Then Paul and Barnabas  
spoke out fearlessly, and said:

47 “It was necessary that the message of God should be told  
to you first; but, since you reject it and reckon yourselves not  
worthy of the eternal life — we turn to the Gentiles! For this is  
the Lord’s command to us —

‘I have destined you for a light to the Gentiles,  
A means of salvation to the ends of the earth.’”

On hearing this, the Gentiles were glad and extolled God's message; and all those who had been enrolled for eternal life became believers in Christ; and the Lord's message was carried throughout that district. But the Jews incited the women of high social standing who worshiped with them, and the leading men of the town, and started a persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and drove them out of their neighborhood. They, however, shook the dust off their feet in protest, and went to Iconium, leaving the disciples full of joy and of the Holy Spirit.

The same thing occurred in Iconium, where Paul and Barnabas went into the Jewish Synagogue, and spoke in such a way that a great number of both Jews and Greeks believed in Christ. But the Jews who refused to believe stirred up the Gentiles, and poisoned their minds against the Lord's followers. Therefore Paul and Barnabas spent a long time there, and spoke out fearlessly, relying on the Lord, who confirmed the message of his love by permitting signs and wonders to take place at their hands. But the townspeople were divided, some siding with the Jews, some with the apostles; and, when there was an attempt on the part of both Gentiles and Jews, with their leaders, to resort to violence and to stone them, the apostles heard of it, and took refuge in Lystra and Derbe, towns in Lycaonia, and in the district around, and there they continued to tell the good news.

In the streets of Lystra there used to sit a man who had no power in his feet; he had been lame from his birth, and had never walked. This man was listening to Paul speaking, when Paul, fixing his eyes on him, and seeing that he had the faith to be healed, said loudly: "Stand upright on your feet."

The man leaped up, and began walking about, and the crowd, seeing what Paul had done, called out in the Lycaonian language: "The Gods have come down to us in human form." So they called Barnabas 'Zeus,' and Paul 'Hermes,' because he took the lead in speaking; and the priest of Zeus-beyond-the-Walls, accompanied by the crowd, brought bullocks and garlands to the gates, with the intention of offering sacrifices. But, when the apostles Barnabas and Paul heard of it, they tore their clothes

and rushed out into the crowd.

15 “Friends, why are you doing this?” they shouted. “We are  
only people like yourselves, and we have come with the good  
news that you should turn away from these follies to a living  
God, ‘who made the heavens, the earth, the sea, and everything  
16 that is in them.’ In bygone times he permitted all the nations to  
17 go their own ways. Yet he has not failed to give you, in the good  
he does, some revelation of himself — sending you from heav-  
en rain and fruitful seasons, and gladdening your hearts with  
18 plenty and good cheer.” Even with this appeal they could hardly  
restrain the people from offering sacrifice to them.

19 Presently, however, there came some Jews from Antioch, and  
Iconium who, after they had won over the people, stoned Paul,  
and dragged him out of the town, thinking him to be dead. But,  
20 when the disciples had gathered around him, he got up and  
went back into the town; the next day he went with Barnabas to  
21 Derbe. After telling the good news throughout that town, and  
making a number of converts, they returned to Lystra, Iconium,  
22 and Antioch, reassuring the minds of the disciples, urging them  
to remain true to the faith, and showing that it is only through  
23 many troubles that we can enter the kingdom of God. They also  
appointed officers for them in every church, and, after prayer  
and fasting, commended them to the Lord in whom they had  
24 learned to believe. Paul and Barnabas then went through Pisidia,  
25 and came into Pamphylia, and, after telling the message at Per-  
26 ga, went down to Attaleia. From there they sailed to Antioch —  
the place where they had been committed to the gracious care  
27 of God for the work which they had now finished. After their  
arrival, they gathered the church together, and gave an account  
of all that God had helped them to do, and especially how he  
28 had opened to the Gentiles the door of faith; and at Antioch they  
stayed with the disciples for a considerable time.

15 But certain persons came down from Judea, and began to teach  
the Lord’s followers that, unless they were circumcised, in ac-  
cordance with the custom required by Moses, they could not be  
2 saved. This gave rise to a serious dispute, and much discussion,

between Paul and Barnabas and these people, and it was therefore settled that Paul and Barnabas and others of their number should go up to Jerusalem, to consult the apostles and officers of the church about the matter under discussion.

The church, therefore, sent them on their journey, and they made their way through Phoenicia and Samaria, telling the story of the conversion of the Gentiles, to the great joy of all the followers. On their arrival at Jerusalem, they were welcomed by the church, as well as by the apostles and the officers, and gave an account of all that God had helped them to do. Some of the Pharisees' party, however, who had become believers in Christ, came forward and declared that they were bound to circumcise converts and to direct them to observe the law of Moses. The apostles and the officers of the church held a meeting to consider this question. After much discussion, Peter rose and said:

"You, my friends, know well that long ago God singled me out — that through my lips the Gentiles should hear the message of the good news, and become believers in Christ. Now God, who reads all hearts, declared his acceptance of the Gentiles, by giving them the Holy Spirit, just as he did to us. He made no distinction between them and us, when he purified their hearts by their faith. Why, then, do you now provoke God, by putting on the necks of these disciples a yoke which neither our ancestors nor we were able to bear? No, it is through the loving kindness of the Lord Jesus that we, just as they do, believe that we have been saved."

Every voice in the assembly was hushed, as they listened to Barnabas and Paul, while they gave an account of all the signs and wonders which God had shown among the Gentiles through them. After they had finished speaking, James addressed the Council.

"Friends," he began, "hear what I have to say. Simon has described the manner in which God first visited the Gentiles, in order to take from among them a people to bear his name. And that is in harmony with the words of the prophets, where they say —

"After this I will return;

And I will rebuild the house of David which has fallen —  
Its ruins I will rebuild,

And will set it up once more;

17 That so the rest of mankind may earnestly seek the Lord —

Even all the Gentiles on whom my name has been bestowed.”

18 Says the Lord, as he does these things, foreknown from  
of old.’

19 In my judgment, therefore, we should not add to the difficulties  
20 of those Gentiles who are turning to God, but we should write  
to them to abstain from food that has been polluted by being  
sacrificed to idols, from impurity, from eating the flesh of strangled  
21 animals, and from blood. For in every town, for generations  
past, there have been those who preach Moses, read as he is in  
the Synagogues every Sabbath.”

22 It was then decided by the apostles and the officers, with the  
assent of the whole church, to choose some of their number, and  
send them to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas. Those chosen  
were Judas (called Barsabas) and Silas, who were leaders among  
23 the community. They were bearers of the following letter —

‘The apostles, and the followers who are the officers of the  
church, send their greetings to the followers of the Lord of Gen-  
24 tile birth in Antioch, Syria, and Cilicia. As we had heard that  
some of our number had upset you by their assertions, and un-  
settled your minds — without instructions from us — We met  
25 and decided to choose certain men and send them to you with  
our dear friends Barnabas and Paul, who have risked their lives  
26 for the name of our Lord, Jesus Christ. We are accordingly send-  
ing Judas and Silas, and they will tell you by word of mouth  
27 what we are now writing. We have, therefore, decided, under the  
guidance of the Holy Spirit, to lay no further burden on you be-  
28 yond these necessary conditions — That you abstain from food  
offered to idols, from blood, from eating the flesh of strangled  
29 animals, and from impurity. If you guard yourselves against  
such things, it will be well with you. Farewell.’



So the bearers of this letter were sent on their way, and went 30  
down to Antioch. There they called a meeting of all the follow- 31  
ers, and delivered the letter, the reading of which caused great 32  
rejoicing by its encouraging contents. Judas and Silas, who were 33  
themselves prophets, further encouraged the them by many an  
address, and strengthened their faith. After some stay, they were  
dismissed with kind farewells from the followers, and returned  
to those who had sent them.

Paul and Barnabas, however, remained in Antioch, where 35  
they taught and, with the help of many others, told the good 36  
news of the Lord's message. Some time after this, Paul said to 37  
Barnabas: "Let us go back and visit the Lord's followers in every 38  
town in which we have told the Lord's message, and see how 39  
they are prospering." Barnabas wished to take with them John, 40  
whose other name was Mark; but Paul felt that they ought not to 41  
take with them the man who had deserted them in Pamphylia,  
and had not gone on with them to their work. This caused such  
unpleasant feeling between them that they parted ways, Barn-  
abas taking Mark and sailing for Cyprus, while Paul chose Silas  
for his companion and, after he had been committed by the fol-  
lowers to the gracious care of the Lord, started on his journey  
and went through Syria and Cilicia, strengthening the churches  
in the faith.

Among other places Paul went to Derbe and Lystra. At the 16  
latter place they found a disciple, named Timothy, whose moth-  
er was a Jewess who had become a believer in Christ, while  
his father was a Greek, and who was well spoken of by the fol- 2  
lowers of the Lord in Lystra and Iconium. Wishing to take this 3  
man with him on his journey, Paul caused him to be circum-  
cised out of consideration for the Jews in that neighborhood, for 4  
they all knew that his father had been a Greek. As they traveled  
from town to town, they gave the followers the decisions which  
had been reached by the apostles and officers of the church at  
Jerusalem, for them to observe.

So the churches grew stronger in the faith, and increased in 5  
numbers from day to day.

They next went through the Phrygian district of Galatia, but 6  
were restrained by the Holy Spirit from delivering the message

7 in Roman Asia. When they reached the borders of Mysia, they  
attempted to go into Bithynia, but the Spirit of Jesus did not per-  
8 mit them. Passing through Mysia, they went down to Troas; and  
9 there one night Paul saw a vision. A Macedonian was standing  
and appealing to him — ‘Come over to Macedonia and help us.’  
10 So, immediately after Paul had seen the vision, we looked for  
an opportunity to cross over to Macedonia, concluding that God  
had summoned us to tell the good news to the people there.

11 Accordingly we set sail from Troas, and ran before the wind  
12 to Samothrace, reaching Neapolis the next day. From there we  
made our way to Philippi, which is the principal city of that part  
of Macedonia, and also a Roman Settlement.

13 In that city we spent several days. On the Sabbath we went  
outside the gate to the riverside, where we supposed there  
would be a place of prayer; and we sat down and talked to the  
14 women who were gathered there. Among them was a woman,  
named Lydia, belonging to Thyatira, a dealer in purple cloth,  
who was accustomed to join in the worship of God. The Lord  
touched this woman’s heart, so that she gave attention to the  
15 message delivered by Paul, and, when she and her household  
had been baptized, she urged us to become her guests.

“Since you have shown your conviction,” she said, “that I  
really am a believer in the Lord, come and stay in my house.”  
And she insisted on our doing so.

16 One day, as we were on our way to the place of prayer, we  
were met by a girl possessed by a divining spirit, who made  
17 large profits for her masters by fortune-telling. This girl followed  
Paul and the rest of us, calling: “These men are servants of the  
most high God, and they are bringing you news of a way to sal-  
18 vation.” She had been doing this for several days, when Paul,  
much vexed, turned and said to the spirit within her: “In the  
name of Jesus Christ I command you to leave her.” That very  
moment the spirit left her.

19 When her masters saw that there was no hope of further  
profit from her, they seized Paul and Silas, dragged them into  
20 the public square to the authorities, and took them before the

Magistrates.

"These men are causing a great disturbance in our town," they complained; "They are Jews, and they are teaching customs which it is not right for us, as Romans, to sanction or adopt." 21

The mob rose as one person against them, and the Magistrates stripped them of their clothing and ordered them to be beaten with rods. After beating them severely, the Magistrates put them in prison, with orders to the jailer to keep them in safe custody. On receiving so strict an order, the Governor put them into the inner cell, and secured their feet in the stocks. About midnight, while Paul and Silas were praying and singing hymns to God, and while the prisoners were listening to them, suddenly there was an earthquake of such violence that the jail was shaken to its foundations; all the doors flew open, and all the prisoners' chains were loosened. Roused from his sleep, and seeing the prison doors open, the Governor drew his sword intending to kill himself, in the belief that the prisoners had escaped. But Paul called out loudly: "Do not harm yourself; we are all here." 22 23 24 25 26 27 28

Calling for a light, the Governor rushed in, and flung himself trembling at the feet of Paul and Silas. Then he led them out, and said: "What must I do to be saved?" 29 30

"Believe in Jesus, our Lord," they replied, "and you will be saved, you and your household too." Then they spoke to him of God's message, and to all his household as well. And that very hour of the night he took them and washed their wounds, and he himself and everyone belonging to him were baptized without delay. Afterwards he took them up to his house and set before them something to eat, rejoicing that he, with all his household, had come to believe in God. 31 32 33 34

In the morning the Magistrates sent the police with an order for the men to be discharged. The jailer told Paul of his instructions. "The Magistrates have sent an order for your discharge," he said, "so you had better leave the place at once and go quietly away." 35 36

But Paul's answer to them was: "They have flogged us in public without trial, though we are Roman citizens, and they have put us in prison, and now they are for sending us out secretly! No, indeed! Let them come and take us out themselves." 37

38 The police reported his words to the Magistrates, who, on hear-  
ing that Paul and Silas were Roman citizens, were alarmed, and  
39 went to the prison, and did their best to conciliate them. Then  
they took them out, and begged them to leave the city. When  
40 Paul and Silas left the prison, they went to Lydia's house, and,  
after they had seen the Lord's followers, and encouraged them,  
they left the place.

17 After passing through Amphipolis and Apollonia, Paul and  
2 Silas came to Thessalonica. Here the Jews had a Synagogue; and,  
following his usual custom, Paul joined them, and for three Sab-  
baths addressed them, drawing his arguments from the scrip-  
3 tures. He laid before them and explained that the Christ must  
undergo suffering and rise from the dead; and "It is this man,"  
he declared, "who is the Christ — this Jesus about whom I am  
telling you."

4 Some of the people were convinced, and threw in their lot  
with Paul and Silas, as did also a large body of Greeks who were  
accustomed to join in the Jewish services, and a great number  
5 of leading women. But the Jewish leaders, becoming jealous,  
engaged some worthless fellows from the streets, and, getting a  
mob together, kept the city in an uproar. They attacked Jason's  
house, with the intention of bringing Paul and Silas before the  
6 Popular Assembly; and, not finding them there, they proceeded  
to drag Jason and some of the Lord's followers before the city  
magistrates, shouting out:

7 "These men, who have turned the world upside down, have  
now come here, and have been harbored by Jason! They say that  
some one else is king — a man called Jesus!"

8 On hearing this, the people and the city magistrates were  
9 much concerned; and, before letting them go, they took bail  
from Jason and the others. That very night the followers sent  
10 Paul and Silas off to Beroea; and on reaching that place, they  
went to the Jewish Synagogue. These Jews of Beroea were better  
11 disposed than those in Thessalonica, for they welcomed the mes-  
sage with great readiness, and daily examined the scriptures to  
12 see if what was said was true. As a consequence, many of them

became believers in Christ, besides a considerable number of Greek women of position, and of men also. But, when the Jewish leaders in Thessalonica found out that God's message had been delivered by Paul at Beroea, they came there too, exciting and disturbing the minds of the people. The followers immediately arranged for Paul to go away to the coast, but both Silas and Timothy stayed behind in Beroea. The friends who escorted Paul took him as far as Athens, and, after receiving a message for Silas and Timothy to join him as quickly as possible, they started on their return.

While Paul was waiting for them at Athens, his heart was stirred at seeing the whole city full of idols. So he argued in the Synagogue with the Jews and with those who joined in their worship, as well as daily in the public Square with those who happened to be there. Among others, some Epicurean and Stoic Philosophers joined issue with him. Some asked "What is this prater wanting to make out?", while others said "He seems to be a preacher of foreign Deities." (This was because he was telling the good news about Jesus and the resurrection). So they laid hold of him and took him to the Court of Areopagus.

"May we hear," they asked, "what new teaching this is which you are giving? For you are bringing some strange things to our notice, and we should like to know what they mean." (All Athenians and the foreigners staying in the city found no time for anything else but telling, or listening to, the last new thing.)

So Paul took his stand in the middle of the Court, and said — "People of Athens, on every hand I see signs of your being very devout. For as I was going about, looking at your sacred shrines, I came upon an altar with this inscription — 'To an Unknown God.' What, therefore, you worship in ignorance, that I am now proclaiming to you. The God who made the world and all things that are in it — he, Lord as he is of heaven and Earth, does not live in temples made by hands, nor yet do human hands minister to his wants, as though he needed anything, since he himself gives, to all, life, and breath, and all things. He made all races of the earth's surface — fixing a time for their rise and fall, and the

27 limits of their settlements — That they might search for God,  
if by any means they might feel their way to him and find him.  
28 And yet he is not really far from any one of us; for in him we live  
and move and are. To use the words of some of your own po-  
ets —

‘His offspring, too, are we.’

29 Therefore, as the offspring of God, we must not think that the  
Deity has any resemblance to anything made of gold, or silver, or  
30 stone — a work of human art and imagination. True, God looked  
with indulgence on the days of people’s ignorance, but now he  
is announcing to everyone everywhere the need for repentance,  
31 because he has fixed a day on which he intends to ‘judge the  
world with justice,’ by a man whom he has appointed — and  
of this he has given all people a pledge by raising this man from  
the dead.”

32 On hearing of a resurrection of the dead, some began jeering,  
but others said that they wanted to hear what he had to say  
33 about that another time. And so Paul left the Court. There were,  
34 however, some people who joined him, and became believers in  
Christ. Among them were Dionysius, a member of the Court of  
Areopagus, a woman named Damaris, and several others.

18 On leaving Athens, Paul next went to Corinth. There he met  
2 a Jew of the name of Aquila, from Pontus, who, with his wife  
Priscilla, had lately come from Italy, in consequence of the order  
which had been issued by the Emperor Claudius for all Jews to  
3 leave Rome. Paul paid them a visit, and, since their trade was  
the same as his, he stayed and worked with them — their trade  
4 was tent-making. Every Sabbath Paul gave addresses in the  
Synagogue, trying to convince both Jews and Greeks.

5 But, when Silas and Timothy had come down from Mace-  
donia, Paul devoted himself entirely to delivering the message,  
earnestly maintaining before the Jews that Jesus was the Christ.  
6 However, as they set themselves against him and became abu-  
sive, Paul shook his clothes in protest and said to them: “Your  
blood be on your own heads. My conscience is clear. From this  
time forward I will go to the Gentiles.”

So he left, and went to the house of a certain Titius Justus, 7  
who had been accustomed to join in the worship of God, and  
whose house was next door to the Synagogue. Crispus, the Pres- 8  
ident of the Synagogue, came to believe in the Lord, and so did  
all his household; and many of the Corinthians, as they listened  
to Paul, became believers in Christ and were baptized. One night 9  
the Lord said to Paul, in a vision: "Have no fear, but continue to  
speak, and refuse to be silenced; for I am with you, and no one 10  
will do you harm, for I have many people in this city." So he set- 11  
tled there for a year and a half, and taught God's message among  
the people.

While Gallio was governor of Greece, some of the Jewish 12  
leaders made a combined attack on Paul, and brought him be-  
fore the Governor's Bench, charging him with persuading peo- 13  
ple to worship God in a way forbidden by the law. Just as Paul 14  
was on the point of speaking, Gallio said to them:

"If this were a case of misdemeanor or some serious crime,  
there would be some reason for my listening patiently to you;  
but, since it is a dispute about words, and names, and your own 15  
law, you must see to it yourselves. I do not choose to be a judge  
in such matters."

Saying this, he drove them back from the Bench. Then they 16  
all set on Sosthenes, the President of the Synagogue, and beat  
him in front of the Bench, but Gallio did not trouble himself 17  
about any of these things.

Paul remained there some time after this, and then took 18  
leave of the followers, and sailed to Syria with Priscilla and  
Aquila, but not before his head had been shaved at Cenchreae,  
because he was under a vow. They put into Ephesus, and there 19  
Paul, leaving his companions, went into the Synagogue and  
addressed the Jews. When they asked him to prolong his stay, 20  
he declined, saying however, as he took his leave, "I will come  
back again to you, please God," and then set sail from Ephesus. 21  
On reaching Caesarea, he went up to Jerusalem and exchanged  
greetings with the church, and then went down to Antioch. 22  
After making some stay in Antioch, he set out on a tour through  
the Phrygian district of Galatia, strengthening the faith of all the 23  
disciples as he went.

24 Meanwhile there had come to Ephesus an Alexandrian Jew,  
25 named Apollos, an eloquent man, who was well-versed in  
the scriptures. He had been well-instructed in the cause of the  
Lord, and with burning zeal he spoke of, and taught carefully,  
26 the facts about Jesus, though he knew of no baptism but John's.  
This man began to speak out fearlessly in the Synagogue; and  
27 when Priscilla and Aquila heard him, they took him home and  
explained the cause of God to him more carefully still. When he  
wanted to cross to Greece, the followers furthered his plans, and  
wrote to the disciples there to welcome him. On his arrival he  
proved of great assistance to those who had, through the loving  
28 kindness of God, become believers in Christ, for he vigorously  
confuted the Jews, publicly proving by the scriptures that Jesus  
was the Christ.

19 While Apollos was at Corinth, Paul passed through the  
inland districts of Roman Asia, and went to Ephesus. There he  
2 found some disciples, of whom he asked: "Did you, when you  
became believers in Christ, receive the Holy Spirit?"

"No," they answered, "we did not even hear that there was  
a Holy Spirit."

3 "What then was your baptism?" Paul asked. "John's baptism  
4 was a baptism on repentance," rejoined Paul, "and John told the  
people (speaking of the 'one coming; after him) that they should  
believe in him — that is in Jesus."

5 On hearing this, they were baptized into the faith of the  
6 Lord Jesus, and, after Paul had placed his hands on them, the  
Holy Spirit descended on them, and they began to speak with  
7 'tongues' and to preach. There were about twelve of them  
in all.

8 Paul went to the Synagogue there, and for three months  
spoke out fearlessly, giving addresses and trying to convince  
9 his hearers, about the kingdom of God. Some of them, howev-  
er, hardened their ears and refused to believe, denouncing the  
cause before the people. So Paul left them and withdrew his dis-  
ciples, and gave daily addresses in the lecture-hall of Tyrannus.  
10 This went on for two years, so that all who lived in Roman Asia,  
Jews and Greeks alike, heard the Lord's message.



God did miracles of no ordinary kind by Paul's hands; so that people would carry home to the sick handkerchiefs or aprons that had touched his body, and their diseases would leave them and the wicked spirits go out of them. An attempt was made by some itinerant Jews, who were exorcists, to use the name of the Lord Jesus over those who had wicked spirits in them.

"I order you," they would say, "by the Jesus, whom Paul preaches." The seven sons of Sceva, a Jewish chief priest, were doing this; but the wicked spirit answered them: "Jesus I acknowledge, and Paul I know, but you — who are you?"

Then the man, in whom this wicked spirit was, sprang on them, mastered both of them, and so completely overpowered them, that they fled out of the house, stripped of their clothes, and wounded. This incident came to the knowledge of all the Jews and Greeks living at Ephesus; they were all awe-struck, and the name of the Lord Jesus was held in the highest honor. Many, too, of those who had become believers in Christ came with a full confession of their practices; while a number of people, who had practiced magic, collected their books and burnt them publicly; and on reckoning up the price of these, they found it amounted to fifty thousand silver coins. So irresistibly did the Lord's message spread and prevail.

Sometime after these events Paul resolved to go through Macedonia and Greece, and then make his way to Jerusalem. "And after I have been there," he said, "I must visit Rome also." So he sent to Macedonia two of his helpers, Timothy and Erastus, while he himself stayed for some time longer in Roman Asia.

Just about that time a great disturbance arose about the cause. A silversmith named Demetrius, who made silver models of the shrine of Artemis, and so gave a great deal of work to the artisans, got these men together, as well as the workmen engaged in similar occupations, and said:

"Men, you know that our prosperity depends on this work, and you see and hear that not only at Ephesus, but in almost the whole of Roman Asia, this Paul has convinced and won over great numbers of people, by his assertion that those Gods

27 which are made by hands are not Gods at all. So that not only is  
this business of ours likely to fall into discredit, but there is the  
further danger that the Temple of the great Goddess Artemis  
will be thought nothing of, and that she herself will be deprived  
of her splendor — though all Roman Asia and the whole world  
worship her.”

28 When they heard this, the men were greatly enraged, and be-  
gan shouting — “Great is Artemis of the Ephesians!” The com-  
29 motion spread through the whole city, and the people rushed  
together into the amphitheater, dragging with them Gaius and  
Aristarchus, two Macedonians who were Paul’s traveling com-  
30 panions. Paul wished to go into the amphitheater and face the  
people, but the disciples would not let him, while some of the  
31 chief religious officials of the province, who were friendly to  
him, sent repeated entreaties to him not to trust himself inside.  
32 Meanwhile some were shouting one thing and some another,  
for the Assembly was all in confusion, most of those present  
33 not even knowing why they had met. But some of the crowd  
prompted Alexander, whom several of the Jewish leaders had  
pushed to the front, and he waved his hand to show that he  
34 wanted to speak in their defense to the people. However, when  
they recognized him as a Jew, one cry broke from them all, and  
they continued shouting for two hours — “Great is Artemis of  
the Ephesians!”

35 When the Recorder had succeeded in quieting the crowd, he  
said: “People of Ephesus, who is there, I ask you, who needs to  
be told that this city of Ephesus is the Warden of the Temple of  
the great Artemis, and of the statue which fell down from Zeus?  
36 As these are undeniable facts, you ought to keep calm and do  
nothing rash; for you have brought these men here, though they  
37 are neither robbers of Temples nor blasphemers of our Goddess.  
If, however, Demetrius and the artisans who are acting with him  
38 have a charge to make against anyone, there are court days and  
there are Magistrates; let both parties take legal proceedings. But  
39 if you want anything more, it will have to be settled in the reg-  
ular Assembly. For I tell you that we are in danger of being pro-  
40 ceeded against for today’s riot, there being nothing to account  
for it; and in that case we will be at a loss to give any reason for

this disorderly gathering.”

With these words he dismissed the Assembly. 41

When the uproar had ceased, Paul sent for the disciples, and, 20  
with encouraging words, bade them goodbye, and started on his  
journey to Macedonia. After going through those districts and 2  
speaking many encouraging words to the disciples, he went into  
Greece, where he stayed three months. He was about to sail to 3  
Syria, when he learned that a plot had been laid against him by  
several of the Jewish leaders; so he decided to return by way of 4  
Macedonia. He was accompanied by Sopater the son of Pyrrhus,  
of Berea, Aristarchus and Secundus from Thessalonica, Gaius 5  
of Derbe, and Timothy, as well as by Tychicus and Trophimus  
of Roman Asia. These people went to Troas and waited for us 6  
there; while we ourselves sailed from Philippi after the Passover,  
and joined them five days later at Troas, where we stayed for 7  
a week.

On the first day of the week, when we had met for the break- 7  
ing of bread, Paul, who was intending to leave the next day,  
began to address those who were present, and prolonged his  
address until midnight. There were a good many lamps in the 8  
upstairs room, where we had met; and a young man named 9  
Eutychus, sitting at the window, was gradually overcome with  
great drowsiness, as Paul continued his address. At last, quite 10  
overpowered by his drowsiness, he fell from the third story to  
the ground, and was picked up for dead. But Paul went down,  
threw himself on him, and put his arms around him.

“Do not be alarmed,” he said, “he is still alive.” Then he 11  
went upstairs; and, after breaking and partaking of the bread,  
he talked with them at great length until daybreak, and then left.  
Meanwhile they had taken the lad away alive, and were greatly 12  
comforted.

We started first, went on board ship, and sailed for Assos, 13  
intending to take Paul on board there. This was by his own ar-  
rangement, as he intended to go by land himself. So, when he 14  
met us at Assos, we took him on board and went on to Mitylene.  
The day after we had sailed from there, we arrived off Chios, 15

16 touched at Samos the following day, and the next day reached  
Miletus; for Paul had decided to sail past Ephesus, so as to avoid  
spending much time in Roman Asia. He was making haste to  
reach Jerusalem, if possible, by the Festival at the close of the  
Harvest.

17 From Miletus, however, he sent to Ephesus and invited the of-  
18 ficers of the church to meet him; and, when they came, he said  
to them: "You know well the life that I always led among you  
19 from the very first day that I set foot in Roman Asia, serving the  
Lord, as I did, in all humility, amid the tears and trials which fell  
20 to my lot through the plots of some of the Jewish leaders. I never  
shrank from telling you anything that could be helpful to you,  
21 or from teaching you both in public and in private. I earnestly  
pointed both Jews and Greeks to the repentance that leads to  
22 God, and to faith in Jesus, our Lord. And now, under spiritu-  
al constraint, I am here on my way to Jerusalem, not knowing  
23 what will happen to me there, except that in town after town the  
Holy Spirit plainly declares to me that imprisonment and trou-  
24 bles await me. But I count my life of no value to myself, if only  
I may complete the course marked out for me, and the task that  
was allotted me by the Lord Jesus — which was to declare the  
25 good news of the love of God. And now, I tell you, I know that  
none of you will ever see my face again — you among whom I  
26 have gone about proclaiming the kingdom. Therefore I declare  
to you this day, that my conscience is clear in regard to the fate  
27 of any of you, for I have not shrunk from announcing the whole  
purpose of God regarding you. Be watchful over yourselves,  
28 and over the whole flock, of which the Holy Spirit has placed  
you in charge, to shepherd the church of God, which he won for  
29 himself at the cost of his life. I know that, after my departure,  
merciless wolves will get in among you, who will not spare the  
30 flock; and from among yourselves, too, people will arise, who  
will teach perversions of truth, so as to draw away the disciples  
31 after them. Therefore, be on your guard, remembering how for  
three years, night and day, I never ceased, even with tears, to  
32 warn each one of you. And now I commend you to the Lord and

to the message of his love — a message which has the power to build up your characters, and to give you your place among all those who have become Christ's people. I have never coveted anyone's gold or silver or clothing. You, yourselves, know that these hands of mine provided not only for my own wants, but for my companions also. I left nothing undone to show you that, laboring as I labored, you ought to help the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how he said himself — 'It is more blessed to give than to receive.'" When Paul had finished speaking, he knelt down and prayed with them all. All were in tears; and throwing their arms around Paul's neck, they kissed him again and again, grieving most of all over what he had said — that they would never see his face again. Then they escorted him to the ship.

When we had torn ourselves away and had set sail, we ran before the wind to Cos; the next day we came to Rhodes, and from there to Patara, where we found a ship crossing to Phoenicia, and went on board and set sail. After sighting Cyprus and leaving it on the left, we sailed to Syria, and put into Tyre, where the ship was to discharge her cargo. There we found the disciples and stayed a week with them. Speaking under the influence of the Spirit, they warned Paul not to set foot in Jerusalem. However, when we had come to the end of our visit, we went on our way, all the disciples with their wives and children escorting us out of the city. We knelt down on the beach, and prayed, and then said goodbye to one another; after which we went on board, and they returned home.

After we had made the run from Tyre, we landed at Ptolemais, and exchanged greetings with the followers there, and spent a day with them. The next day we left, and reached Caesarea, where we went to the house of Philip, the missionary, who was one of 'the Seven,' and stayed with him. He had four unmarried daughters, who had the gift of prophecy. During our visit, which lasted several days, a prophet, named Agabus, came down from Judea. He came to see us, and, taking Paul's girdle, and binding his own feet and hands with it, said: "This is what

12 the Holy Spirit says — ‘The man to whom this girdle belongs  
will be bound like this by the religious authorities in Jerusalem,  
and they will give him up to the Gentiles.’” When we heard that,  
we and the people of the place began to entreat Paul not to go up  
to Jerusalem.

13 It was then that Paul made the reply: “Why are you weeping  
and breaking my heart like this? For my part, I am ready not  
only to be bound, but even to suffer death at Jerusalem for the  
14 name of the Lord Jesus.” So, as he would not be persuaded, we  
said no more to him, only adding — “The Lord’s will be done.”

15 At the end of our visit, we made our preparations, and started  
16 on our way up to Jerusalem. Some of the disciples from Caesarea  
went with us, and brought Mnason with them, a Cypriot disci-  
17 ple of long standing, with whom we were to stay. On our arrival  
at Jerusalem, the followers of the Lord there gave us a hearty  
18 welcome; and the next day Paul went with us to see James, and  
19 all the officers of the church were present. After greeting them,  
Paul related in detail all that God had done among the Gentiles  
20 through his efforts; and, when they had heard it, they began  
praising God, and said to Paul:

“You see, brother, that those of our people who have become  
believers in Christ may be numbered by tens of thousands, and  
21 they are all naturally earnest in upholding the Jewish law. Now  
they have heard it said about you, that you teach all of our peo-  
ple in foreign countries to forsake Moses, for you tell them not  
to circumcise their children or even to observe Jewish customs.  
22 Well now, as they are certain to hear of your arrival, do what we  
23 are going to suggest. We have four men here, who have of their  
own accord put themselves under a vow. Join these men, share  
24 their purification, and bear their expenses, so that they may  
shave their heads; and then all will see that there is no truth in  
what they have been told about you, but that, on the contrary,  
25 you yourself rule your life in obedience to the Jewish law. As to  
the Gentiles who have become believers in Christ, we have sent  
our decision that they should avoid food offered to idols, and  
blood, and the flesh of strangled animals, and impurity.”

Paul joined the men, and the next day shared their purification, and went into the Temple, and gave notice of the expiration of the period of purification when the usual offering should have been made on behalf of each of them. 26

But, just as the seven days were drawing to a close, some of the Jewish people from Roman Asia caught sight of Paul in the Temple, and caused great excitement among all the people present, by seizing Paul and shouting: "People of Israel! Help! This is the man who teaches everyone everywhere against our people, our law, and this place; and, what is more, he has actually brought Greeks into the Temple and defiled this sacred place." (For they had previously seen Trophimus the Ephesian in Paul's company in the city, and were under the belief that Paul had taken him into the Temple.) 27 28 29

The whole city was stirred, and the people quickly collected, seized Paul, and dragged him out of the Temple, when the doors were immediately shut. They were bent on killing him, when it was reported to the officer commanding the garrison, that all Jerusalem was in commotion. He instantly got together some officers and soldiers, and charged down on the crowd, who, when they saw the commanding officer and his soldiers, stopped beating Paul. Then he went up to Paul, arrested him, ordered him to be doubly chained, and proceeded to inquire who he was, and what he had been doing. Some of the crowd said one thing, and some another; and, as he could get no definite reply because of the uproar, he ordered Paul to be taken into the barracks. When Paul reached the steps, he was actually being carried by the soldiers, owing to the violence of the mob; for the people were following in a mass, shouting out: "Kill him!" 30 31 32 33 34 35 36

Just as he was about to be taken into the Fort, Paul said to the commanding officer: "May I speak to you?" 37

"Do you know Greek?" asked the commanding officer. "Are not you, then, the Egyptian who some time ago raised an insurrection and led the four thousand Bandits out into the wilderness?" 38

"No," said Paul, "I am a Jew of Tarsus in Cilicia, a citizen of a 39

city of some note; and I beg you to give me permission to speak to the people."

40 The commanding officer gave his permission, and Paul, standing on the steps, made signs with his hand to the people, and, when comparative silence had been obtained, he said to  
22 them in Hebrew: "Brothers and fathers, listen to the defense  
2 which I am about to make." When they heard that he was speaking to them in Hebrew, they were still more quiet; and Paul went on:

3 "I am a Jew, from Tarsus in Cilicia, but I was brought up in this city under the teaching of Gamaliel, and educated in accordance with the strict system of our ancestral law. I was as zealous  
4 in God's service as any of you who are here today. In my persecution of this cause I did not stop even at the taking of life. I put  
5 in chains, and imprisoned, men and women alike — And to that the high priest himself and all the Council can testify. For I had letters of introduction from them to our fellow Jews at Damascus, and I was on my way to that place, to bring those whom I might find there prisoners to Jerusalem for punishment. While  
6 I was still on my way, just as I was getting close to Damascus, about midday, suddenly there flashed from the heavens a great  
7 light all around me. I fell to the ground, and heard a voice saying to me 'Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me?' 'Who are you, Lord?' I replied. Then the voice said 'I am Jesus of Nazareth whom you are persecuting.' The men with me saw the light, but  
8 did not hear the speaker's voice. Then I said 'What am I to do, Lord?' 'Get up and go into Damascus,' The Lord said to me, 'and there you will be told all that you have been appointed to do.' In  
9 consequence of that dazzling light I could not see, but my companions held me by the hand, until I reached Damascus. There a  
10 man named Ananias, a strict observer of our law, well spoken of by all the Jewish inhabitants, came to see me. Standing close to  
11 me, he said 'Saul, my brother, recover your sight.' And then and there I recovered my sight and looked up at him. Then he said  
12 'The God of our ancestors has appointed you to learn his will, and to see the righteous one, and to hear words from his lips; for  
13 you will be a witness for him to all the world of what you have just seen and heard. And now why wait any longer: Be baptized  
14  
15  
16



at once, wash away your sins, and invoke his name. After my return to Jerusalem, while I was praying one day in the Temple, I fell into a trance, and saw Jesus saying to me 'Make haste and leave Jerusalem at once, because they will not accept your testimony about me.' 'Lord,' I answered, 'these people know that I used to imprison and scourge, in Synagogue after Synagogue, those who believed in you; and, when the blood of your martyr, Stephen, was being shed, I was myself standing by, approving of his death, and took charge of the clothes of those who were murdering him. But Jesus said to me 'Go; for I will send you to the Gentiles far away'."

Up to this point the people had been listening to Paul, but at these words they called out: "Kill him! A fellow like this ought not to have been allowed to live!" As they were shouting, tearing off their clothes, and throwing dust in the air, the commanding officer ordered Paul to be taken into the Fort, and directed that he should be examined under the lash so that he might find out the reason for their outcry against him.

But just as they had tied him up to be scourged, Paul said to the captain standing near: "Is it legal for you to scourge a Roman citizen, unconvicted?" On hearing this, the captain went and reported it to the commanding officer. "Do you know what you are doing?" he said. "This man is a Roman citizen." So the commanding officer went up to Paul and said: "Tell me, are you a Roman citizen?"

"Yes," replied Paul. "I had to pay a heavy price for my position as citizen," said the officer. "I am one by birth," rejoined Paul.

The men who were to have examined Paul immediately drew back, and the officer, finding that Paul was a Roman citizen, was alarmed at having put him in chains.

On the next day the commanding officer, wishing to find out the real reason why Paul was denounced by the Jewish leaders, had his chains taken off, and directed the chief priests and the whole of the High Council to assemble, and then took Paul down and brought him before them. Paul fixed his eyes on the Council,

and began:

2 “Brothers, for my part, I have always ordered my life before  
God, with a clear conscience, up to this very day.” At this, the  
high priest Ananias ordered the men standing near to strike him  
3 on the mouth; Paul turned to him and said:

4 “God will strike you, you whitewashed wall! Are you sitting  
there to try me in accordance with law, and yet, in defiance of  
law, order me to be struck?” The people standing near said to  
Paul: “Do you know that you are insulting God’s high priest?”

5 “I did not know, brothers, that it was the high priest,” said  
Paul, “for scripture says —

‘Of the Ruler of your people you should speak no ill’.”

6 Noticing that some of those present were Sadducees and others  
Pharisees, Paul called out in the Council: “Brothers, I am a  
Pharisee and a son of Pharisees. It is on the question of hope for  
the dead and of their resurrection that I am on my trial.”

7 As soon as he said this, a dispute arose between the Pharisees  
and the Sadducees; and there was a sharp division of opinion  
8 among those present. (For Sadducees say there is no such thing  
as a resurrection, and that there is neither angel nor spirit, while  
9 Pharisees believe in both.) So a great uproar ensued, and some  
of the Teachers of the law belonging to the Pharisees’ party stood  
up and hotly protested: “We find nothing whatever wrong in  
this man. Suppose a spirit did speak to him, or an angel...” The  
10 dispute was becoming so violent, that the commanding officer,  
fearing that Paul would be torn in pieces between them, ordered  
the Guard to go down and rescue him from them, and take him  
into the Fort.

11 That night the Lord came and stood by Paul, and said:  
“Courage! You have borne witness for me in Jerusalem and you  
12 must bear witness in Rome also.” In the morning some Jewish  
men combined together, and took an oath that they would not  
13 eat or drink until they had killed Paul. There were more than  
14 forty in the plot; and they went to the chief priests and the coun-  
cillors, and said: “We have taken a solemn oath not to touch food  
15 until we have killed Paul. So we want you now, with the con-

sent of the Council, to suggest to the commanding officer that he should bring Paul down before you, as though you intended to go more fully into his case; but, before he comes here, we will be ready to make away with him."

However, the son of Paul's sister, hearing of the plot, went to the Fort, and on being admitted, told Paul about it. Paul called one of the Captains of the garrison and asked him to take the lad to the commanding officer, as he had something to tell him. The captain went with the lad to the commanding officer, and said: "The prisoner Paul called me and asked me to bring this lad to you, as he has something to tell you."

The commanding officer took the lad by the hand, and, stepping aside, asked what it was he had to tell him. "Some men have agreed," answered the lad, "to ask you to bring Paul down before the Council tomorrow, on the plea of your making further inquiry into his case. But do not let them persuade you, for more than forty of them are lying in wait for him, who have taken an oath that they will not eat or drink, until they have made away with him; and they are at this very moment in readiness, counting on your promise." The commanding officer then dismissed the lad, cautioning him not to mention to anybody that he had given him that information. Then he called two Captains, and ordered them to have two hundred soldiers ready to go to Caesarea, as well as seventy troopers and two hundred lancers, by nine o'clock that night, and to have horses ready for Paul to ride, so that they might take him safely to Felix, the Governor. He also wrote a letter along these lines:

'Claudius Lysias sends his compliments to His Excellency Felix the Governor. The man whom I send with this had been seized by some Jews, and was on the point of being killed by them, when I came upon them with the force under my command, and rescued him, as I learned that he was a Roman citizen. Wanting to know exactly the ground of the charges they made against him, I brought him before their Council, when I found that their charges were connected with questions of their own law, and that there was nothing alleged involving either death or imprisonment. Having, however, information of a plot

against the man, which was about to be put into execution, I am sending him to you at once, and I have also directed his accusers to prosecute him before you.'

31 The soldiers, in accordance with their orders, took charge of  
32 Paul and conducted him by night to Antipatris; and on the next  
33 day, leaving the troopers to go on with him, they returned to  
34 the Fort. On arriving at Caesarea, the troopers delivered the let-  
35 ter to the Governor, and brought Paul before him. As soon as  
Felix had read the letter, he enquired to what province Paul be-  
longed, and, learning that he came from Cilicia, he said: "I will  
hear all you have to say as soon as your accusers have arrived."  
And he ordered Paul to be kept under guard in Herod's Govern-  
ment house.

24 Five days afterwards the high priest Ananias came down with  
some of the councillors and a barrister named Tertullus. They  
laid an information with the Governor against Paul; and, when  
the hearing came on, Tertullus began his speech for the prose-  
cution. "We owe it to your Excellency," he said, "that we are en-  
joying profound peace, and we owe it to your foresight that this  
nation is constantly securing reforms — advantages which we  
very gratefully accept at all times and places. But — not to be  
tedious — I beg you, with your accustomed fairness, to listen to  
a brief statement of our case. We have found this man a public  
pest; he is one who stirs up disputes among our people all the  
world over, and is a ringleader of the Nazarene heretics. He even  
attempted to desecrate the Temple itself, but we caught him; and  
you will be able, by examining him on all these points, to satisfy  
yourself as to the charges which we are bringing against him."

9 The Jewish crowd also joined in the attack and bore out his  
10 statements. On a sign from the Governor, Paul made this reply:

11 "Knowing, as I do, for how many years you have acted as  
judge to this nation, it is with confidence that I undertake my  
own defense. For you can easily verify that it is not more than  
12 twelve days ago that I went up to worship at Jerusalem, where  
my prosecutors never found me holding discussions with any-  
one, or causing a crowd to collect — either in the Temple, or in

the Synagogues, or about the city; and they cannot establish the charges which they are now making against me. This, however, I do acknowledge to you, that it is as a believer in the cause which they call heretical, that I worship the God of my ancestors. At the same time, I believe everything that is in accordance with the law and that is written in the prophets; and I have a hope that rests in God — a hope which they also cherish — that there will one day be a resurrection of good and bad alike. This being so, I strive at all times to keep my conscience clear before both God and people. After some years' absence I had come to bring charitable gifts to my nation, and to make offerings; and it was while engaged in this that they found me in the Temple, after completing a period of purification, but not with any crowd or disorder. There were, however, some Jews from Roman Asia who ought to have been here before you, and to have made any charge that they may have against me — Or else let my opponents here say what they found wrong in me when I was before the Council, except as to the one sentence that I shouted out as I stood among them — 'It is about the resurrection of the dead that I am on my trial before you today'."

Felix, however, adjourned the case — though he had a fairly accurate knowledge of all that concerned the cause — with the promise: "When Lysias, the commanding officer, comes down, I will give my decision in your case." So he gave orders to the captain in charge of Paul to keep him in custody, but to relax the regulations, and not to prevent any of his personal friends from attending to his wants.

Some days later Felix came with his wife Drusilla, who was herself a Jewess, and, sending for Paul, listened to what he had to say about faith in Christ Jesus. But, while Paul was speaking at length about righteousness, self-control, and the coming judgment, Felix became terrified, and interrupted him — "Go for the present, but, when I find an opportunity, I will send for you again." He was hoping, too, for a bribe from Paul, and so he used to send for him frequently and talk with him. But, after the lapse of two years, Felix was succeeded by Porcius Festus; and, wishing to gain popularity with the Jewish leaders, he left Paul a prisoner.

25 Three days after Festus had arrived in his province, he left Caesarea and went up to Jerusalem. There the chief priests and the leading men among the Jews laid an information before him against Paul, and asked a favor of him, to Paul's injury — to have Paul brought to Jerusalem. All the while they were plotting to make away with him on the road. But Festus answered that Paul was in prison at Caesarea, and that he himself would be leaving for that place shortly.

5 "So let the influential men among you," he said, "go down with me, and if there is anything amiss in the man, charge him formally with it." After staying among them some eight or ten days, Festus went down to Caesarea. The next day he took his seat on the Bench, and ordered Paul to be brought before him. On Paul's appearance, the Jewish leaders who had come down from Jerusalem surrounded him, and made many serious charges, which they failed to establish. Paul's answer to the charge was — 'I have not committed any offense against the Jewish law, or the Temple, or the Emperor.' But, as Festus wished to gain popularity with the Jews, he interrupted Paul with the question:

"Are you willing to go up to Jerusalem and be tried on these charges before me there?"

10 "No," replied Paul, "I am standing at the Emperor's court, where I ought to be tried. I have not wronged the Jews, as you yourself are well aware. If, however, I am breaking the law and have committed any offense deserving death, I do not ask to escape the penalty; but, if there is nothing in the accusations of these people, no one has the power to give me up to them. I appeal to the Emperor."

12 Festus, after conferring with his Council, answered: "You have appealed to the Emperor; to the Emperor you will go."

13 Some days later King Agrippa and Bernice came down to Caesarea, and paid a visit of congratulation to Festus; and, as they were staying there for several days, Festus laid Paul's case before the king. "There is a man here," he said, "left a prisoner by Felix, about whom, when I came to Jerusalem, the Jewish chief priest and the councillors laid an information, demanding judg-

ment against him. My answer to them was, that it was not the practice of Romans to give up anyone to their accusers until the accused had met them face to face, and had also had an opportunity of answering the charges brought against them. So they met here, and without loss of time I took my seat on the Bench the very next day, and ordered the man to be brought before me. But, when his accusers came forward, they brought no charge of wrong-doing such as I had expected; but I found that there were certain questions in dispute between them about their own religion, and about some dead man called Jesus, whom Paul declared to be alive. And, as I was at a loss how to enquire into questions of this kind, I asked Paul if he were willing to go up to Jerusalem, and be put on trial there. Paul, however, appealed to have his case reserved for the consideration of his August Majesty, so I ordered him to be detained in custody, until I could send him to the Emperor."

"I should like to hear this man myself," Agrippa said to Festus.

"You will hear him tomorrow," Festus answered.

So the next day, when Agrippa and Bernice had come in full state and had entered the Audience Chamber, with the superior officers and the principal people of the city, by the order of Festus Paul was brought before them. Then Festus said: "King Agrippa, and all here present, you see before you the man about whom the whole Jewish people have applied to me, both at Jerusalem and here, loudly asserting that he ought not to be allowed to live. I found, however, that he had not done anything deserving death; so, as he had himself appealed to his August Majesty, I decided to send him. But I have nothing definite to write about him to my Imperial Master; and for that reason I have brought him before you all, and especially before you, King Agrippa, that, after examining him, I may have something to write. For it seems to me absurd to send a prisoner, without at the same time stating the charges made against him."

Turning to Paul, Agrippa said: "You are at liberty to speak for yourself." Then Paul stretched out his hand and began his defense. "I have been congratulating myself, King Agrippa," he said, "that it is before you that I have to make my defense to-

3 day, with regard to all the charges brought against me by my  
own people, especially as you are so well-versed in all the cus-  
4 toms and questions of the Jewish world. I beg you therefore to  
give me a patient hearing. My life, then, from youth upwards,  
5 was passed, from the very first, among my own nation, and in  
Jerusalem, and is within the knowledge of all Jews; and they  
6 have always known — if they choose to give evidence — that, in  
accordance with the very strictest form of our religion, I lived a  
7 true Pharisee. Even now, it is because of my hope in the promise  
given by God to our ancestors that I stand here on my trial — A  
8 promise which our twelve tribes, by earnest service night and  
day, hope to see fulfilled. It is for this hope, your Majesty, that  
9 I am accused — and by Jews themselves! Why do you all hold  
it incredible that God should raise the dead? I myself, it is true,  
10 once thought it my duty to oppose in every way the name of Je-  
sus of Nazareth; and I actually did so at Jerusalem. Acting on  
the authority of the chief priests, I myself threw many of the  
11 people of Christ into prison, and, when it was proposed to put  
them to death, I gave my vote for it. Time after time, in every  
Synagogue, I tried by punishments to force them to blaspheme.  
12 So frantic was I against them, that I pursued them even to towns  
beyond our borders. It was while I was traveling to Damascus  
on an errand of this kind, entrusted with full powers by the chief  
13 priests, that at midday, your Majesty, I saw right in my path,  
coming from the heavens, a light brighter than the glare of the  
sun, which shone all around me and those traveling with me.  
14 We all fell to the ground, and then I heard a voice saying to me  
in Hebrew — ‘Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me? By kick-  
15 ing against the goad you are punishing yourself.’ ‘Who are you,  
Lord?’ I asked. And the Lord said: “I am Jesus, whom you are  
16 persecuting; but get up and stand upright; for I have appeared  
to you in order to appoint you a servant and a witness of those  
revelations of me which you have already had, and of those in  
17 which I will yet appear to you, since I am choosing you out from  
your own people and from the Gentiles, to whom I now send  
18 you, to open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light,  
and from the power of Satan to God; so that they may receive  
pardon for their sins, and a place among those who have become



God's people, by faith in me.' After that, King Agrippa, I did not 19  
fail to obey the heavenly vision; on the contrary, first to those at 20  
Damascus and Jerusalem, and then through the whole of Judea,  
and to the Gentiles as well, I began to preach repentance and  
conversion to God, and a life befitting that repentance. This is 21  
why some men seized me in the Temple, and made attempts  
on my life. However I have received help from God to this very 22  
day, and so stand here, and bear my testimony to high and low  
alike — without adding a word to what the prophets, as well  
as Moses, declared should happen — That the Christ must suffer, 23  
and that, by rising from the dead, he was destined to be the  
first to bring news of light, not only to our nation, but also to the  
Gentiles."

While Paul was making this defense, Festus called out 24  
loudly: "You are mad, Paul; your great learning is driving  
you mad."

"I am not mad, your Excellency," he replied; "on the contrary, 25  
the statements that I am making are true and sober. Indeed, the 26  
king knows about these matters, so I speak before him without  
constraint. I am sure that there is nothing whatever of what I  
have been telling him that has escaped his attention; for all this  
has not been done in a corner. King Agrippa, do you believe the 27  
prophets? I know you do."

But Agrippa said to Paul: "You are soon trying to make a 28  
Christian of me!"

"Whether it is soon or late," answered Paul, "I pray to God 29  
that not only you, but all who are listening to me, might today  
become just what I am myself — except for these chains!" Then 30  
the king rose, with the Governor and Bernice and those who had  
been sitting with them, and, after retiring, discussed the case 31  
among themselves. "There is nothing," they said, "deserving  
death or imprisonment in this man's conduct"; and, speaking to 32  
Festus, Agrippa added: "The man might have been discharged,  
if he had not appealed to the Emperor."

As it was decided that we were to sail to Italy, Paul and some 27  
other prisoners were put in charge of a captain of the Augustan

2 Guard, named Julius. We went on board a ship from Adramytium, which was on the point of sailing to the ports along the coast of Roman Asia, and put to sea. Aristarchus, a Macedonian from Thessalonica, went with us. The next day we put in to Sidon, where Julius treated Paul in a friendly manner, and allowed him to go to see his friends and receive their hospitality. Putting to sea again, we sailed under the lee of Cyprus, because the wind was against us; and, after crossing the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, we reached Myra in Lycia. There the Roman officer found an Alexandrian ship on her way to Italy, and put us on board of her. For several days our progress was slow, and it was only with difficulty that we arrived off Cnidus. As the wind was still unfavorable when we came off Cape Salmone, we sailed under the lee of Crete, and with difficulty, by keeping close in shore, we reached a place called 'Fair Havens,' near which was the town of Lasea.

9 This had taken a considerable time, and sailing was already dangerous, for the Fast was already over; and so Paul gave this warning. "My friends," he said, "I see that this voyage will be attended with injury and much damage, not only to the cargo and the ship, but to our own lives also."

11 The Roman officer, however, was more influenced by the captain and the owner than by what was said by Paul. And, as the harbor was not a suitable one to winter in, the majority were in favor of continuing the voyage, in hope of being able to reach Phoenix, and winter there. Phoenix was a Cretan harbor, open to the north-east and south-east. So, when a light wind sprang up from the south, thinking that they had found their opportunity, they weighed anchor and kept along the coast of Crete, close in shore. But shortly afterwards a hurricane came down on us off the land — a north-easter, as it is called. The ship was caught by it and was unable to keep her head to the wind, so we had to give way and let her drive before it. Running under the lee of a small island called Cauda, we only just managed to secure the ship's boat, and, after hoisting it on board, the men frapped the ship. But, afraid of being driven on to the Syrtis Sands, they lowered the yard, and then drifted. So violently were we tossed about by the storm, that the next day they began throwing the cargo

overboard, and, on the following day, threw out the ship's tackle 19  
with their own hands. As neither sun nor stars were visible for 20  
several days, and, as the gale still continued severe, all hope of  
our being saved was at last abandoned.

It was then, when they had gone a long time without food, 21  
that Paul came forward, and said: "My friends, you should have  
listened to me, and not have sailed from Crete and so incurred 22  
this injury and damage. Yet, even as things are, I beg you not to  
lose courage, for there will not be a single life lost among you 23  
— only the ship. For last night an angel of the God to whom I  
belong, and whom I serve, stood by me, and said — 'Have no 24  
fear, Paul; you must appear before the Emperor, and God him-  
self has given you the lives of all your fellow voyagers.' There- 25  
fore, courage, my friends! For I believe God, that everything will  
happen exactly as I have been told. We will, however, have to be 26  
driven on some island."

It was now the fourteenth night of the storm, and we were 27  
drifting about in the Adriatic Sea, when, about midnight, the  
sailors began to suspect that they were drawing near land. So 28  
they took soundings, and found twenty fathoms of water. Af-  
ter waiting a little, they took soundings again, and found fifteen 29  
fathoms. Then, as they were afraid of our being driven on some  
rocky coast, they let go four anchors from the stern, and longed 30  
for daylight. The sailors wanted to leave the ship, and had low-  
ered the boat, on pretense of running out anchors from the bows,  
when Paul said to the Roman officer and his men: "Unless the 31  
sailors remain on board, you cannot be saved." So the soldiers  
cut the ropes which held the boat, and let her drift away. In the 32  
interval before daybreak Paul kept urging them all to take some-  
thing to eat. 33

"It is a fortnight today," he said, "that, owing to your anxi- 34  
ety, you have gone without food, taking nothing. So I beg you to  
take something to eat; your safety depends on it, for not one of 35  
you will lose even a hair of his head." With these words he took  
some bread, and, after saying the thanksgiving to God before 36  
them all, broke it in pieces, and began to eat; and the men all felt  
cheered and had something to eat themselves. There were about 37  
seventy-six of us on board, all told. After satisfying their hunger, 38

39 they further lightened the ship by throwing the grain into the  
sea. When daylight came, they could not make out what land  
it was, but, observing a creek in which there was a beach, they  
40 consulted as to whether they could run the ship safely into it.  
Then they cast off, and abandoned the anchors, and at the same  
41 time unlashd the gear of the steering oars, hoisted the foresail  
to the wind, and made for the beach. They got, however, into a  
kind of channel, and there ran the ship aground. The bows stuck  
42 fast and could not be moved, while the stern began breaking up  
under the strain. The advice of the soldiers was that the prisoners  
43 should be killed, so that none of them could swim away and  
make their escape. But the Roman officer, anxious to save Paul,  
prevented their carrying out their intention, and ordered that  
44 those who could swim should be the first to jump into the sea  
and try to reach the shore; and that the rest should follow, some  
on planks, and others on different pieces of the ship. In these  
various ways everyone managed to get safely ashore.

28 When we were all safe, we found that the island was called  
2 Malta. The island's people showed us marked kindness, for they  
lit a fire and took us all under shelter, because it had come on to  
3 rain and was cold. Paul had gathered a quantity of dry sticks and  
laid them on the fire, when a poisonous snake, driven out by the  
4 heat, fastened on his hand. When the islanders saw the creature  
hanging from his hand, they said to one another: "Evidently this  
5 man is a murderer, for though he has been saved from the sea,  
Justice has not allowed him to live." However, Paul shook the  
6 creature off into the fire and took no harm. The islanders were  
expecting inflammation to set in, or that he would suddenly fall  
dead; but, after waiting for a long time, and seeing that there  
was nothing amiss with him, they changed their minds and said  
that he was a God.

7 In that neighborhood there was an estate belonging to the  
Governor of the island, whose name was Publius. He took us up  
to his house, and for three days entertained us most courteously.  
8 It happened that the father of Publius was lying ill of fever and  
dysentery. So Paul went to see him; and, after praying, he placed

his hands on him and cured him. After this, all the people in the island who had any illness came to Paul, and were cured. They also presented us with many gifts, and when we set sail they put supplies of necessaries on board.

After three months, we set sail in a ship that had wintered in the island. She was an Alexandrian vessel, and had the Twin sons of Zeus for her figure-head. We put in at Syracuse and stayed there three days, and from there we worked to windward and so got to Rhegium. A day later a south wind sprang up and took us to Puteoli in two days. There we found some of the Lord's followers, and were urged to stay a week with them; after which we went on to Rome. The followers there had heard about us, and came out as far as the Market of Appius and the Three Taverns to meet us. At sight of them Paul thanked God and was much cheered. On our reaching Rome, Paul was allowed to live by himself, except for the soldier who was in charge of him.

Three days after our arrival, Paul invited the leading Jews to meet him; and, when they came, he said: "Brothers, although I had done nothing hostile to the interests of our nation or to our ancestral customs, yet I was sent from Jerusalem as a prisoner, and handed over to the Romans. The Romans, when they had examined me, were ready to release me, because there was nothing in my conduct deserving death. But, as the Jewish leaders opposed my release, I was compelled to appeal to the Emperor — not, indeed, that I had any charge to make against my own nation. This, then, is my reason for urging you to come to see me and talk with me; because it is for the sake of the hope of Israel that I am here in chains."

"We," was their reply, "have not had any letter about you from Judea, nor have any of our fellow Jews come and reported or said anything bad about you. But we will be glad to hear from you what your views are, for, with regard to this sect, we are well aware that it is spoken against on all sides."

They then fixed a day with him, and came to the place where he was staying, in even larger numbers, when Paul proceeded

to lay the subject before them. He bore his testimony to the kingdom of God, and tried to convince them about Jesus, by arguments drawn from the law of Moses and from the prophets —  
24 speaking from morning until evening. Some were inclined to  
25 accept what he said; others, however, rejected it. So, as they disagreed among themselves, they began to disperse, Paul adding only —

“True, indeed, was the declaration made by the Holy Spirit, through the prophet Isaiah to your ancestors —

26 ‘Go to this nation and say —

“You will hear with your ears without ever understanding,

And, though you have eyes, you will see without ever perceiving.”

27 For the mind of this nation has grown dense,

And their ears are dull of hearing,

Their eyes also have they closed;

Otherwise some day they might see with their eyes,

And with their ears they might hear,

And in their mind they might understand, and might turn —

And I might heal them.’

28 Understand, then, that this salvation of God was sent for the Gentiles; and they will listen.”

30 For two whole years Paul stayed in a house which he rented  
31 for himself, welcoming all who came to see him, proclaiming the kingdom of God, and teaching about the Lord Jesus Christ, with perfect fearlessness, unmolested.

# Romans

*Paul's Letter to the Romans*

## *Introduction*

TO ALL IN ROME WHO ARE DEAR TO GOD AND HAVE BEEN CALLED TO  
BECOME Christ's people, from Paul, a servant of Jesus  
Christ, who has been called to become an apostle, and has been  
set apart to tell God's good news. This good news God  
promised long ago through his prophets in the sacred  
scriptures, concerning his Son, Jesus Christ, our Lord; who, as  
to his human nature, was descended from David, but, as to the  
spirit of holiness within him, was miraculously designated Son  
of God by his resurrection from the dead. Through him we  
received the gift of the apostolic office, to win submission to  
the faith among all nations for the glory of his name. And  
among these nations are you — you who have been called to  
belong to Jesus Christ.

May God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you  
and give you peace.

First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ about you all, be-  
cause the report of your faith is spreading throughout the world.  
God, to whom I offer the worship of my soul as I tell the good-  
ness of his Son, is my witness how constantly I mention you  
when I pray, asking that, if he be willing, I may some day at last  
find the way open to visit you. For I long to see you, in order to  
impart to you some spiritual gift and so give you fresh strength  
— or rather that both you and I may find encouragement in  
each other's faith. I want you to know, my friends, that I have  
many times intended coming to see you — but until now I have

been prevented — that I might find among you some fruit of my labors, as I have already among the other nations.

### *Faith the Ground of Acceptance*

14 I HAVE A DUTY TO BOTH THE GREEK AND THE BARBARIAN, to both the  
15 cultured and the ignorant. And so, for my part, I am ready to tell  
the good news to you also who are in Rome.

16 For I am not ashamed of the good news; it is the power of  
God which brings salvation to everyone who believes in Christ,  
17 to the Jew first, but also to the Greek. For in it there is a revelation  
of the divine righteousness resulting from faith and leading on  
to faith; as scripture says — ‘Through faith the righteous will  
find life.’

18 So, too, there is a revelation from heaven of the divine wrath  
against every form of ungodliness and wickedness on the part  
of those people who, by their wicked lives, are stifling the truth.  
19 This is so, because what can be known about God is plain to  
them; for God himself has made it plain. For ever since the crea-  
20 tion of the universe God’s invisible attributes — his everlasting  
power and divinity — are to be seen and studied in his works,  
21 so that people have no excuse; because, although they learned  
to know God, yet they did not offer him as God either praise or  
thanksgiving. Their speculations about him proved futile, and  
22 their undiscerning minds were darkened. Professing to be wise,  
23 they showed themselves fools; and they transformed the glory  
of the immortal God into the likeness of mortal humans, and of  
birds, and beasts, and reptiles.

24 Therefore God abandoned them to impurity, letting them  
follow the cravings of their hearts, until they dishonored their  
25 own bodies; for they had substituted a lie for the truth about  
God, and had revered and worshiped created things more  
26 than the Creator, who is to be praised for ever. Amen. That, I  
say, is why God abandoned them to degrading passions. Even  
the women among them perverted the natural use of their bod-  
27 ies to the unnatural; while the men, disregarding that for which  
women were intended by nature, were consumed with passion



for one another. Men indulged in vile practices with men, and incurred in their own persons the inevitable penalty for their perverseness.

Then, as they would not keep God before their minds, God abandoned them to depraved thoughts, so that they did all kinds of shameful things. They reveled in every form of wickedness, evil, greed, vice. Their lives were full of envy, murder, quarreling, treachery, malice. They became back-biters, slanderers, impious, insolent, boastful. They devised new sins. They disobeyed their parents. They were undiscerning, untrustworthy, without natural affection or pity. Well aware of God's decree, that those who do such things deserve to die, not only are they guilty of them themselves, but they even applaud those who do them.

Therefore you have nothing to say in your own defense, whoever you are who set yourself up as a judge. In judging others you condemn yourself, for you who set yourself up as a judge do the very same things. And we know that God's judgment falls unerringly on those who do them. You who judge those that do such things and yet are yourself guilty of them — do you suppose that you of all people will escape God's judgment? Or do you think lightly of his abundant kindness, patience, and forbearance, not realizing that his kindness is meant to lead you to repentance? Hard-hearted and impenitent as you are, you are storing up for yourself wrath on the 'day of wrath,' when God's justice as a judge will be revealed; for 'he will give to everyone what their actions deserve.' To those who, by perseverance in doing good, aim at glory, honor, and all that is imperishable, he will give immortal life; while as to those who are factious, and disobedient to truth but obedient to evil, wrath and anger, distress and despair, will fall on every human being who persists in wrong-doing — on the Jew first, but also on the Greek. But there will be glory, honor, and peace for everyone who does right — for the Jew first, but also for the Greek, since God shows no partiality. All who, when they sin, are without law will also perish without law; while all who, when they sin, are under law, will be judged as being under law. It is not those

who hear the words of a law that are righteous before God, but it is those who obey it that will be pronounced righteous. When

14 Gentiles, who have no law, do instinctively what the law re-  
quires, they, though they have no law, are a law to themselves;  
15 for they show the demands of the law written on their hearts;  
their consciences corroborating it, while in their thoughts they  
16 argue either in self-accusation or, it may be, in self-defense — on  
the day when God passes judgment on people's inmost lives, as  
the good news that I tell declares that he will do through Christ  
Jesus.

17 But, perhaps, you bear the name of 'Jew,' and are relying on  
law, and boast of belonging to God, and understand his will,  
18 and, having been carefully instructed from the law, have learned  
to appreciate the finer moral distinctions. Perhaps you are confi-  
19 dent that you are a guide to the blind, a light to those who are in  
the dark, an instructor of the unintelligent, and a teacher of the  
20 childish, because in the law you possess the outline of all knowl-  
edge and truth. Why, then, you teacher of others, do not you  
21 teach yourself? Do you preach against stealing, and yet steal?  
Do you forbid adultery, and yet commit adultery? Do you loathe  
22 idols, and yet plunder temples? Boasting, as you do, of your law,  
23 do you dishonor God by breaking the law? For, as scripture says  
24 — 'The Gentiles insult God's name because of you'! Circum-  
25 cision has its value, if you are obeying the law. But, if you are  
a breaker of the law, your circumcision is no better than uncir-  
26 cumcision. If, then, an uncircumcised man pays regard to the re-  
quirements of the law, will not he, although not circumcised, be  
27 regarded by God as if he were? Indeed, the person who, owing  
to his birth, remains uncircumcised, and yet scrupulously obeys  
the law, will condemn you, who, for all your written law and  
28 your circumcision, are yet a breaker of the law. For a man who  
is only a Jew outwardly is not a real Jew; nor is outward bodily  
circumcision real circumcision. The real Jew is the person who  
29 is a Jew in soul; and the real circumcision is the circumcision of  
the heart, a spiritual and not a literal thing. Such a person wins  
praise from God, though not from people.

3 What is the advantage, then, of being a Jew? Or what is the  
2 good of circumcision? Great in every way. First of all, because

the Jews were entrusted with God's utterances. What follows 3  
then? Some, no doubt, showed a want of faith; but will their  
want of faith make God break faith? Heaven forbid! God must 4  
prove true, though everyone prove a liar! As scripture says of  
God — 'That you may be pronounced righteous in what you say,  
and gain your cause when people would judge you.'

But what if our wrong-doing makes God's righteousness all 5  
the clearer? Will God be wrong in inflicting punishment? (I can  
but speak as a person.) Heaven forbid! Otherwise how can God 6  
judge the world?

But, if my falsehood redounds to the glory of God, by mak- 7  
ing his truthfulness more apparent, why am I like others, still  
condemned as a sinner? Why should we not say — as some 8  
people slanderously assert that we do say — 'Let us do evil  
that good may come'? The condemnation of such people is in-  
deed just!

What follows, then? Are we Jews in any way superior to 9  
others? Not at all. Our indictment against both Jews and Greeks  
was that all alike were in subjection to sin. As scripture says — 10

'There is not even one who is righteous,  
not one who understands, 11  
not one who is searching for God!  
They have all gone astray; 12  
they have one and all become depraved;  
there is no one who is doing good — no, not one!'  
'Their throats are like opened graves; 13  
they deceive with their tongues.'  
'The venom of snakes lies behind their lips,'  
'And their mouths are full of bitter curses.' 14  
'Swift are their feet to shed blood. 15  
Distress and trouble dog their steps, 16  
and the path of peace they do not know.' 17  
'The fear of God is not before their eyes.' 18

Now we know that everything said in the law is addressed to 19

those who are under its authority, in order that every mouth may be closed, and to bring the whole world under God's judgment. For 'no human being will be pronounced righteous before God' as the result of obedience to law; for it is law that shows what sin is.

But now, quite apart from law, the divine righteousness stands revealed, and to it the law and the prophets bear witness — the divine righteousness which is bestowed, through faith in Jesus Christ, on all, without distinction, who believe in him. For all have sinned, and all fall short of God's glorious ideal, but, in his loving kindness, are being freely pronounced righteous through the deliverance found in Christ Jesus. For God set him before the world, to be, by the shedding of his blood, a means of reconciliation through faith. And this God did to prove his righteousness, and because, in his forbearance, he had passed over the sins that people had previously committed; as a proof, I repeat, at the present time, of his own righteousness, that he might be righteous in our eyes, and might pronounce righteous the person who takes their stand on faith in Jesus.

What, then, becomes of our boasting? It is excluded. By what sort of law? A law requiring obedience? No, a law requiring faith.

For we conclude that a person is pronounced righteous on the ground of faith, quite apart from obedience to law. Or can it be that God is the God only of the Jews? Is not he also the God of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also, since there is only one God, and he will pronounce those who are circumcised righteous as the result of faith, and also those who are uncircumcised on their showing the same faith.

Do we, then, use this faith to abolish law? Heaven forbid! No, we establish law.

What then, it may be asked, are we to say about Abraham, the ancestor of our nation? If he was pronounced righteous as the result of obedience, then he has something to boast of. Yes, but not before God. For what are the words of scripture? 'Abraham had faith in God, and his faith was regarded by God as righteousness.' Now wages are regarded as due to the person who works, not as a favor, but as a debt; while, as for the person who

does not rely on their obedience, but has faith in him who can pronounce the godless righteous, their faith is regarded by God as righteousness.

In precisely the same way David speaks of the blessing pronounced on the person who is regarded by God as righteous apart from actions — ‘Blessed are those whose wrong-doings have been forgiven and over whose sins a veil has been drawn! Blessed the man whom the Lord will never regard as sinful!’ Is this blessing, then, pronounced on the circumcised only or on the uncircumcised as well? We say that — ‘Abraham’s faith was regarded by God as righteousness.’ Under what circumstances, then, did this take place? After his circumcision or before it? Not after, but before. And it was as a sign of this that he received the rite of circumcision — to show the righteousness due to the faith of an uncircumcised man — in order that he might be the father of all who have faith in God even when uncircumcised, so that they also may be regarded by God as righteous; as well as father of the circumcised — to those who are not only circumcised, but who also follow our father Abraham in that faith which he had while still uncircumcised. For the promise that he should inherit the world did not come to Abraham or his descendants through law, but through the righteousness due to faith. If those who take their stand on law are to inherit the world, then faith is robbed of its meaning and the promise comes to nothing! Law entails punishment; but, where no law exists, no breach of it is possible. That is why everything is made to depend on faith: so that everything may be God’s gift, and in order that the fulfillment of the promise may be made certain for all Abraham’s descendants — not only for those who take their stand on the law, but also for those who take their stand on the faith of Abraham. (He is the Father of us all; as scripture says — ‘I have made you the Father of many nations.’) And this they do in the sight of that God in whom Abraham had faith, and who gives life to the dead, and speaks of what does not yet exist as if it did. With no ground for hope, Abraham, sustained by hope, put faith in God; in order that, in fulfillment of the words — ‘So many will your descendants be,’ he might become ‘the Father of many nations.’

19 Though he was nearly a hundred years old, yet his faith did not  
fail him, even when he thought of his own body, then utterly  
worn out, and remembered that Sarah was past bearing chil-  
20 dren. He was not led by want of faith to doubt God's promise.  
21 On the contrary, his faith gave him strength; and he praised God,  
in the firm conviction that what God has promised he is also able  
22 to carry out. And therefore his faith 'was regarded as righteous-  
23 ness.' Now these words — 'it was regarded as righteousness' —  
24 were not written with reference to Abraham only; but also with  
reference to us. Our faith, too, will be regarded by God in the  
25 same light, if we have faith in him who raised Jesus, our Lord,  
from the dead; for Jesus 'was given up to death to atone for our  
offenses,' and was raised to life that we might be pronounced  
righteous.

5 Therefore, having been pronounced righteous as the result  
of faith, let us enjoy peace with God through Jesus Christ, our  
2 Lord. It is through him that, by reason of our faith, we have ob-  
tained admission to that place in God's favor in which we not  
stand. So let us exult in our hope of attaining God's glorious ide-  
3 al. And not only that, but let us also exult in our troubles; for we  
4 know that trouble develops endurance, and endurance strength  
5 of character, and strength of character hope, and that 'hope nev-  
er disappoints.' For the love of God has filled our hearts through  
6 the Holy Spirit which was given us; seeing that, while we were  
still powerless, Christ, in God's good time, died on behalf of the  
7 godless. Even for an upright person scarcely anyone will die.  
For a really good person perhaps some one might even dare to  
8 die. But God puts his love for us beyond all doubt by the fact  
that Christ died on our behalf while we were still sinners. Much  
9 more, then, now that we have been pronounced righteous by  
virtue of the shedding of his blood, will we be saved through  
10 him from the wrath of God. For if, when we were God's enemies,  
we were reconciled to him through the death of his Son, much  
more, now that we have become reconciled, will we be saved by  
11 virtue of Christ's life. And not only that, but we exult in God,  
through Jesus Christ, our Lord, through whom we have now ob-  
tained this reconciliation.

12 Therefore, just as sin came into the world through one man,

and through sin came death; so, also, death spread to all humanity, because every person has sinned. Even before the time of the law there was sin in the world; but sin cannot be charged against someone where no law exists. Yet, from Adam to Moses, death reigned even over those whose sin was not a breach of a law, as Adam's was. And Adam foreshadows the One to come. But there is a contrast between Adam's offense and God's gracious gift. For, if by reason of the offense of the one man the whole race died, far more were the loving kindness of God, and the gift given in the loving kindness of the one man, Jesus Christ, lavished on the whole race. There is a contrast, too, between the gift and the results of the one man's sin. The judgment, which followed on the one man's sin, resulted in condemnation, but God's gracious gift, which followed on many offenses, resulted in a decree of righteousness. For if, by reason of the offense of the one man, death reigned through that one man, far more will those, on whom God's loving kindness and his gift of righteousness are lavished, find life, and reign through the one man, Jesus Christ. Briefly then, just as a single offense resulted for all humanity in condemnation, so, too, a single decree of righteousness resulted for all humanity in that declaration of righteousness which brings life. For, as through the disobedience of the one man the whole race was rendered sinful, so, too, through the obedience of the one, the whole race will be rendered righteous. law was introduced in order that offenses might be multiplied. But, where sins were multiplied, the loving kindness of God was lavished the more, in order than, just as sin had reigned in the realm of death, so, too, might Loving-kindness reign through righteousness, and result in eternal life, through Jesus Christ, our Lord.

*Difficulties arising from this Teaching*

WHAT ARE WE TO SAY, then? Are we to continue to sin, in order that God's loving kindness may be multiplied? Heaven forbid! We became dead to sin, and how can we go on living in it? Or can it be that you do not know that all of us, who were baptized into union with Christ Jesus, in our baptism shared his death? Con-

4       sequently, through sharing his death in our baptism, we were  
buried with him; that, just as Christ was raised from the dead  
5       by a manifestation of the Father's power, so we also may live a  
new life. If we have become united with him by the act symbol-  
6       ic of his death, surely we will also become united with him by  
the act symbolic of his resurrection. We recognize the truth that  
7       our old self was crucified with Christ, in order that the body,  
the stronghold of sin, might be rendered powerless, so that we  
8       should no longer be slaves to sin. For the man who has so died  
has been pronounced righteous and released from sin. And our  
9       belief is, that, as we have shared Christ's death, we will also  
share his life. We know, indeed, that Christ, having once risen  
10      from the dead, will not die again. Death has power over him no  
11      longer. For the death that he died was a death to sin, once and  
for all. But the life that he now lives, he lives for God. So let it be  
12      with you — regard yourselves as dead to sin, but as living for  
God, through union with Christ Jesus. Therefore do not let sin  
13      reign in your mortal bodies and compel you to obey its cravings.  
Do not offer any part of your bodies to sin, in the cause of un-  
14      righteousness, but once for all offer yourselves to God (as those  
who, though once dead, now have life), and devote every part of  
15      your bodies to the cause of righteousness. For sin will not lord it  
over you. You are living under the reign, not of law, but of love.

15      What follows, then? Are we to sin because we are living  
under the reign of love and not of law? Heaven forbid! Surely  
16      you know that, when you offer yourselves as servants, to obey  
anyone, you are the servants of the person whom you obey,  
whether the service be a service sin which leads to death, or a  
17      service Duty which leads to righteousness. God be thanked that,  
though you were once servants of sin, yet you learned to give  
hearty obedience to that form of doctrine under which you were  
18      placed. Set free from the control of sin, you became servants  
to righteousness. I can but speak as people do because of the  
19      weakness of your earthly nature. Once you offered every part of  
your bodies to the service of impurity, and of wickedness, which  
20      leads to further wickedness. Now, in the same way, offer them  
to the service of righteousness, which leads to holiness. While  
you were still servants of sin, you were free as regards righteous-



ness. But what were the fruits that you reaped from those things of which you are now ashamed? For the end of such things is death. But now that you have been set free from the control of sin, and have become servants to God, the fruit that you reap is an ever increasing holiness, and the end eternal life. The wages of sin are death, but the gift of God is eternal life, through union with Christ Jesus, our Lord.

Surely, friends, you know (for I am speaking to people who know what law means) that law has power over a person only as long as they lives. For example, by law a married woman is bound to her husband while he is living; but, if her husband dies, she is set free from the law that bound her to him. If, then, during her husband's lifetime, she unites herself to another man, she will be called an adulteress; but, if her husband dies, the law has no further hold on her, nor, if she unites herself to another man, is she an adulteress. And so with you, my friends; as far as the law was concerned, you underwent death in the crucified body of the Christ, so that you might be united to another, to him who was raised from the dead, in order that our lives might bear fruit for God. When we were living merely earthly lives, our sinful passions, aroused by the law, were active in every part of our bodies, with the result that our lives bore fruit for death. But now we are set free from the law, because we are dead to that which once kept us under restraint; and so we serve under new, spiritual conditions, and not under old, written regulations.

What are we to say, then? That law and sin are the same thing? Heaven forbid! On the contrary, I should not have learned what sin is, had not it been for law. If the law did not say 'You must not covet,' I should not know what it is to covet. But sin took advantage of the Commandment to arouse in me every form of covetousness, for where there is no consciousness of law sin shows no sign of life. There was a time when I myself, unconscious of law, was alive; but when the Commandment was brought home to me, sin sprang into life, while I died! The Commandment that should have meant life I found to result in death! sin took advantage of the Commandment to deceive me, and used it to bring about my death. And so the law is holy,

13 and each Commandment is also holy, and just, and good. Did,  
then, a thing, which in itself was good, involve death in my case?  
Heaven forbid! It was sin that involved death; so that, by its use  
of what I regarded as good to bring about my death, its true nature  
14 might appear; and in this way the Commandment showed  
15 how intensely sinful sin is. We know that the law is spiritual, but  
I am earthly — sold into slavery to sin. I do not understand my  
own actions. For I am so far from habitually doing what I want  
16 to do, that I find myself doing the thing that I hate. But when  
I do what I want not to do, I am admitting that the law is right.  
17 This being so, the action is no longer my own, but is done by the  
18 sin which is within me. I know that there is nothing good in me  
— I mean in my earthly nature. For, although it is easy for me  
19 to want to do right, to act rightly is not easy. I fail to do the good  
thing that I want to do, but the bad thing that I want not to do —  
20 that I habitually do. But, when I do the thing that I want not to  
do, the action is no longer my own, but is done by the sin which  
21 is within me. This, then, is the law that I find — when I want to  
22 do right, wrong presents itself! At heart I delight in the law of  
23 God; but throughout my body I see a different law, one which  
is in conflict with the law accepted by my reason, and which  
endeavors to make me a prisoner to that law of sin which exists  
24 throughout my body. Miserable man that I am! Who will deliver  
me from the body that is bringing me to this death? Thank God,  
25 there is deliverance through Jesus Christ, our Lord! Well then,  
for myself, with my reason I serve the law of God, but with my  
earthly nature the law of sin.

8 There is, therefore, now no condemnation for those who are  
2 in union with Christ Jesus; for through your union with Christ  
Jesus, the law of the life-giving Spirit has set you free from the  
3 law of sin and death. What law could not do, in so far as our  
earthly nature weakened its action, God did, by sending his own  
Son, with a nature resembling our sinful nature, to atone for sin.  
4 He condemned sin in that earthly nature, so that the require-  
ments of the law might be satisfied in us who live now in obedi-  
5 ence, not to our earthly nature, but to the Spirit. They who follow  
their earthly nature are earthly-minded, while they who follow  
6 the Spirit are spiritually minded. To be earthly-minded means

death, to be spiritually minded means life and peace; because  
to be earthly-minded is to be an enemy to God, for such a mind  
does not submit to the law of God, nor indeed can it do so. They  
who are earthly cannot please God. You, however, are not earth-  
ly but spiritual, since the Spirit of God lives within you. Unless a  
person has the Spirit of Christ, they do not belong to Christ; but,  
if Christ is within you, then, though the body is dead as a conse-  
quence of sin, the spirit is life as a consequence of righteousness.  
And, if the Spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead lives  
within you, he who raised Christ Jesus from the dead will give  
life even to your mortal bodies, through his Spirit living with-  
in you.

So then, friends, we owe nothing to our earthly nature, that  
we should live in obedience to it. If you live in obedience to your  
earthly nature, you will inevitably die; but if, by the power of  
the Spirit, you put an end to the evil habits of the body, you will  
live. All who are guided by the Spirit of God are sons of God.  
For you did not receive the spirit of a slave, to fill you once more  
with fear, but the spirit of a son which leads us to cry 'Abba, Our  
Father.' The Spirit himself unites with our spirits in bearing wit-  
ness to our being God's children, and if children, then heirs —  
heirs of God, and joint heirs with Christ, since we share Christ's  
sufferings in order that we may also share his glory.

I do not count the sufferings of our present life worthy of  
mention when compared with the glory that is to be revealed  
and bestowed on us. All Nature awaits with eager expectation  
the appearing of the sons of God. For Nature was made subject  
to imperfection — not by its own choice, but owing to him who  
made it so — yet not without the hope that some day Nature,  
also, will be set free from enslavement to decay, and will attain  
to the freedom which will mark the glory of the children of God.  
We know, indeed, that all Nature alike has been groaning in the  
pains of labor to this very hour. And not Nature only; but we  
ourselves also, though we have already a first gift of the Spirit  
— we ourselves are inwardly groaning, while we eagerly await  
our full adoption as sons — the redemption of our bodies. By  
our hope we were saved. But the thing hoped for is no longer an

25 object of hope when it is before our eyes; for who hopes for what  
is before his eyes? But when we hope for what is not before our  
eyes, then we wait for it with patience.

26 So, also, the Spirit supports us in our weakness. We do not  
even know how to pray as we should; but the Spirit himself  
27 pleads for us in sighs that can find no utterance. Yet he who  
searches all our hearts knows what the Spirit's meaning is, be-  
cause the pleadings of the Spirit for Christ's people are in accord-  
28 dance with his will. But we do know that God causes all things to  
work together for the good of those who love him — those who  
29 have received the call in accordance with his purpose. For those  
whom God chose from the first he also destined from the first to  
be transformed into likeness to his Son, so that his Son might be  
30 the eldest among many brothers and sisters. And those whom  
God destined for this he also called; and those whom he called  
he also pronounced righteous; and those whom he pronounced  
righteous he also brought to glory.

31 What are we to say, then, in the light of all this?

If God is on our side, who can there be against us?

32 God did not withhold his own Son, but gave him up on behalf  
of us all; will he not, then, with him, freely give us all things?

33 Who will bring a charge against any of God's people? He who  
pronounces them righteous is God!

34 Who is there to condemn them? He who died for us is Christ  
Jesus! — or, rather, it was he who was raised from the dead,  
and who is now at God's right hand and is even pleading on  
our behalf!

35 Who is there to separate us from the love of the Christ? Will  
trouble, or difficulty, or persecution, or hunger, or nakedness, or  
danger, or the sword?

36 scripture says — 'For your sake we are being killed all the day  
37 long, We are regarded as sheep to be slaughtered.' Yet amidst  
all these things we more than conquer through him who loved  
38 us! For I am persuaded that neither death, nor life, nor angels,  
nor archangels, nor the Present, nor the Future, nor any powers,  
39 nor Height, nor Depth, nor any other created thing, will be able

to separate us from the love of God revealed in Christ Jesus, our Lord!

*Gentiles and Jews*

I AM SPEAKING THE TRUTH AS ONE IN UNION WITH CHRIST; it is no lie; 9  
and my conscience, enlightened by the Holy Spirit, bears me out 2  
when I say that there is a great weight of sorrow on me and that  
my heart is never free from pain. I could wish that I were myself 3  
accursed and severed from the Christ, for the sake of my people  
— my own flesh and blood. For they are Israelites, and theirs 4  
are the adoption as sons, the visible presence, the Covenants,  
the revealed law, the Temple worship, and the Promises. They  
are descended from the Patriarchs; and, as far as his human 5  
nature was concerned, from them came the Christ — he who is  
supreme over all things, God for ever blessed. Amen.

Not that God's Word has failed. For it is not all who are de- 6  
scended from Israel who are true Israelites; nor, because they 7  
are Abraham's descendants, are they all his children; but — 'It  
is Isaac's children who will be called your descendants.' This 8  
means that it is not the children born in the course of nature who  
are God's children, but it is the children born in fulfillment of  
the Promise who are to be regarded as Abraham's descendants.  
For these words are the words of a promise — 'About this time I 9  
will come, and Sarah will have a son.' Nor is that all. There is also 10  
the case of Rebecca, when she was about to bear children to our  
ancestor Isaac. For in order that the purpose of God, working 11  
through selection, might not fail — a selection depending, not  
on obedience, but on his call — Rebecca was told, before her chil-  
dren were born and before they had done anything either right  
or wrong, that 'the elder would be a servant to the younger.' The 12  
words of scripture are — 'I loved Jacob, but I hated Esau.' 13

What are we to say, then? Is God guilty of injustice? Heaven 14  
forbid! For his words to Moses are — 'I will take pity on whom 15  
I take pity, and be merciful to whom I am merciful.' So, then, all 16  
depends, not on human wishes or human efforts, but on God's 17  
mercy. In scripture, again, it is said to Pharaoh — 'It was for this

purpose that I raised you to the throne, to show my power by my dealings with you, and to make my name known throughout the world.' So, then, where God wills, he takes pity, and where he wills, he hardens the heart. Perhaps you will say to me — 'How can anyone still be blamed? For who withstands his purpose?' I might rather ask 'Who are you who are arguing with God?' Does a thing which a person has moulded say to the person who has moulded it 'Why did you make me like this?' Has not the potter absolute power over their clay, so that out of the same lump they make one thing for better, and another for common, use? And what if God, intending to reveal his displeasure and make his power known, bore most patiently with the objects of his displeasure, though they were fit only to be destroyed, so as to make known his surpassing glory in dealing with the objects of his mercy, whom he prepared beforehand for glory, and whom he called — even us — Not only from among the Jews but from among the Gentiles also! This, indeed, is what he says in the book of Hosea — 'Those who were not my people, I will call my people, and those who were unloved I will love. And in the place where it was said to them — "You are not my people", they will be called sons of the living God.' And Isaiah cries aloud over Israel — 'Though the sons of Israel are like the sand of the sea in number, only a remnant of them will escape! For the Lord will execute his sentence on the world, fully and without delay.' It is as Isaiah foretold — 'Had not the Lord of Hosts spared some few of our race to us, we should have become like Sodom and been made to resemble Gomorrah.'

What are we to say, then? Why, that Gentiles, who were not in search of righteousness, secured it — a righteousness which was the result of faith; while Israel, which was in search of a law which would ensure righteousness, failed to discover one. And why? Because they looked to obedience, and not to faith, to secure it. They stumbled over 'the Stumbling-block.' As scripture says — 'See, I place a Stumbling-block in Zion — a Rock which will prove a hindrance; and he who believes in him will have no cause for shame.'

My friends, my heart's desire and prayer to God for my people is for their salvation. I can testify that they are zealous for

the honor of God; but they are not guided by true insight, for, in their ignorance of the divine righteousness, and in their eagerness to set up a righteousness of their own, they refused to accept with submission the divine righteousness. For Christ has brought law to an end, so that righteousness may be obtained by everyone who believes in him. For Moses writes that, as for the righteousness which results from law, 'those who practice it will find life through it.' But the righteousness which results from faith finds expression in these words — 'Do not say to yourself "Who will go up into heaven?"' — which means to bring Christ down — 'or "Who will go down into the depths below?"' — which means to bring Christ up from the dead. No, but what does it say? 'The message of faith' which we proclaim. For, if with your lips you acknowledge the truth of the message that JESUS IS LORD, and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved. For with their hearts people believe and so attain to righteousness, while with their lips they make their Profession of faith and so find salvation. As the passage of scripture says — 'No one who believes in him will have any cause for shame.' For no distinction is made between the Jew and the Greek, for all have the same Lord, and he is bountiful to all who invoke him. For 'everyone who invokes the name of the Lord will be saved.' But how, it may be asked, are they to invoke one in whom they have not learned to believe? And how are they to believe in one whose words they have not heard? And how are they to hear his words unless some one proclaims him? And how is anyone to proclaim him unless they are sent as his messengers? As scripture says — 'How beautiful are the feet of those who bring good news!'

Still, it may be said, everyone did not give heed to the good news. No, for Isaiah asks — 'Lord, who has believed our teaching?' And so we gather, faith is a result of teaching, and the teaching comes in the message of Christ. But I ask 'Is it possible that people have never heard?' No, indeed, for — 'Their voices spread through all the earth, and their message to the ends of the world.' But again I ask 'Did not the people of Israel understand? First there is Moses, who says — 'I, the Lord, will stir you

20 to rivalry with a nation which is no nation; Against an undis-  
cerning nation I will arouse your anger.' And Isaiah says bold-  
21 ly — 'I was found by those who were not seeking me; I made  
myself known to those who were not inquiring of me. But of the  
people of Israel he says — 'All day long I have stretched out my  
hands to a people who disobey and contradict.'

11 I ask, then, 'Has God rejected his people?' Heaven forbid! For  
I myself am an Israelite, a descendant of Abraham, of the tribe  
2 of Benjamin. God has not rejected his people, whom he chose  
from the first. Have you forgotten the words of scripture in the  
3 story of Elijah — how he appeals to God against Israel? 'Lord,  
they have killed your prophets, they have pulled down your al-  
tars, and I only am left; and now they are eager to take my life.'  
4 But what was the divine response? 'I have kept for myself seven  
5 thousand who have never bowed the knee to Baal.' And so in  
our own time, too, there is to be found a remnant of our nation  
6 selected by God in love. But if in love, then no longer as a result  
7 of obedience. Otherwise love would cease to be love. What fol-  
lows from this? Why, that Israel as a nation failed to secure what  
it was seeking, while those whom God selected did secure it. The  
8 rest grew callous; as scripture says — 'God has given them a  
deadness of mind — eyes that are not to see and ears that are not  
9 to hear — and it is so to this very day.' David, too, says — 'May  
their feasts prove a snare and a trap to them — a hindrance and  
10 a retribution; may their eyes be darkened, so that they cannot  
11 see; and do you always make their backs to bend.' I ask then —  
'Was their stumbling to result in their fall?' Heaven forbid! On  
the contrary, through their falling away salvation has reached  
12 the Gentiles, to stir the rivalry of Israel. And, if their falling away  
has enriched the world, and their failure has enriched the Gen-  
tiles, how much more will result from their full restoration!

13 But I am speaking to you who were Gentiles. Being myself an  
14 apostle to the Gentiles, I exalt my office, in the hope that I may  
15 stir my countrymen to rivalry, and so save some of them. For, if  
16 their being cast aside has meant the reconciliation of the world,  
what will their reception mean, but life from the dead? If the first  
handful of dough in holy, so is the whole mass; and if the root is  
17 holy, so are the branches. Some, however, of the branches were



broken off, and you, who were only a wild olive, were grafted in among them, and came to share with them the root which is the source of the richness of the cultivated olive. Yet do not exult over the other branches. But, if you do exult over them, remember that you do not support the root, but that the root supports you. But branches, you will say, were broken off, so that I might be grafted in. True; it was because of their want of faith that they were broken off, and it is because of your faith that you are standing. Do not think too highly of yourself, but beware. For, if God did not spare the natural branches, neither will he spare you. See, then, both the goodness and the severity of God — his severity towards those who fell, and his goodness towards you, provided that you continue to confide in that goodness; otherwise you, also, will be cut off. And they, too, if they do not continue in their unbelief, will be grafted in; for God has it in his power to graft them in again. If you were cut off from your natural stock — a wild olive — and were grafted, contrary to the course of nature, on a good olive, much more will they — the natural branches — be grafted back into their parent tree.

My friends, so that you don't think too highly of yourselves, I want you to recognize the truth, hitherto hidden, that the callousness which has come over Israel is only partial, and will continue only until the whole Gentile world has been gathered in. And then all Israel will be saved. As scripture says — 'From Zion will come the Deliverer; he will banish ungodliness from Jacob. And they will see the fulfillment of my covenant, when I have taken away their sins.' From the standpoint of the good news, the Jews are God's enemies for your sake; but from the standpoint of God's selection, they are dear to him for the sake of the Patriarchs. For God never regrets his gifts or his call. Just as you at one time were disobedient to him, but have now found mercy in the day of their disobedience; so, too, they have now become disobedient in your day of mercy, in order that they also in their turn may now find mercy. For God has given all alike over to disobedience, that to all alike he may show mercy. Oh! The unfathomable wisdom and knowledge of God! How inscrutable are his judgments, how untraceable his ways! Yes — 'Who has ever

35 comprehended the mind of the Lord? Who has ever become his  
 36 counsellor? Or who has first given to him, so that he may claim  
 a reward?' For all things are from him, through him, and for him.  
 And to him be all glory for ever and ever! Amen.

### *Advice on Daily Life*

12 I ENTREAT YOU, then, friends, by the mercies of God, to offer your  
 2 bodies as a living and holy sacrifice, acceptable to God, for this  
 is your rational worship. Do not conform to the fashion of this  
 world; but be transformed by the complete change that has  
 come over your minds, so that you may discern what God's will  
 is — all that is good, acceptable, and perfect.

3 In fulfillment of the charge with which I have been entrusted,  
 I tell every one of you not to think more highly of himself than  
 he ought to think, but to think until he learns to think soberly  
 — in accordance with the measure of faith that God has allotted  
 4 to each. For, just as in the human body there is a union of many  
 5 parts, and each part has its own function, so we, by our union in  
 Christ, many though we are, form but one body, and individual-  
 6 ly we are related one to another as its parts. Since our gifts differ  
 in accordance with the particular charge entrusted to us, if our  
 7 gift is to preach, let our preaching correspond to our faith; if it  
 is to minister to others, let us devote ourselves to our ministry;  
 8 the teacher to their teaching, the counselor to their counsel. Let  
 the person who gives in charity do so with a generous heart;  
 let the person who is in authority exercise due diligence; let the  
 9 person who shows kindness do so in a cheerful spirit. Let your  
 10 love be sincere. Hate the wrong; cling to the right. In the love  
 of the community of the Lord's followers, be affectionate to one  
 another; in showing respect, set an example of deference to one  
 11 another; never flagging in zeal; fervent in spirit; serving the Mas-  
 12 ter; rejoicing in your hope; steadfast under persecution; perse-  
 13 vering in prayer; relieving the wants of Christ's people; devoted  
 14 to hospitality. Bless your persecutors — bless and never curse.  
 15 Rejoice with those who are rejoicing, and weep with those who  
 16 are weeping. Let the same spirit of sympathy animate you all,

not a spirit of pride; enjoy the company of ordinary people. Do not think too highly of yourselves. Never return injury for injury. Aim at doing what everyone will recognize as honorable. If it is possible, as far as rests with you, live peaceably with everyone. Never avenge yourselves, dear friends, but make way for the wrath of God; for scripture declares — “It is for me to avenge, I will requite,” says the Lord.’ Rather — ‘If your enemy is hungry, feed him; if he is thirsty, give him to drink. By doing this you will heap coals of fire on his head.’ Never be conquered by evil, but conquer evil with good.

Let everyone obey the supreme Authorities. For no Authority exists except by the will of God, and the existing Authorities have been appointed by God. Therefore he who sets himself against the authorities is resisting God’s appointment, and those who resist will bring a judgment on themselves. A good action has nothing to fear from Rulers; a bad action has. Do you want to have no reason to fear the Authorities? Then do what is good, and you will win their praise. For they are God’s servants appointed for your good. But, if you do what is wrong, you may well be afraid; for the sword they carry is not without meaning! They are God’s servants to inflict his punishments on those who do wrong. You are bound, therefore, to obey, not only through fear of God’s punishments, but also as a matter of conscience. This, too, is the reason for your paying taxes; for the officials are God’s officers, devoting themselves to this special work. In all cases pay what is due from you — tribute where tribute is due, taxes where taxes are due, respect where respect is due, and honor where honor is due.

Owe nothing to anyone except love; for they who love their neighbor have satisfied the law. The commandments, ‘You must not commit adultery, You must not kill, You must not steal, You must not covet,’ and whatever other commandment there is, are all summed up in the words — ‘You must love your neighbor as you love yourself.’ Love never wrongs a neighbor. Therefore love fully satisfies the law. This I say, because you know the crisis that we have reached, for the time has already come for you to rouse yourselves from sleep; our salvation is nearer now than

when we accepted the faith.

12 The night is almost gone; the day is near. Therefore let us  
13 have done with the deeds of darkness, and arm ourselves with  
14 the weapons of light. Being in the light of day, let us live becom-  
14 ingly, not in revelry and drunkenness, not in lust and licentious-  
14 ness, not in quarreling and jealousy. No! Arm yourselves with  
the spirit of the Lord Jesus Christ, and spend no thought on your  
earthly nature, to satisfy its cravings.

14 As for those whose faith is weak, always receive them as  
friends, but not for the purpose of passing judgment on their  
2 scruples. One person's faith permits of their eating food of all  
3 kinds, while another whose faith is weak eats only vegetable  
3 food. The person who eats meat must not despise the person  
who abstains from it; nor must the person who abstains from  
4 eating meat pass judgment on the one who eats it, for God him-  
4 self has received them. Who are you, that you should pass judg-  
ment on the servant of another? Their standing or falling con-  
cerns their own master. And stand they will, for their Master can  
5 enable them to stand. Again, one person considers some days  
to be more sacred than others, while another considers all days  
to be alike. Everyone ought to be fully convinced in their own  
6 mind. The person who observes a day, observes it to the Master's  
honor. They, again, who eat meat eat it to the Master's honor, for  
they give thanks to God; while the person who abstains from it  
7 abstains from it to the Master's honor, and also gives thanks to  
7 God. There is not one of us whose life concerns ourselves alone,  
8 and not one of us whose death concerns ourself alone; for, if we  
live, our life is for the Master, and, if we die, our death is for the  
Master. Whether, then, we live or die we belong to the Master.  
9 The purpose for which Christ died and came back to life was  
this — that he might be Lord over both the dead and the living.  
10 I would ask the one 'Why do you judge other followers of the  
Lord?' And I would ask the other 'Why do you despise them?'  
11 For we will all stand before the court of God. For scripture says  
— "'As surely as I live," says the Lord, "every knee will bend be-  
fore me; and every tongue will make acknowledgment to God."  
12 So, then, each one of us will have to render account of himself  
to God.

Let us, then, cease to judge one another. Rather let this be  
your resolve — never to place a stumbling-block or an obstacle  
in the way of a fellow follower of the Lord. Through my union  
with the Lord Jesus, I know and am persuaded that nothing is  
'defiling in itself.' A thing is 'defiling' only to the person who  
holds it to be so. If, for the sake of what you eat, you wound  
your fellow follower's feelings, your life has ceased to be ruled  
by love. Do not, by what you eat, ruin someone for whom Christ  
died! Do not let what is right for you become a matter of re-  
proach. For the kingdom of God does not consist of eating and  
drinking, but of righteousness and peace and gladness through  
the presence of the Holy Spirit. The person who serves the Christ  
in this way pleases God, and wins the approval of their fellows.  
Therefore our efforts should be directed towards all that makes  
for peace and the mutual building up of character. Do not undo  
God's work for the sake of what you eat. Though everything  
is 'clean,' yet, if a person eats so as to put a stumbling-block in  
the way of others, they do wrong. The right course is to abstain  
from meat or wine or, indeed, anything that is a stumbling-block  
to your fellow follower of the Lord. As for yourself — keep this  
faith of yours to yourself, as in the presence of God. Happy the  
person who never has to condemn themselves in regard to some-  
thing they think right! The person, however, who has misgivings  
stands condemned if they still eat, because their doing so is not  
the result of faith. And anything not done as the result of faith is  
a sin.

We, the strong, ought to take on our own shoulders the  
weaknesses of those who are not strong, and not merely to  
please ourselves. Let each of us please our neighbor for our  
neighbor's good, to help in the building up of their character.  
Even the Christ did not please himself! On the contrary, as scrip-  
ture says of him — 'The reproaches of those who were reproach-  
ing you fell upon me.' Whatever was written in the scriptures in  
days gone by was written for our instruction, so that, through  
patient endurance, and through the encouragement drawn from  
the scriptures, we might hold fast to our hope. And may God,  
the giver of this patience and this encouragement, grant you to

6 be united in sympathy in Christ, so that with one heart and one  
7 voice you may praise the God and Father of Jesus Christ, our  
8 Lord. Therefore always receive one another as friends, just as the  
9 Christ himself received us, to the glory of God. For I tell you that  
10 Christ, in vindication of God's truthfulness, has become a min-  
11 ister of the covenant of circumcision, so that he may fulfill the  
12 promises made to our ancestors, and that the Gentiles also may  
13 praise God for his mercy. As scripture says — 'Therefore will I  
14 make acknowledgment to you among the Gentiles and sing in  
15 honor of your name.' And again it says — 'Rejoice, you Gentiles,  
16 with God's people.' And yet again — 'Praise the Lord, all you  
17 Gentiles, and let all Peoples sing his praises.' Again, Isaiah says  
18 — 'There will be a Scion of the house of Jesse, One who is to arise  
19 to rule the Gentiles; on him will the Gentiles rest their hopes.'  
20 May God, who inspires our hope, grant you perfect happiness  
21 and peace in your faith, until you are filled with this hope by the  
power of the Holy Spirit.

14 I am persuaded, my friends — yes, I Paul, with regard to  
15 you — that you are yourselves full of kindness, furnished with  
16 all Christian learning, and well able to give advice to one another.  
17 But in parts of this letter I have expressed myself somewhat  
18 boldly — by way of refreshing your memories — because of the  
19 charge with which God has entrusted me, that I should be a min-  
20 ister of Christ Jesus to go to the Gentiles — that I should act as a  
21 priest of God's good news, so that the offering up of the Gentiles  
may be an acceptable sacrifice, consecrated by the Holy Spirit. It  
is, then, through my union with Christ Jesus that I have a proud  
confidence in my work for God. For I will not dare to speak of  
anything but what Christ has done through me to win the obe-  
dience of the Gentiles — by my words and actions, through the  
power displayed in signs and marvels, and through the power  
of the Holy Spirit. And so, starting from Jerusalem and its neigh-  
borhood, and going as far as Illyria, I have told in full the good  
news of the Christ; yet always with the ambition to tell the good  
news where Christ's name had not previously been heard, so as  
to avoid building on another's foundations. But as scripture says  
— 'They to whom he had never been proclaimed will see; and  
they who have never heard will understand!'

### Conclusion

That is why I have so often been prevented from coming to you. 22  
 But now there are no further openings for me in these parts, and 23  
 I have for several years been longing to come to you whenever I 24  
 may be going to Spain. For my hope is to visit you on my journey, 24  
 and then to be sent on my way by you, after I have first partly 25  
 satisfied myself by seeing something of you. Just now, however, 25  
 I am on my way to Jerusalem, to take help to Christ's people 26  
 there. For Macedonia and Greece have been glad to make a 26  
 collection for the poor among Christ's people at Jerusalem. Yes, 27  
 they were glad to do so; and indeed it is a duty which they owe 27  
 to them. For the Gentile converts who have shared their spiritual 28  
 blessings are in duty bound to minister to them in the things of 28  
 this world. When I have settled this matter, and have secured to 29  
 the poor at Jerusalem the enjoyment of these benefits, I will go, 29  
 by way of you, to Spain. And I know that, when I come to you, 29  
 it will be with a full measure of blessing from Christ.

I beg you, then, friends, by Jesus Christ, our Lord, and by the 30  
 love inspired by the Spirit, to join me in earnest prayer to God on 30  
 my behalf. Pray that I may be rescued from those in Judea who 31  
 reject the faith, and that the help which I am taking to Jerusalem 31  
 may prove acceptable to Christ's people; so that, God willing, 32  
 I may be able to come to you with a joyful heart, and enjoy 32  
 some rest among you. May God, the giver of peace, be with you 33  
 all. Amen.

I commend to your care our sister, Phoebe, who is a minister 16  
 of the church at Cenchreae; and I ask you to give her a Chris- 2  
 tian welcome — one worthy of Christ's people — and to aid 2  
 her in any matter in which she may need your assistance. She 3  
 has proved herself a staunch friend and protector and to many 3  
 others.

Give my greeting to Prisca and Aquila, my fellow work- 3  
 ers in the cause of Christ Jesus, who risked their own lives to 4  
 save mine. It is not I alone who thank them, but all the churches 4  
 among the Gentiles thank them also. Give my greeting, also, to 5  
 the church that meets at their house, as well as to my dear friend 5  
 Epaenetus, one of the first in Roman Asia to believe in Christ; to

6 Mary, who worked hard for you; to Andronicus and Junia, fel-  
7 low Jews and once my fellow prisoners, who are people of note  
8 among the apostles, and who became Christians before I did; to  
9 my dear Christian friend Ampliatus; to Urban, our fellow work-  
10 er in the cause of Christ, and to my dear friend Stachys; to that  
11 proved Christian Apelles; to the household of Aristobulus; to  
12 my countryman Herodion; to the Christians in the household of  
13 Narcissus; to Tryphaena and Tryphosa, who have worked hard  
14 for the Master; to my dear friend Persis, for she has done much  
15 hard work for the Master; to that eminent Christian, Rufus, and  
16 to his mother, who has been a mother to me also; to Asyncritus,  
Phlegon, Hermes, Patrobas, Hermas, and our friends with them;  
also to Philologus and Julia, Nereus and his sister, and Olym-  
pas, and to all Christ's people who are with them. Greet one an-  
other with a sacred kiss. All the churches of the Christ send you  
greetings.

17 I beg you, friends, to be on your guard against people who,  
by disregarding the teaching which you received, cause divi-  
sions and create difficulties; dissociate yourselves from them.  
18 For such persons are not serving Christ, our Master, but are  
slaves to their own appetites; and, by their smooth words and  
19 flattery, they deceive simple-minded people. Everyone has  
heard of your ready obedience. It is true that I am very happy  
about you, but I want you to be well versed in all that is good,  
20 and innocent of all that is bad. And God, the giver of peace, will  
before long crush Satan under your feet.

May the blessing of Jesus, our Lord, be with you.

21 Timothy, my fellow worker, sends you his greetings, and  
Lucius, Jason, and Sosipater, my countrymen, send theirs.

22 I Tertius, who am writing this letter, send you my Christian  
greeting.

23 My host Gaius, who extends his hospitality to the whole  
church, sends you his greeting; and Erastus, the city treasurer,  
and Quartus, our dear friend, add theirs.

25 Now to him who is able to strengthen you, as promised in  
the good news entrusted to me and in the proclamation of Jesus  
Christ, in accordance with the revelation of that hidden purpose,  
which in past ages was kept secret but now has been revealed



and, in obedience to the command of the immortal God, made 26  
known through the writings of the prophets to all nations, to  
secure submission to the faith — to him, I say, the wise and only 27  
God, be ascribed, through Jesus Christ, all glory for ever and  
ever. Amen.



# 1 Corinthians

*Paul's First Letter to the Corinthians*

## *Introduction*

**T**O THE CHURCH OF GOD IN CORINTH, to those who have been 1  
consecrated by union with Christ Jesus and called to  
become his people, and also to all, wherever they may be, who  
invoke the name of our Lord Jesus Christ — their Master and  
ours, from Paul, who has been called to be an apostle of Jesus 2  
Christ by the will of God, and from Sosthenes, our fellow  
follower of the Lord.

May God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you 3  
and give you peace.

I always thank God about you for the blessing bestowed on you 4  
in Christ Jesus. For through union with him you were enriched 5  
in every way — in your power to preach, and in your knowledge  
of the truth; and so became yourselves a confirmation of my tes- 6  
timony to the Christ. There is no gift in which you are deficient, 7  
while waiting for the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ. And 8  
God himself will strengthen you to the end, so that at the day of 9  
our Lord Jesus Christ you may be found blameless. God will not  
fail you, and it is he who called you into communion with his  
Son, Jesus Christ, our Lord.

## *The State of the Church at Corinth*

**B**UT I APPEAL TO YOU, my friends, by the name of our Lord Jesus 10  
Christ, to agree in what you profess, and not to allow divisions

11 to exist among you, but to be united — of one mind and of one  
12 opinion. For I have been informed, my friends, by the members  
13 of Chloe's household, that party feeling exists among you. I  
14 mean this: that every one of you says either 'I follow Paul,' or 'I  
15 Apollos,' or 'I Cephas,' or 'I Christ.' You have torn the Christ in  
16 pieces! Was it Paul who was crucified for you? Or were you bap-  
17 tized into the faith of Paul? I am thankful that I did not baptize  
any of you except Crispus and Gaius, so that no one can say that  
you were baptized into my faith. I baptized also the household  
of Stephanas. I do not know that I baptized anyone else. My mis-  
sion from Christ was not to baptize, but to tell the good news;  
not, however, in the language of philosophy, in case the cross of  
the Christ should be robbed of its meaning.

18 The message of the cross is indeed mere folly to those who are  
19 in the path to ruin, but to us who are in the path of salvation it is  
the power of God. For scripture says —

'I will bring the philosophy of the philosophers to nought, and  
the shrewdness of the shrewd I will bring to nothing.'

20 Where is the philosopher? Where the teacher of the law? Where  
21 the disputant of today? Has not God shown the world's philos-  
22 ophy to be folly? For since the world, in God's wisdom, did not  
23 by its philosophy learn to know God, God saw fit, by the 'folly'  
24 of our proclamation, to save those who believe in Christ! While  
25 Jews ask for miraculous signs, and Greeks study philosophy, we  
26 are proclaiming Christ crucified! — to the Jews an obstacle, to  
27 the Gentiles mere folly, but to those who have received the call,  
whether Jews or Greeks, Christ, the power of God and the wis-  
dom of God! For God's 'folly' is wiser than people, and God's  
'weakness' is stronger than people.

26 Look at the facts of your call, friends. There are not many  
27 among you who are wise, as people reckon wisdom, not many  
who are influential, not many who are high-born; but God chose  
what the world counts foolish to put its wise to shame, and God  
chose what the world counts weak to put its strong to shame,

and God chose what the world counts poor and insignificant — 28  
things that to it are unreal — to bring its 'realities' to nothing, so 29  
that in his presence no one should boast. But you, by your union 30  
with Christ Jesus, belong to God; and Christ, by God's will, be-  
came not only our wisdom, but also our righteousness, holiness,  
and deliverance, so that — in the words of scripture — 31

'Let him who boasts make his boast of the Lord!'

For my own part, friends, when I came to you, it was with no 2  
display of eloquence or philosophy that I came to tell the hid- 2  
den purpose of God; for I had determined that, while with you,  
I would forget everything Jesus Christ — and him crucified! In- 3  
deed, when I came among you, I was weak, and full of fears, and 4  
in great anxiety. My message and my proclamation were not de- 4  
livered in the persuasive language of philosophy, but were ac- 5  
companied by the manifestation of spiritual power, so that your 5  
faith should be based, not on the human wisdom, but on the  
power of God.

Yet there is a philosophy that we teach to those whose faith is 6  
matured, but it is not the philosophy of today, or of the leaders of 6  
today — whose downfall is at hand. No, it is a divine philosophy 7  
that we teach, one concerned with the hidden purpose of God 7  
— that long hidden philosophy which God, before time began,  
destined for our glory. This philosophy is not known to any of 8  
the leaders of today; for, had they known it, they would not have 8  
crucified our glorified Lord. It is what scripture speaks of as — 9

'What eye never saw, nor ear ever heard,  
what never entered people's minds —  
even all that God has prepared for those who love him.'

Yet to us God revealed it through his Spirit; for the Spirit fath- 10  
oms all things, even the inmost depths of God's being. For what 11  
person is there who knows what a person is, except the person's  
own spirit within them? So, also, no one comprehends what God  
is, except the Spirit of God. And as for us, it is not the spirit of 12  
the world that we have received, but the Spirit that comes from

God, so that we may realize the blessings given to us by him.  
13 And we speak of these gifts, not in language taught by human  
philosophy, but in language taught by the Spirit, explaining spir-  
14 itual things in spiritual words. The merely intellectual person  
rejects the teaching of the Spirit of God; for to them it is mere  
15 folly; they cannot grasp it, because it is to be understood only  
by spiritual insight. But the person with spiritual insight is able  
16 to understand everything, although they themselves are under-  
stood by no one. For 'who has so comprehended the mind of the  
Lord as to be able to instruct him?' We, however, have the mind  
of Christ.

3 But I, my friends, could not speak to you as people with  
spiritual insight, but only as worldly-minded — mere infants in  
2 the faith of Christ. I fed you with milk, not with solid food, for  
you were not then able to take it.

No, and even now you are not able; you are still worldly.  
3 While there exist among you jealousy and party feeling, is it not  
true that you are worldly, and are acting merely as other people  
4 do? When one says 'I follow Paul,' and another 'I follow Apol-  
5 los,' are not you like other people? What, I ask, is Apollos? Or  
what is Paul? Servants through whom you were led to accept  
6 the faith; and that only as the Lord helped each of you. I planted,  
and Apollos watered, but it was God who caused the growth.  
7 Therefore neither the one who plants, nor the one who waters,  
counts for anything, but only God who causes the growth. In  
8 this the person who plants and the person who waters are one;  
yet each will receive their own reward in proportion to their own  
9 labor. For we are God's fellow workers; you are God's harvest  
field, God's building.

10 In fulfillment of the charge which God had entrusted to me,  
I laid the foundation like a skillful master; but someone else is  
11 now building on it. Let everyone take care how they build; for  
no one can lay any other foundation than the one already laid —  
12 Jesus Christ. Whatever is used by those who build on this founda-  
tion, whether gold, silver, costly stones, wood, hay, or straw,  
13 the quality of each man's work will become known, for the day  
will make it plain; because that day is to be ushered in with fire,  
and the fire itself will test the quality of every man's work. If

anyone's work, which they have built on that foundation, still 14  
remains, they will gain a reward. If anyone's work is burnt up, 15  
they will suffer loss; though they themselves will escape, but  
only as one who has passed through fire.

Do not you know that you are God's Temple, and that God's 16  
Spirit has his home in you? If any one destroys the Temple of 17  
God, God will destroy them; for the Temple of God is sacred,  
and so also are you.

Let no one deceive himself. If any one among you imagines that, 18  
as regards this world, they are wise, let them become a 'fool,' 19  
that they may become wise. For in God's sight this world's  
wisdom is folly. Scripture tells of —

'One who catches the wise in their own craftiness,'

And it says again — 20

'The Lord sees how fruitless are the deliberations of the  
wise.'

Therefore let no one boast about people; for all things are yours 21  
— Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or 22  
death, or the present, or the future — all things are yours! But  
you are Christ's and Christ is God's. 23

Let people look on us as Christ's servants, and as stewards of 4  
the hidden truths of God. Now what we look for in stewards is 2  
that they should be trustworthy. But it weighs very little with me 3  
that I am judged by you or by any human tribunal. No, I do not 4  
even judge myself; for, though I am conscious of nothing against 4  
myself, that does not prove me innocent. It is the Lord who is my 5  
judge. Therefore do not pass judgment before the time, but wait  
until the Lord comes. He will throw light on what is now dark  
and obscure, and will reveal the motives in people's minds; and  
then everyone will receive due praise from God.

All this, friends, I have, for your sakes, applied to Apollos 6  
and myself, so that, from our example, you may learn to observe  
the precept — 'Keep to what is written,' that none of you may

7 speak boastfully of one teacher to the disparagement of another. For who makes any one of you superior to others? And what  
8 have you that was not given you? But if you received it as a gift, why do you boast as if you had not? Are you all so soon satisfied? Are you so soon rich? Have you begun to reign without  
9 us? Would indeed that you had, so that we also might reign with you! For, as it seems to me, God has exhibited us, the apostles,  
10 last of all, as people doomed to death. We are made a spectacle to the universe, both to angels and to people! We, for Christ's sake,  
11 are 'fools,' but you, by your union with Christ, are people of discernment. We are weak, but you are strong. You are honored,  
12 but we are despised. To this very hour we go hungry, thirsty, and naked; we are beaten; we are homeless; we work hard, toiling  
13 with our own hands. We meet abuse with blessings, we meet persecution with endurance, we meet slander with gentle appeals. We have been treated as the scum of the earth, the vilest  
of the vile, to this very hour.

14 It is with no wish to shame you that I am writing like this; but  
15 to warn you as my own dear children. Though you may have thousands of instructors in the faith of Christ, yet you have not  
16 many fathers. It was I who, through union with Christ Jesus, became your father by means of the good news. Therefore I entreat  
17 you — Follow my example. This is my reason for sending Timothy to you. He is my own dear faithful child in the Master's  
service, and he will remind you of my methods of teaching the faith of Christ Jesus — methods which I follow everywhere in  
every church.

18 Some, I hear, are puffed up with pride, thinking that I am not  
19 coming to you. But come to you I will, and that soon, if it please the Lord; and then I will find out, not what words these people  
20 use who are so puffed up, but what power they possess; for the kingdom of God is based, not on words, but on power. What do  
21 you wish? Am I to come to you with a rod, or in a loving and gentle spirit?

5 There is a wide-spread report respecting a case of immorality among you, and that, too, of a kind that does not occur even  
among the Gentiles — a man, I hear, is living with his father's  
2 wife! Instead of grieving over it and taking steps for the expul-



sion of the man who has done this thing, is it possible that you are still puffed up? For I myself, though absent in body, have been present with you in spirit, and in the name of our Lord Jesus I have already passed judgment, just as if I had been present, on the man who has acted in this way. I have decided — having been present in spirit at your meetings, when the power of the Lord Jesus was with us — to deliver such a man as this over to Satan, that what is sensual in him may be destroyed, so that his spirit may be saved at the day of the Lord. Your boasting is unseemly. Do not you know that even a little leaven leavens all the dough? Get rid entirely of the old leaven, so that you may be like new dough — free from leaven, as in truth you are. For our passover lamb is already sacrificed — Christ himself; therefore let us keep our festival, not with the leaven of former days, nor with the leaven of vice and wickedness, but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.

I told you, in my letter, not to associate with immoral people — not, of course, meaning people of the world who are immoral, or who are covetous and grasping, or who worship idols; for then you would have to leave the world altogether. But, as things are, I say that you are not to associate with anyone who, although a follower of Christ in name, is immoral, or covetous, or an idolater, or abusive, or a drunkard, or grasping — no, not even to sit down to eat with such people. What have I to do with judging those outside the church? Is it not for you to judge those who are within the church, while God judges those who are outside? 'Put away the wicked from among you.'

Can it be that, when one of you has a dispute with another, they dare to have their case tried before the heathen, instead of before Christ's people? Do not you know that Christ's people will try the world? And if the world is to be tried by you, are you unfit to try the most trivial cases? Do not you know that we are to try angels — to say nothing of the affairs of this life? Why, then, if you have cases relating to the affairs of this life, do you set to try them those who carry no weight with the church? To your shame I ask it. Can it be that there is not one among you wise

6 enough to decide between two of their fellow followers? Must  
7 a follower sue a fellow follower? In front of unbelievers? To be-  
8 gin with, it is undoubtedly a loss to you to have lawsuits with  
9 one another. Why not rather let yourselves be wronged? Why  
10 not rather let yourselves be cheated? Instead of this, you wrong  
11 and cheat others yourselves — yes, even other followers! Do not  
12 you know that wrong-doers will have no share in God's king-  
13 dom? Do not be deceived. No one who is immoral, or an idol-  
14 ater, or an adulterer, or licentious, or a sexual pervert, or a thief,  
15 or covetous, or a drunkard, or abusive, or grasping, will have  
16 any share in God's kingdom. Such some of you used to be; but  
17 you washed yourselves clean. You became Christ's people! You  
18 were pronounced righteous through the name of our Lord Jesus  
19 Christ, and through the Spirit of our God!

12 Everything is allowable for me! Yes, but everything is not  
13 profitable. Everything is allowable for me! Yes, but for my part,  
14 I will not let myself be enslaved by anything. Food exists for the  
15 stomach, and the stomach for food; but God will put an end to  
16 both the one and the other. The body, however, exists, not for  
17 immorality, but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body; and, as  
18 God has raised the Lord, so he will raise up us also by the exer-  
19 cise of his power. Do not you know that your bodies are Christ's  
20 members? Am I, then, to take the members that belong to the  
Christ and make them the members of a prostitute? Heaven for-  
bid! Or do not you know that a man who unites himself with a  
prostitute is one with her in body (for 'the two,' it is said, 'will be-  
come one'); while a man who is united with the Lord is one with  
him in spirit? Shun all immorality. Every other sin that people  
commit is something outside the body; but an immoral person  
sins against their own body. Again, do not you know that your  
body is a shrine of the Holy Spirit that is within you, the Spir-  
it which you have from God? Moreover, you are not your own  
masters; you were bought, and the price was paid. Therefore,  
honor God in your bodies.

*Answers to Questions Asked by the Church at  
Corinth*

WITH REFERENCE TO THE SUBJECTS ABOUT WHICH YOU WROTE TO ME: It is 7  
good for a man to remain single. But, owing to the prevalence of 2  
immorality, I advise every man to have his own wife, and every 3  
woman her husband. A husband should give his wife her due, 4  
and a wife her husband. It is not the wife, but the husband, who 5  
exercises power over her body; and so, too, it is not the husband, 6  
but the wife, who exercises power over his body. Do not deprive 7  
each other of what is due — unless it is only for a time and by  
mutual consent, so that your minds may be free for prayer until  
you again live as man and wife — otherwise Satan might take  
advantage of your want of self-control and tempt you. I say 6  
this, however, as a concession, not as a command. I should wish 7  
everyone to be just what I am myself. But everyone has his own  
gift from God — one in one way, and one in another.

My advice, then, to those who are not married, and to widows, 8  
is this: It would be good for them to remain as I am myself. But, 9  
if they cannot control themselves, let them marry, for it is better  
to marry than to be consumed with passion. To those who are 10  
married my direction is — yet it is not mine, but the Master's —  
that a woman is not to leave her husband (If she has done so, let 11  
her remain as she is, or else be reconciled to her husband) and  
also that a man is not to divorce his wife. To all others I say — I, 12  
not the Master — If a follower of the Lord is married to a wom-  
an, who is an unbeliever but willing to live with him, he should 13  
not divorce her; and a woman who is married to a man, who is  
an unbeliever but willing to live with her, should not divorce 14  
her husband. For, through his wife, the husband who is an unbe-  
liever has become associated with Christ's people; and the wife  
who is an unbeliever has become associated with Christ's peo-  
ple through the Lord's follower whom she has married. Other-  
wise your children would be 'defiled,' but, as it is, they belong 15  
to Christ's people. However, if the unbeliever wishes to be sepa-  
rated, let him be so. Under such circumstances neither is bound;

16 God has called you to live in peace. How can you tell, wife,  
whether you may not save your husband? And how can you tell,  
husband, whether you may not save your wife?

17 In any case, a person should continue to live in the condition  
which the Lord has allotted to them, and in which they were  
when God called them. This is the rule that I lay down in every  
18 church. Was a man already circumcised when he was called?  
Then he should not efface his circumcision. Has a man been  
called when uncircumcised? Then he should not be circumcised.  
19 Circumcision is nothing; the want of it is nothing; but to keep  
the commands of God is everything. Let everyone remain in  
20 that condition of life in which they were when the call came to  
them. Were you a slave when you were called? Do not let that  
trouble you. No, even if you are able to gain your freedom, still  
21 do your best. For the person who was a slave when they were  
called to the master's service is the Master's freedman; so, too,  
22 the person who was free when called is Christ's slave. You were  
bought, and the price was paid. Do not let yourselves become  
23 slaves to people. Friends, let everyone remain in the condition  
in which they were when they were called, in close communion  
with God.

25 With regard to unmarried women, I have no command from the  
Master to give you, but I tell you my opinion, and the Master in  
26 his mercy has made me worthy to be trusted. I think, then, that,  
in view of the time of suffering that has now come upon us, what  
I have already said is best — that a man should remain as he is.  
27 Are you married to a wife? Then do not seek to be separated. Are  
you separated from a wife? Then do not seek for a wife. still, if  
28 you should marry, that is not wrong; nor, if a young woman mar-  
ries, is that wrong. But those who marry will have much trouble  
29 to bear, and my wish is to spare you. What I mean, friends, is this  
— The time is short. Meanwhile, let those who have wives live as  
30 if they had none, those who are weeping as if not weeping, those  
who are rejoicing as if not rejoicing, those who buy as if not pos-  
31 sessed, and those who use the good things of the world as us-  
32 ing them sparingly; for this world as we see it is passing away. I

want you to be free from anxiety. The unmarried man is anxious about the Master's cause, desiring to please him; while the married man is anxious about worldly matters, desiring to please his wife; and so his interests are divided. Again, the unmarried woman, whether she is old or young, is anxious about the Master's cause, striving to be pure both in body and in spirit, while the married woman is anxious about worldly matters, desiring to please her husband. I say this for your own benefit, not with any intention of putting a halter around your necks, but in order to secure for the Master seemly and constant devotion, free from all distraction.

If, however, a father thinks that he is not acting fairly by his unmarried daughter, when she is past her youth, and if under these circumstances her marriage ought to take place, let him act as he thinks right. He is doing nothing wrong — let the marriage take place. On the other hand, a father, who has definitely made up his mind, and is under no compulsion, but is free to carry out his own wishes, and who has come to the decision, in his own mind, to keep his unmarried daughter at home will be doing right. In short, the one who consents to his daughter's marriage is doing right, and yet the other will be doing better.

A wife is bound to her husband as long as he lives; but, if the husband should pass to his rest, the widow is free to marry anyone she wishes, provided he is a believer. Yet she will be happier if she remains as she is — in my opinion, for I think that I also have the Spirit of God.

With reference to food that has been offered in sacrifice to idols — We are aware that all of us have knowledge! Knowledge breeds conceit, while love builds up character. If someone thinks that they know anything, they have not yet reached that knowledge which they ought to have reached. On the other hand, if a person loves God, they are known by God. With reference, then, to eating food that has been offered to idols — we are aware that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is no God but one. Even supposing that there are so-called 'gods' either in heaven or on earth — and there are many such 'gods' and 'lords' — Yet

6 for us there is only one God, the Father, from whom all things  
7 come (and for him we live), and one Lord, Jesus Christ, through  
whom all things come (and through him we live). Still, it is not  
everyone that has this knowledge. Some people, because of their  
association with idols, continued down to the present time, eat  
the food as food offered to an idol; and their consciences, while  
8 still weak, are dulled. What we eat, however, will not bring us  
nearer to God. We lose nothing by not eating this food, and we  
9 gain nothing by eating it. But take care that this right of yours  
does not become in any way a stumbling-block to the weak.  
10 For if some one should see you who possess this knowledge,  
feasting in an idol's temple, will not their conscience, if they are  
weak, become so hardened that they, too, will eat food offered to  
11 idols? And so, through this knowledge of yours, the weak per-  
12 son is ruined — someone for whose sake Christ died! In this way,  
by sinning against your fellow followers of the Lord and injur-  
ing their consciences, while still weak, you sin against Christ.  
13 Therefore, if what I eat makes a follower of the Lord fall, rather  
than make them fall, I will never eat meat again.

9 Am I not free? Am I not an apostle? Have I not seen our Lord  
Jesus? Are not you yourselves my work achieved in union with  
2 the Lord? If I am not an apostle to others, yet at least I am to you;  
for you are the seal that stamps me as an apostle in union with  
3 the Lord. The defense that I make to my critics is this: Have not  
4 we a right to food and drink? Have not we a right to take a wife  
5 with us, if she is a Christian, as the other apostles and the Mas-  
6 ter's brothers and Cephas all do? Or is it only Barnabas and I  
7 who have no right to give up working for our bread? Does any-  
one ever serve as a soldier at his own expense? Does anyone  
8 plant a vineyard and not eat its produce? Or does anyone look  
after a herd and not drink the milk? Am I, in all this, speaking  
only from the human standpoint? Does not the law also say the  
9 same? For in the law of Moses it is said —

'You should not muzzle a bullock while it is treading out  
the grain.'

Is it the bullocks that God is thinking of? Or is not is said entirely 10  
for our sakes? Surely it was written for our sakes, for the plow-  
man ought not to plow, nor the thrasher to thrash, without ex- 11  
pecting a share of the grain. Since we, then, sowed spiritual seed  
for you, is it too much that we should reap from you an earthly 12  
harvest? If others share in this right over you, do not we even  
more? Still we did not avail ourselves of this right. No, we en- 13  
dure anything rather than impede the progress of the good news  
of the Christ. Do not you know that those who do the work of 14  
the Temple live on what comes from the Temple, and that those  
who serve at the altar share the offerings with the altar? So, too, 15  
the Master has appointed that those who tell the good news  
should get their living from the good news. I, however, have not 16  
availed myself of any of these rights. I am not saying this to se-  
cure such an arrangement for myself; indeed, I would far rather 17  
die — Nobody will make my boast a vain one! If I tell the good  
news, I have nothing to boast of, for I can but do so. Woe is me if 18  
I do not tell it! If I do this work willingly, I have a reward; but, if  
unwillingly, I have been charged to perform a duty. What is my 19  
reward, then? To present the good news free of all cost, and so  
make but a sparing use of the rights which it gives me.

Although I was entirely free, yet, to win as many converts as 20  
possible, I made myself everyone's slave. To the Jews I became  
like a Jew, to win Jews. To those who are subject to law I became  
like a man subject to law — though I was not myself subject to 21  
law — to win those who are subject to law. To those who have  
no law I became like a man who has no law — not that I am free  
from God's law; no, for I am under Christ's law — to win those 22  
who have no law. To the weak I became weak, to win the weak.  
I have become all things to all people, so as at all costs to save 23  
some. And I do everything for the sake of the good news, so that  
with them I may share in its blessings.

Do not you know that on a racecourse, though all run, yet 24  
only one wins the prize? Run in such a way that you may win.  
Every athlete exercises self-restraint in everything; they, indeed, 25  
for a crown that fades, we for one that is unfading. I, therefore,  
run with no uncertain aim. I box — not like a man hitting the air. 26

27 No, I bruise my body and make it my slave, so that I, who have called others to the contest, will not myself be rejected.

10 I want you to bear in mind, friends, that all our ancestors were  
2 beneath the cloud, and all passed through the sea; that in the  
3 cloud and in the sea they all underwent baptism as followers of  
4 Moses; and that they all ate the same supernatural food, and all  
5 drank the same supernatural water, for they used to drink from  
6 a supernatural rock which followed them, and that rock was  
7 the Christ. Yet with most of them God was displeased; for they  
were 'struck down in the desert.' Now these things happened  
as warnings to us, to teach us not to long for evil things as our  
forefathers longed. Do not become idolaters, as some of them  
became. Scripture says —

'The people sat down to eat and drink, and stood up to  
dance.'

8 Nor let us act immorally, as some of them acted, with the result  
that twenty-three thousand of them fell dead in a single day. Nor  
9 let us try the patience of the Lord too far, as some of them tried  
it, with the result that they 'were, one after another, destroyed by  
10 the snakes.' And do not murmur, as some of them murmured,  
11 and so 'were destroyed by the angel of death.' These things hap-  
pened to them by way of warning, and were recorded to serve  
as a caution to us, in whose days the close of the ages has come.

12 Therefore let the person who thinks that they stand take care  
13 that they do not fall. No temptation has come upon you that is  
not common to all humanity. God will not fail you, and he will  
not allow you to be tempted beyond your strength; but, when he  
sends the temptation, he will also provide the way of escape, so  
that you may have strength to endure.

14 Therefore, my dear friends, shun the worship of idols. I speak  
15 to you as man of discernment; form your own judgment about  
16 what I am saying. In the cup of blessing which we bless, is not  
there a sharing in the blood of the Christ? And in the bread



which we break, is not there a sharing in the body of the Christ? The bread is one, and we, though many, are one body; for we all partake of that one bread. Look at the people of Israel. Do not those who eat the sacrifices share with the altar? What do I mean? That an offering made to an idol, or the idol itself, is anything? No; what I say is that the sacrifices offered by the Gentiles 'are offered to demons and to a being who is no God,' and I do not want you to share with demons. You cannot drink both the Cup of the Lord and the cup of demons. You cannot partake at the Table of the Lord and at the table of demons. Or 'are we to rouse the jealousy of the Lord'? Are we stronger than he?

Everything is allowable! Yes, but everything is not profitable. Everything is allowable! Yes, but everything does not build up character. A person must not study their own interests, but the interests of others.

Eat anything that is sold in the market, without making inquiries to satisfy your scruples; for 'the earth, with all that is in it, belongs to the Lord.' If an unbeliever invites you to his house and you consent to go, eat anything that is put before you, without making inquiries to satisfy your scruples. But, if anyone should say to you 'This has been offered in sacrifice to an idol,' then, for the sake of the speaker and his scruples, do not eat it. I do not say 'your' scruples, but 'his.' For why should the freedom that I claim be condemned by the scruples of another? If, for my part, I take the food thankfully, why should I be abused for eating that for which I give thanks?

Whether, then, you eat or drink or whatever you do, do everything to the honor of God. Do not cause offense either to Jews or Greeks or to the church of God; for I, also, try to please everybody in everything, not seeking my own advantage, but do what is best for others, so that they may be saved. Imitate me, as I myself imitate Christ.

I praise you, indeed, because you never forget me, and are keeping my injunctions in mind, exactly as I laid them on you. But I am anxious that you should understand that the Christ is the head of every man, that man is the head of woman, and that God

4 is the head of the Christ. Any man who keeps his head covered,  
when praying or preaching in public, dishonors him who is his  
5 head; while any woman, who prays or preaches in public bare-  
headed, dishonors him who is her head; for that is to make her-  
6 self like one of the shameless women who shave their heads.  
Indeed, if a woman does not keep her head covered, she may as  
well cut her hair short. But, since to cut her hair short, or shave  
it off, marks her as one of the shameless women, let her keep her  
7 head covered. A man ought not to have his head covered, for he  
has been from the beginning 'the likeness of God' and the reflec-  
8 tion of his glory, but woman is the reflection of man's glory. For it  
was not man who was taken from woman, but woman who was  
9 taken from man. Besides, man was not created for the sake of  
10 woman, but woman for the sake of man. And, therefore, a wom-  
an ought to wear on her head a symbol of her subjection, because  
11 of the presence of the angels. Still, when in union with the Lord,  
12 woman is not independent of man, or man of woman; for just as  
woman came from man, so man comes by means of woman; and  
13 all things come from God. judge for yourselves. Is it fitting that a  
woman should pray to God in public with her head uncovered?  
14 Does not nature herself teach us that, while for a man to wear his  
15 hair long is degrading to him, a woman's long hair is her glory?  
16 Her hair has been given her to serve as a covering. If, however,  
anyone still thinks it right to contest the point — well, we have  
no such custom, nor have the churches of God.

17 In giving directions on the next subject, I cannot praise you; be-  
18 cause your meetings do more harm than good. To begin with,  
19 I hear you and, to some extent, I believe it. Indeed, there must  
be actual parties among you, for so only will the people of real  
20 worth become known. When you meet together, as I understand,  
21 it is not possible to eat the Lord's Supper; for, as you eat, each of  
you tries to secure his own supper first, with the result that one  
22 has too little to eat, and another has too much to drink! Have you  
no houses in which you can eat and drink? Or are you trying to  
show your contempt for the church of God, and to humiliate the  
poor? What can I say to you? Should I praise you? In this matter

I cannot praise you. For I myself received from the Lord the account which I have in turn given to you — how the Lord Jesus, on the very night of his betrayal, took some bread, and, after saying the thanksgiving, broke it and said “This is my own body given on your behalf. Do this in memory of me.” And in the same way with the cup, after supper, saying “This cup is the new covenant made by my blood. Do this, whenever you drink it, in memory of me.” For whenever you eat this bread and drink the cup, you proclaim the Lord’s death — until he comes. Therefore, whoever eats the bread, or drinks the Lord’s cup, in an irreverent spirit, will have to answer for an offense against the Lord’s body and blood. Let everyone look into their own heart, and only then eat of the bread and drink from the cup. For the person who eats and drinks brings a judgment on themselves by their eating and drinking, when they do not discern the body. That is why so many among you are weak and ill, and why some are sleeping. But, if we judged ourselves rightly, we should not be judged. Yet, in being judged by the Lord, we are undergoing discipline, so that we may not have judgment passed on us with the rest of the world. Therefore, my friends, when you meet together to eat the Supper, wait for one another. If anyone is hungry, let them eat at home, so that your meetings may not bring a judgment on you. The other details I will settle when I come.

In the next place, friends, I do not want you to be ignorant about spiritual gifts. You know that there was a time when you were Gentiles, going astray after idols that could not speak, just as you happened to be led. Therefore I tell you plainly that no one who speaks under the influence of the Spirit of God says ‘JESUS IS ACCURSED,’ and that no one can say ‘JESUS IS LORD,’ except under the influence of the Holy Spirit. Gifts differ, but the Spirit is the same; ways of serving differ, yet the Master is the same; results differ, yet the God who brings about every result is in every case the same. To each of us there is given spiritual illumination for the general good. To one is given the power to speak with wisdom through the Spirit; to another the power to speak with knowledge, due to the same Spirit; to another faith

10 by the same Spirit; to another power to cure diseases by the one  
Spirit; to another supernatural powers; to another the gift of  
preaching; to another the gift of distinguishing between true and  
false inspiration; to another varieties of the gift of 'tongues'; to  
11 another the power to interpret 'tongues.' All these result from  
one and the same Spirit, who distributes his gifts to each individ-  
ually as he wills.

12 For just as the human body is one whole, and yet has many  
parts, and all its parts, many though they are, form but one body,  
13 so it is with the Christ; for it was by one Spirit that we were all  
baptized to form one body, whether Jews or Greeks, slaves or  
14 free, and were all imbued with one Spirit. The human body, I re-  
peat, consists not of one part, but of many. If the foot says 'Since  
15 I am not a hand, I do not belong to the body,' it does not because  
of that cease to belong to the body. Or if the ear says 'Since I  
16 am not an eye, I do not belong to the body,' it does not because  
of that cease to belong to the body. If all the body were an eye,  
17 where would the hearing be? If it were all hearing, where would  
the sense of smell be? But in fact God has placed each individ-  
18 ual part just where he thought fit in the body. If, however, they  
all made up only one part, where would the body be? But in  
19 fact, although it has many parts, there is only one body. The eye  
cannot say to the hand 'I do not need you,' nor, again, the head  
20 to the feet 'I do not need you.' No! Those parts of the body that  
seem naturally the weaker are indispensable; and those parts  
21 which we deem less honorable we surround with special hon-  
or; and our ungraceful parts receive a special grace which our  
22 graceful parts do not require. Yes, God has so constructed the  
body — by giving a special honor to the part that lacks it — As  
23 to secure that there should be no disunion in the body, but that  
the parts should show the same care for one another. If one part  
24 suffers, all the others suffer with it, and if one part has honor  
done it, all the others share its joy. Together you are the body of  
25 Christ, and individually its parts. In the church God has appoint-  
ed, first, apostles, secondly preachers, thirdly teachers; then he  
26 has given supernatural powers, then power to cure diseases,  
aptness for helping others, capacity to govern, varieties of the  
27 gift of 'tongues.' Can everyone be an apostle? Can everyone be  
28  
29

a preacher? Can everyone be a teacher? Can everyone have supernatural powers? Can everyone have power to cure diseases? 30  
Can everyone speak in 'tongues'? Can everyone interpret them? 31  
Strive for the greater gifts.

Though I speak in the 'tongues' of people, or even of angels, yet 13  
have not love, I have become mere echoing brass, or a clanging  
cymbal! Even though I have the gift of preaching, and fathom 2  
all hidden truths and all the depths of knowledge; even though  
I have such faith as might move mountains, yet have not love, I  
am nothing! Even though I dole my substance to the poor, even 3  
though I sacrifice my body in order to boast, yet have not love,  
it avails me nothing! love is long-suffering, and kind; love is 4  
never envious, never boastful, never conceited, never behaves  
unbecomingly; love is never self-seeking, never provoked, never 5  
reckons up her wrongs; love never rejoices at evil, but rejoices in  
the triumph of truth; love bears with all things, every trustful, 6  
ever hopeful, ever patient. love never fails. But, whether it be the 7  
gift of preaching, it will be done with; whether it be the gift of 8  
'tongues,' it will cease; whether it be knowledge, it, too, will be  
done with. For our knowledge is incomplete, and our preach- 9  
ing is incomplete, but, when the perfect has come, that which is 10  
incomplete will be done with. When I was a child, I talked as a  
child, I felt as a child, I reasoned as a child; now that I am a man, 11  
I have done with childish ways. As yet we see, in a mirror, dimly, 12  
but then — face to face! As yet my knowledge is incomplete, but  
then I will know in full, as I have been fully known. Meanwhile  
faith, hope, and love endure — these three, but the greatest 13  
of these is love. Seek this love earnestly, and strive for spiritual 14  
gifts, above all for the gift of preaching. The person who, when  
speaking, uses the gift of 'tongues' is speaking, not to people, 2  
but to God, for no one understands them; yet in spirit they are  
speaking of hidden truths. But those who preach are speaking 3  
to their fellow men and women words that will build up faith,  
and give them comfort and encouragement. Those who, when 4  
speaking, use the gift of 'tongues' builds up their own faith,  
while those who preach build up the faith of the church. Now

5 I want you all to speak in 'tongues,' but much more I wish that  
you should preach. A preacher is worth more than one who  
speaks in 'tongues,' unless they interpret their words, so that  
6 the faith of the church may be built up. This being so, friends,  
what good will I do you, if I come to you and speak in 'tongues,'  
unless my words convey some revelation, or knowledge, or take  
7 the form of preaching or teaching? Even with inanimate things,  
such as a flute or a harp, though they produce sounds, yet unless  
the notes are quite distinct, how can the tune played on the flute  
8 or the harp be recognized? If the bugle sounds a doubtful call,  
9 who will prepare for battle? And so with you; unless, in using  
the gift of 'tongues,' you utter intelligible words, how can what  
you say be understood? You will be speaking to the winds! There  
10 is, for instance, a certain number of different languages in the  
11 world, and not one of them fails to convey meaning. If, however,  
I do not happen to know the language, I will be a foreigner  
to those who speak it, and they will be foreigners to me. And  
12 so with you; since you are striving for spiritual gifts, be eager  
to excel in such as will build up the faith of the church. There-  
13 fore let him who, when speaking, uses the gift of 'tongues' pray  
14 for ability to interpret them. If, when praying, I use the gift of  
'tongues,' my spirit indeed prays, but my mind is a blank. What,  
15 then, is my conclusion? Simply this — I will pray with my spir-  
16 it, but with my mind as well; I will sing with my spirit, but with  
my mind as well. If you bless God with your spirit only, how  
can people in the congregation who are without your gift say  
'Amen' to your thanksgiving? They do not know what you are  
17 saying! Your thanksgiving may be excellent, but the other is not  
18 helped by it. Thank God, I use the gift of 'tongues' more than any  
19 of you. But at a meeting of the church I would rather speak five  
words with my mind, and so teach others, than ten thousand  
words when using the gift of 'tongues.'

20 My friends, do not show yourselves children in understand-  
ing. In wickedness be infants, but in understanding show your-  
selves adults. It is said in the law —  
21

'In strange tongues and by the lips of strangers will I speak  
to this people, but even then they will not listen to me, says

the Lord.'

Therefore the gift of the 'tongues' is intended as a sign, not for 22  
those who believe in Christ, but for those who do not, while  
the gift of preaching is intended as a sign, not for those who do 23  
not believe in Christ, but for those who do. So, when the whole  
church meets, if all present use the gift of 'tongues,' and some 24  
people who are without the gift, or who are unbelievers, come in,  
will not they say that you are mad? While, if all those present use 25  
the gift of preaching, and an unbeliever, or someone without the  
gift, comes in, they are convinced of their sinfulness by them all,  
they are called to account by them all; the secrets of their heart 26  
are revealed, and then, throwing themselves on their face, they  
will worship God, and declare 'God is indeed among you!'

What do I suggest, then, friends? Whenever you meet for 26  
worship, each of you comes, either with a hymn, or a lesson, or a  
revelation, or the gift of 'tongues,' or the interpretation of them;  
let everything be directed to the building up of faith. If any of 27  
you use the gift of 'tongues,' not more than two, or at the most  
three, should do so — each speaking in his turn — and some one 28  
should interpret them. If there is no one able to interpret what  
is said, they should remain silent at the meeting of the church,  
and speak to themselves and to God. Of preachers two or three 29  
should speak, and the rest should weigh well what is said. But, 30  
if some revelation is made to another person as he sits there, the  
first speaker should stop. For you can all preach in turn, so that 31  
all may learn some lesson and all receive encouragement. (The  
spirit that moves the preachers is within the preachers' control; 32  
for God is not a God of disorder, but of peace.) This custom pre- 33  
vails in all the churches of Christ's people.

At the meetings of the church married women should remain 34  
silent, for they are not allowed to speak in public; they should  
take a subordinate place, as the law itself directs. If they want 35  
information on any point, they should ask their husbands about  
it at home; for it is unbecoming for a married woman to speak at  
a meeting of the church. What! Did God's message to the world 36

originate with you? Or did it find its way to none but you?

37 If anyone thinks that he has the gift of preaching or any other  
spiritual gift, let him recognize that what I am now saying to  
38 you is a command from the Lord. Anyone who ignores it may be  
39 ignored. Therefore, my friends, strive for the gift of preaching,  
40 and yet do not forbid speaking in 'tongues.' Let everything be  
done in a proper and orderly manner.

### *The Apostle's Teaching as to the Resurrection of the Dead*

15 NEXT, friends, I would like to remind you of the good news  
which I told you, and which you received — the good news on  
2 which you have taken your stand, and by means of which you  
are being saved. I would like to remind you of the words that I  
used in telling it to you, since you are still holding fast to it, and  
since it was not in vain that you became believers in Christ. For  
3 at the very beginning of my teaching I gave you the account  
which I had myself received — that Christ died for our sins (as  
4 the scriptures had foretold), that he was buried, that on the third  
5 day he was raised (as the scriptures had foretold), and that he  
6 appeared to Cephas, and then to the Twelve. After that, he ap-  
peared to more than five hundred of his followers at one time,  
most of whom are still alive, though some have gone to their  
7 rest. After that, he appeared to James, and then to all the apostles.  
8 Last of all, he appeared even to me, who am, as it were, the abor-  
9 tion. For I am the meanest of the apostles, I who am unworthy  
of the name of 'apostle,' because I persecuted the church of God.  
10 But it is through the love of God that I am what I am, and the  
love that he showed me has not been wasted. No, I have toiled  
harder than any of them, and yet it was not I, but the love of God  
11 working with me. Whether, then, it was I or whether it was they,  
this we proclaim, and this you believed.

12 Now, if it is proclaimed of Christ that he has been raised from the  
dead, how is it that some of you say that there is no such thing  
13 as a resurrection of the dead? But, if there is no such thing as a



resurrection of the dead, then even Christ has not been raised; and, if Christ has not been raised, then our proclamation is without meaning, and our faith without meaning also! Yes, and we are being proved to have borne false testimony about God; for we testified of God that he raised the Christ, whom he did not raise, if, indeed, the dead do not rise! For, if the dead do not rise, then even Christ himself has not been raised, and, if Christ has not been raised, your faith is folly — your sins are on you still! Yes, and they, who have passed to their rest in union with Christ, perished! If all that we have done has been to place our hope in Christ for this life, then we of all people are the most to be pitied.

But, in truth, Christ has been raised from the dead, the first-fruits of those who are at rest. For, since through a man there is death, so, too, through a man there is a resurrection of the dead. For, as through union with Adam all die, so through union with the Christ will all be made to live. But each in their proper order — Christ the first-fruits; afterwards, at his coming, those who belong to the Christ. Then will come the end — when he surrenders the kingdom to his God and Father, having overthrown all other rule and all other authority and power. For he must reign until God 'has put all his enemies under his feet.' The last enemy to be overthrown is death; for God has placed all things under Christ's feet. (But, when it is said that all things have been placed under Christ, it is plain that God is excepted who placed everything under him.) And, when everything has been placed under him, the Son will place himself under God who placed everything under him, so that God may be all in all! Again, what good will they be doing who are baptized on behalf of the dead? If it is true that the dead do not rise, why are people baptized on their behalf? Why, too, do we risk our lives every hour? Daily I face death — I swear it, friends, by the pride in you that I feel through my union with Christ Jesus, our Lord. If with only human hopes I had fought in the arena at Ephesus, what should I have gained by it? If the dead do not rise, then — 'Let us eat and drink, for tomorrow we will die!' Do not be deceived.

'Good character is marred by evil company.'

34 Wake up to a righteous life, and cease to sin. There are some who have no true knowledge of God. I speak in this way to shame you.

35 Some one, however, may ask 'How do the dead rise? And in  
36 what body will they come?' You foolish person! The seed you  
37 yourself sow does not come to life, unless it dies! And when you  
38 sow, you sow not the body that will be, but a mere grain — per-  
39 haps of wheat, or something else. God gives it the body that he  
40 pleases — to each seed its special body. All forms of life are not  
41 the same; there is one for people, another for beasts, another for  
42 birds, and another for fishes. There are heavenly bodies, and  
43 earthly bodies; but the beauty of the heavenly bodies is not the  
44 beauty of the earthly. There is a beauty of the sun, and a beauty  
45 of the moon, and a beauty of the stars; for even star differs from  
46 star in beauty. It is the same with the resurrection of the dead.  
47 Sown a mortal body, it rises immortal; sown disfigured, it rises  
48 beautiful; sown weak, it rises strong; sown a human body, it rises  
49 a spiritual body. As surely as there is a human body, there is also  
50 a spiritual body. That is what is meant by the words — 'Adam,  
51 the first man, became a human being'; the last Adam became a  
52 life-giving spirit. That which comes first is not the spiritual, but  
53 the human; afterwards comes the spiritual; the first man was  
54 from the dust of the earth; the second man from heaven. Those  
55 who are of the dust are like him who came from the dust; and  
56 those who are of heaven are like him who came from heaven.  
57 And as we have borne the likeness of him who came from the  
58 dust, so let us bear the likeness of him who came from heaven.  
59 This I say, friends — Flesh and blood can have no share in the  
60 kingdom of God, nor can the perishable share the imperishable.  
61 Listen, I will tell you God's hidden purpose! We will not all have  
62 passed to our rest, but we will all be transformed — in a mo-  
63 ment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet-call; for the  
64 trumpet will sound, and the dead will rise immortal, and we,  
65 also, will be transformed. For this perishable body of ours must  
66 put on an imperishable form, and this dying body a deathless  
67 form. And, when this dying body has put on its deathless form,

then indeed will the words of scripture come true —

‘death has been swallowed up in victory! Where, Death, is your victory? Where, death, is your sting?’ 55

It is sin that gives death its sting, and it is the law that gives sin its power. But thanks be to God, who gives us the victory, through Jesus Christ, our Lord. Therefore, my dear friends, stand firm, unshaken, always diligent in the Lord's work, for you know that, in union with him, your toil is not in vain. 56  
57  
58

### *Conclusion*

WITH REFERENCE TO THE COLLECTION FOR CHRIST'S PEOPLE, I want you to follow the instructions that I gave to the churches in Galatia. On the first day of every week each of you should put by what he can afford, so that no collections need be made after I have come. On my arrival, I will send any persons, whom you may authorize by letter, to carry your gift to Jerusalem; and, if it appears to be worth while for me to go also, they will go with me. 16  
2  
3  
4

I will come to you as soon as I have been through Macedonia — for I am going through Macedonia — And I will probably make some stay with you or, perhaps, remain for the winter, so that you may yourselves send me on my way, wherever I may be going. I do not propose to pay you a visit in passing now, for I hope to stay with you for some time, if the Lord permits. I intend, however, staying at Ephesus until the Festival at the close of the Harvest; for a great opening for active work has presented itself, and there are many opponents. 5  
6  
7  
8  
9

If Timothy comes, take care that he has no cause for feeling anxious while he is with you. He is doing the Master's work no less than I am. No one, therefore, should slight him. See him safely on his way to me, for I am expecting him with some of our friends. 10  
11

As for our friend Apollos, I have often urged him to go to you with the others. He has, however, been very unwilling to do so as yet; but he will go as soon as he finds a good opportunity. 12

13 Be watchful; stand firm in your faith; be brave; be strong. Let  
14 everything you do be done in a loving spirit.

15 I have another request to make of you, friends. You re-  
16 member Stephanas and his household, and that they were  
17 the first-fruits gathered in from Greece, and set themselves to  
18 serve Christ's people. I want you, on your part, to show defer-  
19 ence to such people as these, as well as to every fellow laborer  
20 and earnest worker. I am glad Stephanas and Fortunatus and  
21 Achaicus have come, for they have made up for your absence;  
22 they have cheered my heart, and your hearts also. Recognize the  
23 worth of such people as these.

19 The churches in Roman Asia send you their greetings. Aquila  
20 and Prisca and the church that meets at their house send you  
21 many Christian greetings. All of the Lord's followers send you  
22 greetings. Greet one another with a sacred kiss.

21 I, Paul, add this greeting in my own handwriting. Accursed  
22 be anyone who has no love for the Lord. THE LORD IS COM-  
23 ING. May the blessing of the Lord Jesus be with you. My love to  
24 all of you who are in union with Christ Jesus.

# 2 Corinthians

*Paul's Second Letter to the Corinthians*

## *Introduction*

**T**O THE CHURCH OF GOD IN CORINTH, and to all Christ's people 1  
throughout Greece, from Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus,  
by the will of God, and from Timothy, who is also a follower. 2  
May God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and  
give you peace.

Blessed is the God and Father of Jesus Christ our Lord, the all- 3  
merciful Father, the God ever ready to console, who consoles us 4  
in all our troubles, so that we may be able to console those who  
are in any trouble with the consolation that we ourselves receive 5  
from him. It is true that we have our full share of the sufferings  
of the Christ, but through the Christ we have also our full share 6  
of consolation. If we meet with trouble, it is for the sake of your  
consolation and salvation; and, if we find consolation, it is for the 7  
sake of the consolation that you will experience when you are  
called to endure the sufferings that we ourselves are enduring;  
and our hope for you remains unshaken. We know that, as you 8  
are sharing our sufferings, you will also share our consolation.  
We want you, friends, to know that, in the troubles which be- 9  
fell us in Roman Asia, we were burdened altogether beyond our  
strength, so much so that we even despaired of life. Indeed, we 10  
had the presentiment that we must die, so that we might rely,  
not on ourselves, but on God who raises the dead. And from so  
imminent a death God delivered us, and will deliver us again;  
for in him we have placed our hopes of future deliverance, while 11  
you, also, help us by your prayers. And then many lips will give

thanks on our behalf for the blessing granted us in answer to many prayers.

### *The Apostle's Relations with his Converts*

12 INDEED, our main ground for satisfaction is this — Our con-  
science tells us that our conduct in the world, and still more in  
13 our relations with you, was marked by a purity of motive and  
a sincerity that were inspired by God, and was based, not on  
14 worldly policy, but on the help of God. We never write anything  
to you other than what you will acknowledge to the very end —  
And, indeed, you have already partly acknowledged it about us  
— that you have a right to be proud of us, as we will be proud  
of you, on the day of our Lord Jesus.

15 With this conviction in my mind, I planned to come to see you  
16 first, so that your pleasure might be doubled — To visit you  
both on my way to Macedonia, and to come to you again on my  
return from Macedonia, and then to get you to send me on my  
17 way into Judea. As this was my plan, where, pray, did I show  
any fickleness of purpose? Or do you think that my plans are  
formed on mere impulse, so that in the same breath I say 'Yes'  
18 and 'No'? As God is true, the message that we brought you does  
not waver between 'Yes' and 'No'! The Son of God, Christ Jesus,  
19 whom we — Silas, Timothy, and I — proclaimed among you,  
never wavered between 'Yes' and 'No.' With him it has always  
20 been 'Yes.' For, many as were the promises of God, in Christ is  
the 'Yes' that fulfills them. Therefore, through Christ again, let  
21 the 'Amen' rise, through us, to the glory of God. God who brings  
us, with you, into close union with Christ, and who consecrated  
22 us, also set his seal on us, and gave us his Spirit in our hearts as  
a pledge of future blessings.

23 But, as my life will answer for it, I call God to witness that  
24 it was to spare you that I deferred my visit to Corinth. I do not  
mean that we are to dictate to you with regard to your faith; on  
the contrary, we work with you for your true happiness; indeed,  
2 it is through your faith that you are standing firm. For my own

sake, as well, I decided not to pay you another painful visit. If 2  
it is I who cause you pain, why, who is there to cheer me, except  
the person whom I am paining? So I wrote as I did because I 3  
was afraid that if I had come, I should have been pained by those  
who ought to have made me glad; for I felt sure that it was true  
of you all that my joy was in every case yours also. I wrote to 4  
you in sore trouble and distress of heart and with many tears,  
not to give you pain, but to let you see how intense a love I have  
for you.

Now whoever has caused the pain has not so much pained 5  
me, as he has, to some extent — not to be too severe — pained  
every one of you. The man to whom I refer has been sufficient- 6  
ly punished by the penalty inflicted by the majority of you; so  
that now you must take the opposite course, and forgive and 7  
encourage him, or else he may be overwhelmed by the intensity  
of his pain. So I entreat you to assure him of your love. I had this 8  
further object, also, in what I wrote — to find out whether you  
might be relied on to be obedient in everything. Anyone you for- 9  
give, I forgive them, too. Indeed, for my part, whatever I have  
forgiven (if I have had to forgive anything), I have forgiven for 10  
your sakes, in the presence of Christ, so as to prevent Satan from  
taking advantage of us; for we are not ignorant of his devices. 11

When I went to the district around Troas to tell the good 12  
news of the Christ, even though there was an opening for serv-  
ing the Master, I could get no peace of mind because I failed to 13  
find Titus, my friend; so I took leave of the people there, and  
went on to Macedonia. All thanks to God, who, through our 14  
union with the Christ, leads us in one continual triumph, and  
uses us to spread the sweet perfume of the knowledge of him in  
every place. For we are the fragrance of Christ ascending to God 15  
— both among those who are in the path of salvation and among  
those who are in the path to ruin. To the latter we are a stench 16  
which arises from death and tells of death; to the former a fra-  
grance which arises from life and tells of life. But who is equal to  
such a task? Unlike many people, we are not in the habit of mak- 17  
ing profit out of God's message; but in all sincerity, and bearing  
God's commission, we speak before him in union with Christ.

3 Are we beginning to commend ourselves again? Or are we like  
some who need letters of commendation to you, or from you?  
2 You yourselves are our letter — a letter written on our hearts,  
3 and one which everybody can read and understand. All can see  
that you are a letter from Christ delivered by us, a letter written,  
not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God, not on 'tablets  
of stone,' but on 'tablets of human hearts.'

### *The Ministry of the Apostles*

4 THIS, then, is the confidence in regard to God that we have  
5 gained through the Christ. I do not mean that we are fit to form  
6 any judgment by ourselves, as if on our own authority; our fit-  
ness comes from God, who himself made us fit to be minis-  
ters of a new covenant, of which the substance is, not a written  
law, but a Spirit. For the written law means death, but the Spirit  
gives life.

7 If the system of religion which involved death, embodied in a  
written law and engraved on stones, began amid such glory, that  
the Israelites were unable to gaze at the face of Moses because of  
8 its glory, though it was but a passing glory, will not the religion  
9 that confers the Spirit have still greater glory? For, if there was  
a glory in the religion that involved condemnation, far greater  
10 is the glory of the religion that confers righteousness! Indeed,  
that which then had glory has lost its glory, because of the glory  
11 which surpasses it. And, if that which was to pass away was at-  
tended with glory, far more will that which is to endure be sur-  
rounded with glory!

12 With such a hope as this, we speak with all plainness; unlike  
13 Moses, who covered his face with a veil, to prevent the Israelites  
from gazing at the disappearance of what was passing away.  
14 But their minds were slow to learn. Indeed, to this very day, at  
the public reading of the old covenant, the same veil remains ;  
only for those who are in union with Christ does it pass away.  
15 But, even to this day, whenever Moses is read, a veil lies on their  
16 hearts. 'Yet, whenever someone turns to the Lord, the veil is re-  
17 moved.' And the 'Lord' is the Spirit, and, where the Spirit of the



Lord is, there is freedom. And all of us, with faces from which 18  
the veil is lifted, seeing, as if reflected in a mirror, the glory of the  
Lord, are being transformed into his likeness, from glory to glo-  
ry, as it is given by the Lord, the Spirit.

Therefore, since it is by God's mercy that we are engaged in 4  
this ministry, we do not lose heart. No, we have renounced the 2  
secrecy prompted by shame, refusing to adopt crafty ways, or  
to tamper with God's message, and commending ourselves to  
everyone's conscience, in the sight of God, by our exhibition of 3  
the truth. And, even if the good news that we bring is veiled, it  
is veiled only in the case of those who are on the path to ruin — 4  
people whose minds have been blinded by the God of this age,  
unbelievers as they are, so that the light from the good news of  
the glory of the Christ, who is the incarnation of God, should 5  
not shine for them. (For it is not ourselves that we proclaim, but  
Christ Jesus, as Lord, and ourselves as your servants for Jesus' 6  
sake.) Indeed, the same God who said 'Out of darkness light will  
shine,' has shone in on our hearts, so that we should bring out  
into the light the knowledge of the glory of God, seen in the face  
of Christ.

This treasure we have in these earthen vessels, so that its all-pre- 7  
vailing power may be seen to come from God, and not to be our  
own. Though hard pressed on every side, we are never hemmed 8  
in; through perplexed, never driven to despair; though pursued, 9  
never abandoned; though struck down, never killed! We always 10  
bear on our bodies the marks of the death that Jesus died, so that  
the life also of Jesus may be exhibited in our bodies. Indeed, we 11  
who still live are continually being given over to death for Jesus'  
sake, so that the life also of Jesus may be exhibited in our mortal 12  
nature. And so, while death is at work within us, life is at work  
within you. But, in the same spirit of faith as that expressed in 13  
the words — 'I believed, and therefore I spoke,' we, also believe,  
and therefore speak. For we know that he who raised the Lord 14  
Jesus will raise us also with him, and will bring us, with you,  
into his presence. For all this is for your sakes, so that the loving 15  
kindness of God, spreading from heart to heart, may cause yet

more hearts to overflow with thanksgiving, to his glory.

16 Therefore, as I said, we do not lose heart. No, even though  
outwardly we are wasting away, yet inwardly we are being re-  
17 newed day by day. The light burden of our momentary trouble  
is preparing for us, in measure transcending thought, a weight  
18 of imperishable glory; we, all the while, gazing not on what is  
seen, but on what is unseen; for what is seen is transient, but  
5 what is unseen is imperishable. For we know that if our tent —  
that earthly body which is now our home — is taken down, we  
have a house of God's building, a home not made by hands, im-  
2 perishable, in heaven. Even while in our present body we sigh,  
3 longing to put over it our heavenly house, sure that, when we  
4 have put it on, we will never be found discarnate. For we who  
are in this 'tent' sigh under our burden, unwilling to take it off,  
yet wishing to put our heavenly body over it, so that all that is  
5 mortal may be absorbed in life. And he who has prepared us for  
this change is God, who has also given us his Spirit as a pledge.

6 Therefore we are always confident, knowing that, while our  
home is in the body, we are absent from our home with the Lord.  
7 For we guide our lives by faith, and not by what we see. And  
8 in this confidence we would gladly leave our home in the body,  
9 and make our home with the Lord. Therefore, whether in our  
home or absent from our home, our one ambition is to please  
10 him. For at the court of the Christ we must all appear in our true  
characters, so that each may reap the results of the life which he  
has lived in the body, in accordance with his actions — whether  
good or worthless.

11 Therefore, because we know the fear inspired by the Lord, it is  
true that we are trying to win people over, but our motives are  
plain to God; and I hope that in your inmost hearts they are  
12 plain to you also. We are not "commending ourselves" again to  
you, but rather are giving you cause for pride in us, so that you  
may have an answer ready for those who pride themselves on  
13 appearances and not on character. For, if we were "beside our-  
selves," it was in God's service! If we are not in our senses, it is  
14 in yours! It is the love of the Christ which compels us, when we

reflect that, as one died for all, therefore all died; and that he died 15  
for all, so that the living should no longer live for themselves,  
but for him who died and rose for them.

For ourselves, then, from this time forward, we refuse to 16  
regard anyone from the world's standpoint. Even if we once  
thought of Christ from the standpoint of the world, yet now we  
do so no longer. Therefore, if anyone is in union with Christ, he 17  
is a new being! His old life has passed away; a new life has be-  
gun! But all this is the work of God, who reconciled us to himself 18  
through Christ, and gave us the Ministry of Reconciliation — To  
proclaim that God, in Christ, was reconciling the world to him- 19  
self, not reckoning people's offenses against them, and that he  
had entrusted us with the message of this reconciliation.

It is, then, on Christ's behalf that we are acting as ambas- 20  
sadors, God, as it were, appealing to you through us. We implore  
you on Christ's behalf — Be reconciled to God. For our sake God 21  
made Christ, who was innocent of sin, one with our sinfulness,  
so that in him we might be made one with the righteousness of  
God. Therefore, as God's fellow workers, we also appeal to you 6  
not to receive his loving kindness in vain. For he says — 2

'At the time for acceptance I listened to you,  
And on the day of deliverance I helped you.'

Now is the time for acceptance! Now is the day of deliverance!  
Never do we put an obstacle in anyone's way, so that no fault 3  
may be found with our ministry. No, we are trying to commend 4  
ourselves under all circumstances, as God's ministers should —  
in many an hour of endurance, in troubles, in hardships, in diffi- 5  
culties, in floggings, in imprisonments, in riots, in toils, in sleep-  
less nights, in fastings; by purity, by knowledge, by patience, by 6  
kindliness, by holiness of spirit, by unfeigned love; by the mes- 7  
sage of truth, and by the power of God; by the weapons of righ-  
teousness in the right hand and in the left; amid honor and disre- 8  
pute, amid slander and praise; regarded as deceivers, yet proved  
to be true; as unknown, yet well-known; as at death's door, yet, 9  
see, we are living; as chastised, yet not killed; as saddened, yet 10  
always rejoicing; as poor, yet enriching many; as having nothing,

and yet possessing all things!

### *The Apostle and his Converts*

11 WE HAVE BEEN SPEAKING FREELY TO YOU, dear friends in Corinth; we  
12 have opened our heart; there is room there for you, yet there is  
13 not room, in your love, for us. Can you not in return — I appeal  
to you as I should to children — open your hearts to us?

14 Do not enter into inconsistent relations with those who reject  
the faith. For what partnership can there be between righteous-  
ness and lawlessness? Or what has light to do with darkness?  
15 What harmony can there be between Christ and Belial? Or what  
can those who accept the faith have in common with those who  
16 reject it? What agreement can you be between a temple of God  
and idols? And we are a temple of the living God. That is what  
God meant when he said —

‘I will live among them, and walk among them;

And I will be their God, and they will be my people.

17 Therefore “Come out from among the nations, and separate  
yourselves from them,” says the Lord,

“And touch nothing impure;

And I will welcome you;

18 and I will be a father to you, and you will be my sons and  
daughters,”

says the Lord, the Ruler of all.’

7 With these promises, dear friends, let us purify ourselves from  
everything that pollutes either body or spirit, and, in deepest  
respect for God, aim at perfect holiness.

2 Make room for us in your hearts. In no instance have we ever  
3 wronged, or harmed, or taken advantage of, anyone. I am not  
saying this to condemn you. Indeed, I have already said that  
4 you are in our heart, to live and die together. I have the utmost  
confidence in you; I am always boasting about you. I am full  
of encouragement and, in spite of all our troubles, my heart is  
overflowing with happiness.

5 Ever since we reached Macedonia, we have had no rest in

body or mind; on every side there have been troubles — conflicts  
without, anxieties within. But God, who encourages the down- 6  
cast, has encouraged us by the arrival of Titus. And it is not only 7  
by his arrival that we are encouraged, but also by the encourage-  
ment which he received from you; for he tells us of your strong  
affection, your penitence, and your zeal on my behalf — so that  
I am happier still. For, though I caused you sorrow by my letter, 8  
I do not regret it. Even if I were inclined to regret it — for I see  
that my letter did cause you sorrow though only for a time — I  
am glad now; not because of the sorrow it caused you, but be- 9  
cause your sorrow brought you to repentance. For it was God's  
will that you should feel sorrow, in order that you should not  
suffer loss in any way at our hands. For, when sorrow is in accord- 10  
dance with God's will, it results in a repentance leading to sal-  
vation, and which will never be regretted. The sure result of the  
sorrow that the world knows is death. For see what results that 11  
other sorrow — sorrow in accordance with God's will — has  
had in your case. What earnestness it produced! What explan-  
ations! What strong feeling! What alarm! What longing! What ea-  
gerness! What readiness to punish! You have proved yourselves 12  
altogether free from guilt in that matter. So, then, even though I  
did write to you, it was not for the sake of the wrong-doer, or of  
the man who was wronged, but to make you conscious, in the  
sight of God, of your own earnest care for us. And it is this that  
has encouraged us.

In addition to the encouragement that this gave us, we were 13  
made far happier still by the happiness of Titus for his heart  
has been cheered by you all. Although I have been boasting a 14  
little to him about you, you did not put me to shame; but, just  
as every thing we had said to you was true, so our boasting to  
Titus about you has also proved to be the truth. And his affection 15  
for you is all the greater, as he remembers the deference that you  
all showed him, and recalls how you received him with anxious  
care. I am glad that I can feel perfect confidence in you. 16

*The Palestine Famine Fund*

8 WE WANT TO REMIND YOU, friends, of the love that God has shown  
2 to the churches in Macedonia — How, tired though they were  
3 by many a trouble, their overflowing happiness, and even their  
4 deep poverty, resulted in a flood of generosity. I can bear wit-  
5 ness that to the full extent of their power, and even beyond their  
6 power, spontaneously, and with many an appeal to us for per-  
7 mission, they showed their love, and contributed their share to-  
8 wards the fund for their fellow Christians. And that, not only in  
9 the way we had expected; but first they gave themselves to the  
10 Lord, and to us also, in accordance with God's will. And this led  
11 us beg Titus, since he had started the work for you, he should  
12 also see to the completion of this expression of your love. And,  
13 remembering how you excel in everything — in faith, in teach-  
14 ing, in knowledge, in unflinching earnestness, and in the affection  
15 that we have awakened in you — I ask you to excel also in this  
expression of your love.

8 I am not laying a command on you, but I am making use of  
9 the earnestness shown by others to test the genuineness of your  
10 affection. For you do not forget the loving kindness of our Lord  
11 Jesus Christ — how that for your sakes, although he was rich,  
12 he became poor, so that you also might become rich through his  
13 poverty. I am only making suggestions on this matter; for this is  
14 the best course for you, since you were a year before others, not  
15 only in taking action, but also in showing your readiness to do  
so. And now I want you to complete the work, so that its comple-  
tion may correspond with your willing readiness — in propor-  
tion, of course, to your means. For, where there is willingness, a  
person's gift is valued by its comparison with what they have,  
and not with what they do not have. For our object is not to give  
relief to others and bring distress on you. It is a matter of a fair  
balance. On this occasion what you can spare will supply what  
they need, at another time what they can spare may supply your  
need, and so things will be equal. As scripture says —

'Those who had much had nothing over, and those who had  
little did not lack!'

I thank God for inspiring Titus with the same keen interest in your welfare that I have; for Titus has responded to my appeals and, in his great earnestness, is starting to go to you of his own accord. We are sending with him one of the Lord's followers whose fame in the service of the good news has spread through all the churches; and not only that, but he has been elected by the churches to accompany us on our journey, in connexion with this expression of your love, which we are personally administering to the honor of the Lord, and to show our deep interest. What we are specially guarding against is that any fault should be found with us in regard to our administration of this charitable fund; for we are trying to make arrangements which will be right, not only in the eyes of the Lord, but also in the eyes of people. We are also sending with them another of our friends, whose earnestness we have many a time proved in many ways, and whom we now find made even more earnest by his great confidence in you. If I must say anything about Titus, he is my intimate companion, and he shares my work for you; if it is our friends, they are delegates of the churches, an honor to Christ. Show them, therefore — so that the churches may see it — the proof of your affection, and the ground for our boasting to them about you.

With reference, indeed, to the Fund for your fellow Christians, it is quite superfluous for me to say anything to you. I know, of course, your willingness to help, and I am always boasting of it to the Macedonians. I tell them that you in Greece have been ready for a year past; and it was really your zeal that stimulated most of them. So my reason for sending our friends is to prevent what we said about you from proving, in this particular matter, an empty boast, and to enable you to be as well prepared as I have been saying that you are. Otherwise, if any Macedonians were to come with me, and find you unprepared, we — to say nothing of you — should feel ashamed of our present confidence. Therefore I think it necessary to beg the friends to go to you in advance, and to complete the arrangements for the gift, which you have already promised, so that it may be ready, as a gift, before I come, and not look as if it were being given under pressure.

6 Remember the saying — ‘Scanty sowing, scanty harvest;  
7 plentiful sowing, plentiful harvest.’ Let everyone give as he  
8 has determined before hand, not grudgingly or under compul-  
9 sion; for God loves ‘a cheerful giver.’ God has power to show-  
er all kinds of blessings on you, so that, having, under all cir-  
cumstances and on all occasions, all that you can need, you may  
be able to shower all kinds of benefits on others. (As scripture  
says —

‘He scattered broadcast, he gave to the poor; His righteousness  
continues for ever.’

10 And he who supplies ‘seed to the sower, and bread for eating,’  
will supply you with seed, and cause it to increase, and will mul-  
11 tiply ‘the fruits of your righteousness’). Rich in all things your-  
selves, you will be able to show liberality to all, which, with our  
12 help, will cause thanksgiving to be offered to God. For the ren-  
dering of a public service such as this, not only relieves the needs  
of your fellow Christians, but also results in the offering to God  
13 of many a thanksgiving. Through the evidence afforded by the  
service rendered, you cause people to praise God for your fidelity  
to your profession of faith in the good news of the Christ, as  
well as for the liberality of your contributions for them and for  
14 all others. And they also, in their prayers for you, express their  
longing to see you, because of the surpassing love of God dis-  
15 played toward you. All thanks to God for his inestimable gift!

### *The Apostle’s Claims and Authority*

10 Now, I, Paul, make a personal appeal to you by the meekness  
and gentleness of the Christ — I who, “in your presence, am  
humble in my bearing towards you, but, when absent, am bold  
2 in my language to you” — I implore you not to drive me to  
“show my boldness,” when I do come, by the confident tone  
which I expect to have to adopt towards some of you, who are  
expecting to find us influenced in our conduct by earthly mo-  
3 tives. For, though we live an earthly life, we do not wage an  
4 earthly war. The weapons for our warfare are not earthly, but,



under God, are powerful enough to pull down strongholds. We are engaged in confuting arguments and pulling down every barrier raised against the knowledge of God. We are taking captive every hostile thought, to bring it into submission to the Christ, and are fully prepared to punish every act of rebellion, when once your submission is complete. You look at the outward appearance of things! Let anyone, who is confident that he belongs to Christ, reflect, for himself, again on the fact — that we belong to Christ no less than he does. Even if I boast extravagantly about our authority — which the Lord gave us for building up your faith and not for overthrowing it — still I have no reason to be ashamed. I say this so that it doesn't seem as if I am trying to overawe you by my letters. For people say "His letters are impressive and vigorous, but his personal appearance is insignificant and his speaking contemptible." Let such a person be assured of this — that our words in our letters show us to be, when absent, just what our deeds will show us to be, when present. We have not indeed the audacity to class or compare ourselves with some of those who indulge in self-commendation! But, when such persons measure themselves by themselves, and compare themselves with themselves, they show a want of wisdom. We, however, will not give way to unlimited boasting, but will confine ourselves to the limits of the sphere to which God limited us, when he permitted us to come as far as Corinth. For it is not the case, as it would be if we were not in the habit of coming to you, that we are exceeding our bounds! Why, we were the very first to reach you with the good news of the Christ! Our boasting, therefore, is not unlimited, nor does it extend to the labors of others; but our hope is that, as your faith grows, our influence among you may be very greatly increased — though still confined to our sphere — So that we will be able to tell the good news in the districts beyond you, without trespassing on the sphere assigned to others, or boasting of what has been already done. 'Let anyone who boasts make their boast of the Lord.' For it is not those who commend themselves that stand the test, but those who are commended by the Lord.

11 I could wish that you would tolerate a little folly in me! But indeed  
2 you do tolerate me. I am jealous over you with the jealousy of God. For I engaged you to one husband so that I might  
3 present you to the Christ a pure bride. Yet I fear that it may turn out that, just as the snake by his craftiness deceived Eve, so your  
4 minds may have lost the loyalty and purity due from you to the Christ. For, if some newcomer is proclaiming a Jesus other than  
5 him whom we proclaimed, or if you are receiving a Spirit different from the Spirit which you received, or a good news different  
6 from that which you welcomed, then you are marvelously tolerant! I do not regard myself as in any way inferior to the most  
7 eminent apostles! Though I am no trained orator, yet I am not without knowledge; indeed we made this perfectly clear to you  
8 in every way.

9 Perhaps you say that I did wrong in humbling myself that you might be exalted — I mean because I told you God's good  
10 news without payment. I robbed other churches by taking pay from them, so that I might serve you! And, when I was with you  
11 in need, I did not become a burden to any of you; for our friends, on coming from Macedonia, supplied my needs. I kept myself,  
12 and will keep myself from being an expense to you in any way. As surely as I know anything of the truth of Christ, this boast, as  
13 far as I am concerned, will not be stopped in any part of Greece. Why? Because I do not love you? God knows that I do!

14 What I am doing now I will continue to do in order to cut away the ground from under those who are wishing for some  
15 ground for attacking me, so that as regards the thing of which they boast they may appear in their true characters, just as we  
16 do. Such people are false apostles, treacherous workers, disguising themselves as apostles of Christ! And no wonder; for even  
Satan disguises himself as an angel of light. It is not surprising, therefore, if his servants also disguise themselves as servants  
of righteousness. But their end will be in accordance with their actions.

16 I say again — Let no one think me a fool! Yet, if you do, at least welcome me as you would a fool, so that I, too may indulge in

a little boasting. When I speak like this, I am not speaking as the Master would, but as a fool might, in boasting so confidently. As so many are boasting of earthly things, I, too, will boast. For all your cleverness, you tolerate fools willingly enough! You tolerate a person even when they enslave you, when they plunder you, when they get you into their power, when they put on airs of superiority, when they strike you in the face! I admit, to my shame, that we have been weak. But whatever the subject on which others are not afraid to boast — though it is foolish to say so — I am not afraid either! Are they Hebrews? So am I! Are they Israelites? So am I! Are they descendants of Abraham? So am I! Are they 'Servants of Christ'? Though it is madness to talk like this, I am more so than they! I have had more of toil, more of imprisonment! I have been flogged times without number. I have been often at death's door. Five times I received at the hands of my own people forty lashes, all but one. Three times I was beaten with rods. Once I was stoned. Three times I was shipwrecked. I have spent a whole day and night in the deep. My journeys have been many. I have been through dangers from rivers, dangers from robbers, dangers from my own people, dangers from the Gentiles, dangers in towns, dangers in the country, dangers on the sea, dangers among people pretending to be followers of the Lord. I have been through toil and hardship. I have passed many a sleepless night; I have endured hunger and thirst; I have often been without food; I have known cold and nakedness. And, not to speak of other things, there is my daily burden of anxiety about all the churches. Who is weak without my being weak? Who is led astray without my burning with indignation? If I must boast, I will boast of things which show my weakness! The God and Father of the Lord Jesus — he who is for ever blessed — knows that I am speaking the truth. When I was in Damascus, the Governor under King Aretas had the gates of that city guarded, so as to arrest me, but I was let down in a basket through a window in the wall, and so escaped his hands.

I must boast! It is unprofitable; but I will pass to visions and revelations given by the Lord. I know a man in union with Christ, who, fourteen years ago — whether in the body or out

3 of the body I do not know; God knows — was caught up (this  
4 man of whom I am speaking) to the third heaven. And I know  
5 that this man — whether in the body or separated from the body  
6 I do not know; God knows — Was caught up into Paradise, and  
7 heard unspeakable things of which no human being may tell.  
8 About such a man I will boast, but about myself I will not boast  
9 except as regards my weaknesses. Yet if I choose to boast, I will  
10 not be a fool; for I will be speaking no more than the truth. But I  
11 refrain, in case anyone should credit me with more than he can  
12 see in me or hear from me, and because of the marvelous char-  
13 acter of the revelations. It was for this reason, and to prevent my  
14 thinking too highly of myself, that a thorn was sent to pierce  
my flesh — an instrument of Satan to discipline me — so that I  
should not think too highly of myself. About this I three times  
entreated the Lord, praying that it might leave me. But his reply  
has been — ‘My help is enough for you; for my strength attains  
its perfection in the midst of weakness.’

10 Most gladly, then, will I boast all the more of my weaknesses,  
11 so that the strength of the Christ may overshadow me. That is  
12 why I delight in weakness, ill treatment, hardship, persecution,  
13 and difficulties, when borne for Christ. For, when I am weak,  
14 then it is that I am strong!

### Conclusion

11 I HAVE BEEN “PLAYING THE FOOL!” IT IS YOU WHO DROVE ME TO IT. For it  
12 is you who ought to have been commending me! Although I am  
13 nobody, in no respect did I prove inferior to the most eminent  
14 apostles. The marks of the true apostle were exhibited among  
you in constant endurance, as well as by signs, by marvels, and  
by miracles. In what respect, I ask, were you treated worse than  
the other churches, unless it was that, for my part, I refused to  
become a burden to you? Forgive me the wrong I did to you!

14 Remember, this is the third time that I have made every  
preparation to come to see you, and I will refuse to be a burden  
to you; I want, not your money, but you. It is not the duty of chil-  
dren to put by for their parents, but of parents to put by for their

children. For my part, I will most gladly spend, and be spent, 15  
for your welfare. Can it be that the more intensely I love you the 16  
less I am to be loved? You will admit that I was not a burden to 17  
you but you say that I was “crafty” and caught you “by a trick”! 18  
Do you assert that I took advantage of you through any of those 19  
whom I have sent to you? I urged Titus to go, and I sent another 20  
follower with him. Did Titus take any advantage of you? Did not 21  
we live in the same Spirit, and tread in the same footsteps?

Have you all this time been fancying that it is to you that 19  
we are making our defense? No, it is in the sight of God, and 20  
in union with Christ, that we are speaking. And all this, dear 21  
friends, is to build up your characters; for I am afraid that per-  
haps, when I come, I may find that you are not what I want you  
to be, and, on the other hand, that you may find that I am what  
you do not want me to be. I am afraid that I may find quarrel-  
ing, jealousy, ill feeling, rivalry, slandering, backbiting, self-as-  
sertion, and disorder. I am afraid that, on my next visit, my God  
may humble me in regard to you, and that I may have to mourn  
over many who have long been sinning, and have not repented  
of the impurity, immorality, and sensuality, in which they have  
indulged.

For the third time I am coming to see you. ‘By the word of 13  
two or three witnesses each statement will be established.’ I have 2  
said it, and I say it again before I come, just as if I were with you  
on my second visit, though for the moment absent, I say to those  
who have been long sinning, as well as to all others — that if I  
come again, I will spare no one. And that will be the proof, which 3  
you are looking for, that the Christ speaks through me. There is  
no weakness in his dealings with you. No, he shows his power  
among you. For though his crucifixion was due to weakness, 4  
his life is due to the power of God. And we, also, are weak in his  
weakness, but with him we will live for you through the power  
of God. Put yourselves to the proof, to see whether you are hold- 5  
ing to the faith. Test yourselves. Surely you recognize this fact  
about yourselves — that Jesus Christ is in you! Unless indeed 6  
you cannot stand the test! But I hope that you will recognize that 7  
we can stand the test. We pray God that you may do nothing  
wrong, not that we may be seen to stand the test, but that you

8 may do what is right, even though we may seem not to stand  
9 the test. We have no power at all against the truth, but we have  
10 power in the service of the truth. We are glad when we are weak,  
if you are strong. And what we pray for is that you may become  
perfect. This is my reason for writing as I am now doing, while  
I am away from you, so that, when I am with you, I may not act  
harshly in the exercise of the authority which the Lord gave me  
— and gave me for building up and not for pulling down.

11 And now, friends, goodbye. Aim at perfection; take courage;  
12 agree together; live in peace. And then God, the source of all love  
and peace, will be with you. Greet one another with a sacred  
13 kiss. All Christ's people here send you their greetings.

14 May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God,  
and the communion with the Holy Spirit, be with you all.

# Galatians

*Paul's Letter to the Galatians*

## *Introduction*

**T**O THE CHURCHES IN GALATIA, from Paul, an apostle whose 1  
commission is not from any human authority and is given, 2  
not by human beings, but by Jesus Christ and God the Father 3  
who raised him from the dead; and from all the followers of 4  
the Lord here. May God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ, 5  
bless you and give you peace. For Christ, to rescue us from this  
present wicked age, gave himself for our sins, in accordance  
with the will of God and Father, to whom be ascribed all glory  
for ever and ever. Amen.

I am astonished at your so soon deserting him, who called you 6  
through the love of Christ, for a different 'good news,' Which is 7  
really no good news at all. But then, I know that there are people  
who are harassing you, and who want to pervert the good news  
of the Christ. Yet even if we — or if an angel from heaven were 8  
to tell you any other 'good news' than that which we told you, 9  
may he be accursed! We have said it before, and I repeat it now  
— If anyone tells you a 'good news' other than that which you  
received, may he be accursed!

Is this, I ask, trying to conciliate people, or God? Am I seeking to 10  
please people? If I were still trying to please people, I should not  
be a servant of Christ.

### *The Independence of the Apostle's Gospel*

11 I REMIND YOU, friends, that the good news which I told is no mere  
12 human invention. I, at least, did not receive it from any human  
being, nor was I taught it, but it came to me through a revelation  
made by Jesus Christ.

13 You heard, no doubt, of my conduct when I was devoted to  
14 Judaism — how I persecuted the church of God to an extent be-  
yond belief, and made havoc of it, and how, in my devotion to  
15 Judaism, I surpassed many of my contemporaries among my  
own people in my intense earnestness in upholding the tradi-  
16 tions of my ancestors. But when God, who had set me apart even  
before my birth, and who called me by his love, saw fit to reveal  
his Son in me, so that I might tell the good news of him among  
17 the Gentiles, then at once, instead of consulting any human be-  
ing, or even going up to Jerusalem to see those who were apos-  
tles before me, I went to Arabia, and came back again to Damas-  
18 cus. Three years afterwards I went up to Jerusalem to make the  
acquaintance of Peter, and I stayed a fortnight with him. I did  
19 not, however, see any other apostle, except James, the Master's  
brother. (As to what I am now writing to you, I call God to wit-  
20 ness that I am speaking the truth). Afterwards I went to the dis-  
21 tricts of Syria and Cilicia. But I was still unknown even by sight  
22 to the Christian churches in Judea; all that they had heard was —  
23 'The man who once persecuted us is now telling the good news  
24 of the faith of which he once made havoc.' And they praised  
God for my sake.

2 Fourteen years afterwards I went up to Jerusalem again with  
2 Barnabas, and I took Titus also with me. It was in obedience to  
a revelation that I went; and I laid before the apostles the good  
news that I am proclaiming among the Gentiles. I did this pri-  
vately before those who are thought highly of because I was  
3 afraid that I might possibly be taking, or might have already  
taken, a course which would prove useless. Yet even my com-  
panion, Titus, though a Greek, was not compelled to be circum-  
4 cised. But, because of those who pretended to be followers who  
had stolen in, the intruders who had crept in to spy on the liber-  
ty which we have through union with Christ Jesus, in order to



bring us back to slavery — Why, we did not for a moment yield 5  
submission to them, so that the truth of the good news might be  
yours always! Of those who are thought somewhat highly of — 6  
what they once were makes no difference to me; God does not  
recognize human distinctions — those, I say, who are thought 7  
highly of added nothing to my message. On the contrary, they  
saw that I had been entrusted with the good news for the Gen- 8  
tiles, just as Peter had been for the Jews. For he who gave Peter  
power for his mission to the Jews gave me, also, power to go to 9  
the Gentiles. Recognizing the charge entrusted to me, James, Pe-  
ter, and John, who were regarded as pillars of the church, open-  
ly acknowledged Barnabas and me as fellow workers, agreeing 10  
that we should go to the Gentiles, and they to the Jews. Only we  
were to remember the poor — the thing I was myself anxious 11  
to do. But, when Peter came to Antioch, I opposed him to his  
face; for he stood self-condemned. Before certain persons came 12  
from James, he had been in the habit of eating with the Gentile  
converts; but, when they came, he began to withdraw and hold  
aloof, because he was afraid of offending those who still held 13  
to circumcision. The rest of the Jewish converts were guilty of  
the same hypocrisy, so that even Barnabas was led away by it. 14  
But, when I saw that they were not dealing straightforwardly  
with the truth of the good news, I said to Peter, before them all,  
“If you, who were born a Jew, adopt Gentile customs, instead  
of Jewish, why are you trying to compel the Gentile converts to  
adopt Jewish customs?”

### *The Law and the Gospel*

WE, though we are Jews by birth and not outcasts of Gentile 15  
origin, know that no one is pronounced righteous as the result  
of obedience to law, but only through faith in Christ Jesus. So  
we placed our faith in Christ Jesus, in order that we might be 16  
pronounced righteous, as the result of faith in Christ, and not  
of obedience to law; for such obedience ‘will not result in even  
one soul’s being pronounced righteous.’ If, while seeking to 17  
be pronounced righteous through union with Christ, we were

18 ourselves seen to be outcasts, would that make Christ an agent  
19 of sin? Heaven forbid! For, if I rebuild the things that I pulled  
20 down, I prove myself to have done wrong. I, indeed, through  
21 law became dead to law, in order to live for God. I have been crucified with Christ. So it is no longer I that live, but it is Christ who lives in me; and, as for my present earthly life, I am living it by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me. I do not reject the love of God. If righteousness comes through law, then there was no need for Christ to die!

3 Foolish Galatians! Who has been fascinating you — you before  
2 whose eyes Jesus Christ was depicted on the cross? Here is the  
one thing that I want to find out from you — Did you receive the  
Spirit as the result of obedience to law, or of your having listened  
3 with faith? Can you be so foolish? After beginning with what  
4 is spiritual, do you now end with what is external? Did you go  
through so much to no purpose? — if indeed it really was to no  
5 purpose! He who supplies you abundantly with his Spirit and  
endows you with such powers — does he do this as the result of  
obedience to law? Or as the result of your having listened with  
6 faith? It is just as it was with Abraham —

‘He had faith in God, and his faith was regarded by God as righteousness.’

7 You see, then, that those whose lives are based on faith are the  
8 sons of Abraham. And scripture, foreseeing that God would pronounce the Gentiles righteous as the result of faith, foretold the good news to Abraham in the words —

‘Through you all the Gentiles will be blessed.’

9 And, therefore, those whose lives are based on faith share the  
10 blessings bestowed on the faith of Abraham. All who rely on obedience to law are under a curse, for scripture says —

‘Cursed is everyone who does not abide by all that is written in the book of the law, and do it.’

Again, it is evident that no one is pronounced righteous before God through law, for we read — 11

‘Through faith the righteous will find life.’

But the law is not based on faith; no, its words are — 12

‘Those who practice these precepts will find life through them.’

Christ ransomed us from the curse pronounced in the law, by taking the curse on himself for us, for scripture says — 13

‘Cursed is anyone who is hanged on a tree.’

And this he did that the blessing given to Abraham might be extended to the Gentiles through their union with Jesus Christ; that so, through our faith, we also might receive the promised gift of the Spirit. 14

To take an illustration, friends, from daily life — No one sets aside even an agreement between two people, when once it has been confirmed, nor do they add conditions to it. Now it was to Abraham that the promises were made, ‘and to his offspring.’ It was not said ‘to his offsprings,’ as if many persons were meant, but the words were ‘to your offspring,’ showing that one person was meant — and that was Christ. My point is this — An agreement already confirmed by God cannot be canceled by the law, which came four hundred and thirty years later, so as to cause the promise to be set aside. If our heritage is the result of law, then it has ceased to be the result of a promise. Yet God conferred it on Abraham by a promise. 15  
16  
17  
18

What, then, you ask, was the use of the law? It was a later addition, to make people conscious of their wrong-doings, and intended to last only until the coming of that ‘offspring’ to whom the promise had been made; and it was delivered through angels by a mediator. Now mediation implies more than one person, but God is one only. Does that set the law in opposition to God’s promises? Heaven forbid! For, if a law had been given capable of bestowing life, then righteousness would have actually owed its 19  
20  
21

22 existence to law. But the words of scripture represent the whole  
world as being in bondage to sin, so that the promised blessing,  
dependent, as it is, on faith in Jesus Christ, may be given to those  
who have faith in him.

23 Before the coming of faith, we were kept under the guard of  
the law, in bondage, awaiting the faith that was destined to be  
24 revealed. Thus the law has proved a guide to lead us to Christ,  
in order that we may be pronounced righteous as the result of  
25 faith. But now that faith has come we no longer need a guide.

26 For you are all sons of God, through your faith in Christ  
27 Jesus. For all of you who were baptized into union with Christ  
clothed yourselves with Christ. All distinctions between Jew  
28 and Greek, slave and free, male and female, have vanished; for  
29 in union with Christ Jesus you are all one. And, since you belong  
to Christ, it follows that you are Abraham's offspring and, under  
the promise, sharers in the inheritance.

4 My point is this — As long as the heir is under age, there is  
no difference between him and a slave, though he is master of  
2 the whole estate. He is subject to the control of guardians and  
stewards, during the period for which his father has power to  
3 appoint them. And so is it with us; when we were under age, as  
it were, we were slaves to the puerile teaching of this world; but,  
4 when the full time came, God sent his Son — born a woman's  
5 child, born subject to law — To ransom those who were subject  
to law, so that we might take our position as sons.

6 And it is because you are sons that God sent into our hearts  
the Spirit of his Son, with the cry — 'Abba, our Father.' You,  
7 therefore, are no longer a slave, but a son; and, if a son, then an  
heir also, by God's appointment.

8 Yet formerly, in your ignorance of God, you became slaves to  
9 'gods' which were no gods. But now that you have found God —  
or, rather, have been found by him — how is it that you are turn-  
ing back to that poor and feeble puerile teaching, to which yet  
10 once again you are wanting to become slaves? You are scrupu-  
11 lous in keeping days and months and seasons and years! You

make me fear that the labor which I have spent on you may have been wasted.

I entreat you, friends, to become like me, as I became like you. 12  
You have never done me any wrong. You remember that it was 13  
owing to bodily infirmity that on the first occasion I told you the  
good news. And as for what must have tried you in my condi- 14  
tion, it did not inspire you with scorn or disgust, but you wel-  
comed me as if I had been an angel of God — or Christ Jesus  
himself! What has become then, of your blessings? For I can bear 15  
witness that, had it been possible, you would have torn out your  
eyes and given them to me! Am I to think, then, that I have be- 16  
come your enemy by telling you the truth? Certain people are  
seeking your favor, but with no honorable object. No, indeed, 17  
they want to isolate you, so that you will have to seek their favor.  
It is always honorable to have your favor sought in an honor- 18  
able cause, and not only when I am with you, my dear children  
— You for whom I am again enduring a mother’s pains, until a 19  
likeness to Christ will have been formed in you. But I could wish  
to be with you now and speak in a different tone, for I am per- 20  
plexed about you.

Tell me, you who want to be still subject to law — Why do not 21  
you listen to the law? scripture says that Abraham had two sons, 22  
one the child of the slave-woman and the other the child of the  
free woman. But the child of the slave-woman was born in the 23  
course of nature, while the child of the free woman was born in  
fulfillment of a promise. This story may be taken as an allegory. 24  
The women stand for two Covenants. One covenant, given from  
Mount Sinai, produces a race of slaves and is represented by  
Hagar (The word Hagar meaning in Arabia Mount Sinai) and it 25  
ranks with the Jerusalem of today, for she and her children are in  
slavery. But the Jerusalem above is free, and she it is who is our 26  
mother. For scripture says — 27

‘Rejoice, you barren one, who does never bear,  
Break into shouts, you who are never in labor,

For many are the children of her who is desolate —  
aye, more than of her who has a husband.'

28 As for ourselves, friends, we, like Isaac, are children born in  
29 fulfillment of a promise. Yet at that time the child born in the  
course of nature persecuted the child born by the power of the  
30 Spirit; and it is the same now. But what does the passage of scrip-  
ture say?

'Send away the slave-woman and her son; for the slave's son  
will not be coheir with the son of the free woman.'

31 And so, friends, we are not children of a slave, but of her who  
is free.

### *The Gospel in the Daily Life*

5 IT IS FOR FREEDOM THAT CHRIST SET US FREE; stand firm therefore, and  
do not again be held under the yoke of slavery.

2 Understand that I, Paul, myself tell you that if you allow your-  
3 selves to be circumcised, Christ will avail you nothing. I again  
declare to everyone who receives circumcision, that he binds  
4 himself to obey the whole law. You have severed yourselves  
from Christ — you who are seeking to be pronounced righteous  
5 through law; you have fallen away from love. For we, by the  
help of the Spirit, are eagerly waiting for the fulfillment of our  
6 hope — that we may be pronounced righteous as the result of  
faith. If we are in union with Christ Jesus, neither is circumcision  
nor the omission of it anything, but faith, working through love,  
7 is everything. You were once making good progress! Who has  
8 hindered you from obeying the truth? The persuasion brought  
9 to bear on you does not come from him who calls you. A little  
leaven leavens all the dough. I, through my union with the Lord,  
10 am persuaded that you will learn to think with me. But the man  
who is disturbing your minds will have to bear his punishment,  
11 whoever he may be. If I, friends, am still proclaiming circumci-  
sion, why am I still persecuted? It seems that the cross has ceased

to be an obstacle! I could even wish that the people who are un- 12  
settling you would go further still and mutilate themselves.

Remember, friends, to you the call came to give you freedom. 13  
Only do not make your freedom an opportunity for self-indul- 14  
gence, but serve one another in a loving spirit. Indeed, the whole  
law has been summed up in this one precept —

‘You must love your neighbor as you love yourself.’

But, if you are continually wounding and preying on one another, 15  
take care that you are not destroyed by one another.

This is what I have to say — Let your steps be guided by 16  
the Spirit, and then you will never gratify the cravings of your 17  
earthly nature. For these cravings of our earthly nature conflict  
with the Spirit, and the Spirit with our earthly nature — they 18  
are two contrary principles — so that you cannot do what you  
wish. But, if you follow the guidance of the Spirit, you are not 19  
subject to law. The sins of our earthly nature are unmistakable.  
They are sins like these — sexual immorality, impurity, indecen- 20  
cy, idolatry, sorcery, quarrels, strife, jealousy, outbursts of pas- 21  
sion, rivalries, dissensions, divisions, feelings of envy, drunk-  
enness, revelry, and the like. And I warn you, as I warned you  
before, that those who indulge in such things will have no place 22  
in the kingdom of God. But the fruit produced by the Spirit is  
love, joy, peace, forbearance, kindness, generosity, trustfulness, 23  
gentleness, self-control. Against such things there is no law! And  
those who belong to Jesus, the Christ, have already crucified 24  
their earthly nature, with its passions and its cravings.

Since our life is due to the Spirit, let us rule our conduct also 25  
by the Spirit. Do not let us grow vain, and provoke or envy one 26  
another. My friends, even if someone should be caught com-  
mitting a sin, you who are spiritually minded should, in a gen- 6  
tle spirit, help them to recover themselves, taking care that you  
yourselves are not tempted. Bear one another’s burdens, and so 2  
carry out the law of the Christ. If a person imagines themselves  
to be somebody, when they are really nobody, they deceive 3

4 themselves. Let everyone test their own work, and then their  
5 cause for satisfaction will be in themselves and not in a compar-  
6 ison with their neighbor; for everyone must bear their own load.  
7 The person, however, who is being instructed in the message  
8 ought always to share their blessings with their teacher.

9 Do not be deceived. God cannot be mocked. What a person  
10 sows that they will reap. For the person who sows the field of  
11 their earthly nature will from that earthly nature reap corrup-  
12 tion; while the one who sows the field of the spirit will from that  
13 spirit reap eternal life. Let us never tire of doing right, for at the  
14 proper season we will reap our harvest, if we do not grow weary.  
15 Therefore, I say, as the opportunity occurs, let us treat everyone  
16 with kindness, and especially members of the Household of  
17 the faith.

### *Conclusion in the Apostle's own handwriting*

11 See in what large letters I am writing with my own hand. Those  
12 who wish to appear to advantage in regard to outward obser-  
13 vances are the people who are trying to compel you to be cir-  
14 cumcised; and they do it only to avoid being persecuted for the  
15 cross of Jesus, the Christ. Even these men who are circumcised  
16 do not themselves keep the law; yet they want you to be circum-  
17 cised, so that they may boast of your observance of the rite. But,  
18 for my part, may I never boast of anything except the cross of  
19 Jesus Christ, our Master, through whom the world has been cru-  
20 cified to me, and I to the world. For neither is circumcision nor  
21 the omission of it anything; but a new nature is everything. May  
22 all who rule their conduct by this principle find peace and mercy  
23 — they who are the Israel of God.

17 For the future let no one trouble me; for I bear the marks of Jesus  
18 branded on my body.

18 May the blessing of Jesus Christ, our Lord, rest on your souls,  
19 friends. Amen.



# Ephesians

*Paul's Letter to the Ephesians*

## *Introduction*

**T**O CHRIST'S PEOPLE AT EPHESUS WHO ARE FAITHFUL TO HIM, from 1  
Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus, by the will of God. May 2  
God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and give  
you peace.

Blessed is the God and Father of Jesus Christ, our Lord, who has 3  
blessed us on high with every spiritual blessing, in Christ. For he 4  
chose us in our union with Christ before the creation of the uni-  
verse, so that we might be holy and blameless in his sight, living 5  
in the spirit of love. From the first he destined us, in his good- 6  
will towards us, to be adopted as sons through Jesus Christ, and  
so to enhance that glorious manifestation of his loving kindness 7  
which he gave us in the one he loves; for in him, and through  
the shedding of his blood, we have found redemption in the par- 8  
don of our offenses. All this accords with the loving kindness 9  
which God lavished on us, accompanied by countless gifts of  
wisdom and discernment, when he made known to us his hid- 10  
den purpose. And it also accords with the goodwill which God  
purposed to exhibit in Christ, in view of that divine order which 11  
was to mark the completion of the ages, when he should make  
everything, both in heaven and on earth, centre in him. In him, I 12  
say, for by our union with him we became God's heritage, hav-  
ing from the first been destined for this in the intention of him  
who, in all that happens, is carrying out his own fixed purpose;  
that we should enhance his glory — we who have been the first

13 to rest our hopes on the Christ. And you, too, by your union with  
him, after you had heard the message of the truth, the good news  
of your salvation — you believed in him and were sealed as his  
14 by receiving the holy Spirit, which he had promised. And the  
Spirit is a pledge of our future heritage, foreshadowing the full  
redemption of God's own people — to enhance his glory.

*The power of God displayed in Christ, the Head of  
the Church*

15 AND THEREFORE I, ever since I heard of the faith in the Lord Jesus  
which prevails among you, and of your confidence in all Christ's  
16 people, have never omitted to thank God on your behalf, when-  
17 ever I make mention of you in my prayers. My prayer is that the  
God of Jesus Christ our Lord, the all-glorious Father, may inspire  
you with wisdom and true insight through a fuller knowledge  
18 of himself; that your minds may be so enlightened that you may  
realize the hope given by God's call, the wealth of the glory of  
19 his heritage among Christ's people, and the transcendent great-  
ness of the power which he is able to exercise in dealing with us  
20 who believe in him. The same mighty power was exerted on the  
Christ, when he raised the Christ from the dead and 'caused him  
to sit at his right hand' on high, exalting him above all angels  
21 and archangels of every rank, and above every name that can be  
named, whether in the present age, or in the age to come. And  
22 God placed 'all things under Christ's feet,' and gave him to the  
church as its supreme head; for the church is Christ's body, and  
23 is filled by him who fills all things everywhere with his pres-  
2 ence. You yourselves were once dead because of your offenses  
and sins. For at one time you lived in sin, following the ways  
2 of the world, in subjection to the Ruler of the powers of the air  
— the Spirit who is still at work among the disobedient. And  
3 it was among them that we all once lived our lives, indulging  
the cravings of our earthly nature, and carrying out the desires  
prompted by that earthly nature and by our own thoughts. Our  
nature exposed us to the divine wrath, like the rest of humanity.  
4 Yet God, in his abundant compassion, and because of the great

love with which he loved us, even though we were 'dead' because of our offenses, gave life to us in giving life to the Christ. (By God's loving kindness you have been saved.) And, through our union with Christ Jesus, God raised us with him, and caused us to sit with him on high, in order that, by his goodness to us in Christ Jesus, he might display in the ages to come the boundless wealth of his loving kindness. For it is by God's loving kindness that you have been saved, through your faith. It is not due to yourselves; the gift is God's. It is not due to obedience to law, so that no one can boast. For we are God's handiwork, created, by our union with Christ Jesus, for the good actions in doing which God had pre-arranged that we should spend our lives.

Remember, therefore, that you were once Gentiles yourselves, as your bodies showed; you were called 'The Uncircumcised' by those who were called 'The Circumcised' — circumcised only by human hands! Remember that you were at that time far from Christ; you were shut out from the citizenship of Israel; you were strangers to the Covenants founded on God's Promise; you were in the world without hope and without God. But now, through your union with Christ Jesus, you who once were 'far off' have, by the shedding of the blood of the Christ, been brought 'near.' He it is who is our peace. He made the two divisions of humanity one, broke down the barrier that separated them, and in his human nature put an end to the cause of enmity between them — the law with its injunctions and ordinances — in order to create, through union with himself, from Jew and Gentile, one new humanity and so make peace. And when, on the cross, he had destroyed their mutual enmity, he sought by means of his cross to reconcile them both to God, united in one body. He came with the good news of peace for you who were 'far off,' and of peace for those who were 'near'; for it is through him that we, the Jews and the Gentiles, united in the one Spirit, are now able to approach the Father. It follows, then, that you are no longer strangers and aliens, but are fellow citizens with Christ's people and members of God's Household. You have been built up on the foundation laid by the apostles and prophets, Christ Jesus himself being 'the corner-stone.'

21 United in him, every part of the building, closely joined together,  
will grow into a Temple, consecrated by its union with the Lord.  
22 And, through union in him, you also are being built up together,  
to be a place where God lives through the Spirit.

### *The Apostle's Divine Commission to the Gentiles*

3 FOR THIS REASON I, Paul, the prisoner of Jesus, the Christ, for the  
2 sake of you Gentiles — For you have heard, I suppose, of the re-  
3 sponsible charge with which God entrusted me for your bene-  
4 fit, and also that it was by direct revelation that the hidden pur-  
5 pose of God was made known to me, as I have already briefly  
6 told you. And, by reading what I have written, you will be able  
7 to judge how far I understand this hidden purpose of God in  
8 Christ. In former generations it was not made known to human-  
9 ity, as fully as it has now been revealed by the Spirit to the apos-  
10 tles and prophets among Christ's people — That, by union with  
11 Christ Jesus and through the good news, the Gentiles are coheirs  
12 with us and members of one body, and that they share with us in  
13 God's Promise. Of this good news I became a minister, in virtue  
14 of the charge with which God entrusted me in the exercise of his  
15 power — Yes, to me, who am less than the least of all Christ's  
16 people, was this charge entrusted! — to tell the Gentiles the good  
news of the boundless wealth to be found in the Christ, and to  
make clear what is God's way of working out that hidden pur-  
pose which from the first has been concealed in the mind of the  
Creator of all things; so that now to the archangels and to all the  
powers on high should be made known, through the church,  
the all-embracing wisdom of God, in accordance with that pur-  
pose which runs through all the ages and which he has now ac-  
complished in Jesus, the Christ, our Master. And in union with  
him, and through our trust in him, we find courage to approach  
God with confidence. Therefore I beg you not to be disheartened  
at the sufferings that I am undergoing for your sakes; for they  
redound to your honor. For this reason, then, I kneel before the  
Father — From whom all 'fatherhood' in heaven and on earth  
derives its name — And pray that, in proportion to the wealth

of his glory, he will strengthen you with his power by breathing his Spirit into your inmost soul, so that the Christ, through your faith, may make his home within your hearts in love; And I pray that you, now firmly rooted and established, may, with all Christ's people, have the power to comprehend in all its width and length and height and depth, and to understand — though it surpasses all understanding — the love of the Christ; and so be filled to the full with God himself.

To him who, through his power which is at work within us, is able to do far more than anything that we can ask or conceive — To him be all glory through the church and through Christ Jesus, for all generations, age after age. Amen.

### *The Gospel and Daily Life*

I BEG YOU, then — I who am a prisoner in the Master's cause — to live lives worthy of the call that you have received; always humble and gentle, patient, bearing lovingly with one another, and striving to maintain in the bond of peace the unity given by the Spirit. There is but one body and one Spirit, just as there was but one hope set before you when you received your call. There is but one Lord, one faith, one baptism. There is but one God and Father of all — the God who is over all, pervades all, and is in all. Everyone of us, however, has been entrusted with some charge, each in accordance with the extent of the gift of the Christ. That is why it is said —

'When he went up on high, he led his captives into captivity. And gave gifts to humanity.'

Now surely this 'going up' must imply that he had already gone down into the world beneath. He who went down is the same as he who went up — up beyond the highest heaven, so that he might fill all things with his presence. And he it is who gave to the church apostles, prophets, Missionaries, Pastors, and teachers, to fit his people for the work of the ministry, for the build-

13 ing up of the body of the Christ. And this will continue, until  
we all attain to that unity which is given by faith and by a fuller  
14 knowledge of the Son of God; until we reach maturity — the full  
standard of the perfection of the Christ. Then we will no longer  
be like infants, tossed backward and forward, blown about by  
every breath of human teaching and by people's trickery and  
15 craftiness; but holding the truth in a spirit of love, we will grow  
into complete union with him who is our head — Christ himself.  
16 For from him the whole body, closely joined and knit together  
by the contact of every part with the source of its life, derives its  
power to grow, in proportion to the vigour of each individual  
part; and so is being built up in a spirit of love.

17 This, then, as one in union with the Lord, I implore: Do not con-  
tinue to live such purposeless lives as the Gentiles live, with  
18 their powers of discernment darkened, cut off from the life of  
God, owing to the ignorance that prevails among them and to  
19 the hardness of their hearts. Lost to all sense of shame, they have  
abandoned themselves to licentiousness, in order to practice ev-  
20 ery kind of impurity without restraint. But far different is the les-  
son you learned from the Christ — if, that is, you really listened  
21 to him, and through union with him were taught the truth, as it  
is to be found in Jesus. For you learned with regard to your for-  
22 mer way of living that you must cast off your old nature, which,  
23 yielding to deluding passions, grows corrupt; that the spirit  
of your minds must be constantly renewed; and that you must  
24 clothe yourselves in that new nature which was created to re-  
semble God, with the righteousness and holiness springing from  
the truth.

25 Since, therefore, you have cast off what is false, 'you must  
every one of you speak the truth to your neighbors.' For we are  
26 united to one another like the parts of a body. 'Be angry, yet do  
not sin.' Do not let the sun go down on your anger; and give  
27 no opportunity to the devil. Let the person who steals steal no  
longer, but rather let them toil with their hands at honest work,  
28 so that they may have something to share with anyone in need.  
29 Never let any foul word pass your lips, but only such good

words as the occasion demands, so that they may be a help to those who hear them. And do not grieve God's Holy Spirit; for it was through that Spirit that God sealed you as his, against the day of Redemption. Let all bitterness, passion, anger, brawling, and abusive language be banished from among you, as well as all malice. Be kind to one another, tenderhearted, ready to forgive one another, just as God, in Christ, forgave you. Therefore imitate God, as his dear children, and live a life of love, following the example of the Christ, who loved you and gave himself for you as 'an offering and a sacrifice to God, that should be fragrant and acceptable.'

As for sexual immorality and every kind of impurity, or greed, do not let them even be mentioned among you, as befits Christ's people, nor shameful conduct, nor foolish talk or jesting, for they are wholly out of place among you; but rather thanksgiving. For of this you may be sure — that no one who is unchaste or impure or greedy of gain (for to be greedy of gain is idolatry) has any place awaiting him in the kingdom of the Christ and God.

Do not let anyone deceive you with specious arguments. Those are the sins that bring down the wrath of God on the disobedient. Therefore have nothing to do with such people. For, although you were once in darkness, now, by your union with the Lord, you are in the light. Live as 'children of light' — For the outcome of life in the light may be seen in every form of goodness, righteousness, and sincerity — Always trying to find out what is pleasing to the Lord. Take no part in deeds of darkness, from which no good can come; on the contrary, expose them. It is degrading even to speak of the things continually done by them in secret. All such actions, when exposed, have their true character made manifest by the light. For everything that has its true character made manifest is clear as light. And that is why it is said —

'Sleeper, awake!  
Arise from the dead,  
And the Christ will give you light!'

15 Take great care, then, how you live — not unwisely but wisely,  
16 making the most of every opportunity; for these are evil days.  
17 Therefore do not grow thoughtless, but try to understand what  
18 the Lord's will is. Do not drink wine to excess, for that leads to  
profligacy; but seek to be filled with the Spirit of God, and speak  
19 to one another in psalms and hymns and sacred songs. Sing  
and make music in your hearts to the Lord. Always give thanks  
20 for everything to our God and Father, in the name of our Lord  
21 Jesus Christ; and submit to one another because you honor and  
respect him.

22 Wives should submit to their husbands as submitting to the  
23 Lord. For a man is the head of his wife, as the Christ is the head  
of the church — being indeed himself the Savior of his body. But  
24 as the church submits to the Christ, so also should wives sub-  
25 mit to their husbands in everything. Husbands, love your wives,  
just as the Christ loved the church, and gave himself for her, to  
26 make her holy, after purifying her by the washing with the wa-  
27 ter, according to his promise; so that he might himself bring the  
church, in all her beauty, into his own presence, with no spot or  
wrinkle or blemish of any kind, but that she might be holy and  
28 faultless. That is how husbands ought to love their wives — as if  
they were their own bodies. A man who loves his wife is really  
29 loving himself; for no one ever yet hated his own body. But ev-  
eryone feeds his body and cares for it, just as the Christ for the  
30 church; for we are members of his body.

31 'For this cause a man will leave his father and mother, and be  
united to his wife; and the man and his wife will become one.'

32 In this there is a profound truth — I am speaking of Christ and  
33 his church. However, for you individually, let each love his  
wife as if she were himself; and the wife be careful to respect  
her husband.

6 children, obey your parents, as children of the Lord; for that  
2 is but right. 'Honor your father and mother' — this is the first  
3 Commandment with a promise — 'So that you may prosper  
and have a long life on earth.' And fathers, do not irritate your  
4 children, but bring them up with Christian discipline and in-



struction.

Slaves, obey your earthly masters, with anxious care, giving them ungrudging service, as if obeying the Christ; not only when their eyes are on you, as if you had merely to please people, but as slaves of Christ, who are trying to carry out the will of God. Give your service heartily and cheerfully, as working for the Master and not for people; for you know that everyone will be rewarded by the Master for any honest work that he has done, whether he is a slave or free. And masters, treat your slaves in the same spirit. Give up threatening them; for you know that he who is both their Master and yours is in heaven, and that before him there is no distinction of rank.

For the future, find strength in your union with the Lord, and in the power which comes from his might. Put on the full armor of God, so that you may be able to stand your ground against the stratagems of the devil. For ours is no struggle against enemies of flesh and blood, but against all the various powers of evil that hold sway in the darkness around us, against the spirits of Wickedness on high. Therefore take up the full armor of God, so that when the evil day comes, you may be able to withstand the attack, and, having fought to the end, still to stand your ground. Stand your ground, then, 'with truth for your belt,' and 'with righteousness for your breast-plate,' And with the readiness to serve the good news of peace as shoes for your feet. At every onslaught take up faith for your shield; for with it you will be able to extinguish all the flaming darts of the evil one. And receive 'the helmet of salvation,' and 'the sword of the Spirit' — which is the message of God — always with prayer and supplication. Pray in spirit at all times. Be intent on this, with unwearied perseverance and supplication for all Christ's people — And on my behalf also, so that when I begin to speak, words may be given me, so that I may fearlessly make known the inmost truth of the good news, on behalf of which I am an ambassador — in chains! Pray that, in telling it, I may speak fearlessly as I ought.

*Conclusion*

21 TO ENABLE YOU, as well as others, to know all that concerns me  
and what I am doing, Tychicus, our dear friend and faithful  
22 helper in the Master's cause, will tell you everything. I am send-  
ing him to you on purpose that you may learn all about us, and  
that he may cheer your hearts.

23 May God, the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ give every fol-  
24 lower peace, and love linked with faith. May God's blessing be  
with all who love our Lord Jesus Christ with an undying love.

# Philippians

## *Paul's Letter to the Philippians*

**T**O ALL CHRIST'S PEOPLE AT PHILIPPI, with the presiding officers  
and assistants, from Paul and Timothy, servants of Christ  
Jesus. May God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless  
you, and give you peace. Every recollection that I have of you  
is a cause of thankfulness to God, always, in every prayer that I  
offer for you all — my prayers are full of joy — Because of the  
share that you have had in spreading the good news, from the  
first day that you received it until now. For of this I am  
confident, that he who began a good work in you will  
complete it in readiness for the day of Jesus Christ. And,  
indeed, I am justified in feeling like this about you all; because  
you have a warm place in my heart — you who all, both in my  
imprisonment and in the work of defending and establishing  
the good news, shared my privilege with me. God will bear me  
witness how I yearn over you all with the tenderness of Christ  
Jesus. And what I pray for is this — that your love may grow  
yet stronger and stronger, with increasing knowledge and all  
discernment, until you are able to appreciate all moral  
distinctions. And I pray, too, that you may be kept pure and  
blameless against the day of Christ, bearing a rich harvest of  
that righteousness which comes through Jesus Christ, to the  
glory and praise of God.

Friends, I want you to realize that what has happened to me  
has actually served to forward the good news. It has even be-  
come evident, not only to all the imperial guard, but to everyone  
else, that it is for Christ's sake that I am in chains. And besides  
this, most of our fellow followers have gained confidence in the  
Lord through my chains, and now venture with far greater free-  
dom to speak of God's message fearlessly. It is true that some

16 do proclaim the Christ out of Jealousy and opposition; but there  
17 are others who proclaim him from goodwill. The latter do it  
18 from love for me, knowing that I have been appointed to plead  
19 the cause of the good news. The former spread the news of the  
20 Christ in a factious spirit, and not sincerely, thinking to add to  
21 the pain of my chains. But what of that? Only that in some way  
22 or other, either with assumed or with real earnestness, Christ is  
23 being made known; and at that I rejoice. Yes, and I will rejoice,  
24 for I know that, through your prayers and through a rich sup-  
25 ply of the Spirit of Jesus Christ, 'all this will make for my salva-  
26 tion.' And this will fulfill my earnest expectation and hope that  
27 I will have no cause for shame, but that, with unfailing courage,  
28 now as hitherto, Christ will be honored in my body, whether  
29 by my life or by my death, for to me life is Christ, and death is  
30 gain. But what if the life here in the body — if this brings me fruit  
31 from my labors? Then which to choose I cannot tell! I am sorely  
32 perplexed either way! My own desire is to depart and be with  
33 Christ, for this would be far better. But, for your sakes, it may  
34 be more needful that I should still remain here in the body. Yes,  
35 I am confident that this is so, and therefore I am sure that I will  
36 stay, and stay near you all, to promote your progress and joy in  
37 the faith; so that, when you once more have me among you, you,  
38 in your union with Christ Jesus, may find in me fresh cause for  
39 exultation. Under all circumstances let your lives be worthy of  
40 the good news of the Christ: so that, whether I come and see you,  
41 or whether I hear of your affairs at a distance, I may know that  
42 you are standing firm, animated by one spirit, and joining with  
43 one heart in a common struggle for the faith taught by the good  
44 news, without ever shrinking from your opponents. To them this  
45 will be a sign of their destruction and of your salvation — a sign  
46 from God. For, on behalf of Christ, you have had the privilege  
47 granted you, not only of trusting in him, but also of suffering on  
48 his behalf. You will be engaged in the same hard struggle as that  
49 which you once saw me waging, and which you hear that I am  
50 waging still.

2 If, then, any encouragement comes through union with  
Christ, if there is any persuasive power in love, if there is any

communion with the Spirit, if there is any tenderness or pity, I  
 entreat you to make my happiness complete — Live together 2  
 animated by the same spirit and in mutual love, one in heart,  
 animated by one Spirit. Nothing should be done in a factious 3  
 spirit or from vanity, but each of you should with all humility  
 regard others as better than himself, and one and all should con- 4  
 sider, not only their own interests, but also the interests of oth-  
 ers. Let the spirit of Christ Jesus be yours also. Though the di- 5  
 vine nature was his from the beginning, yet he did not look on  
 equality with God as above all things to be clung to, but impover- 6  
 ished himself by taking the nature of a servant and becoming 7  
 like one of us; he appeared among us as a man, and still further  
 humbled himself by submitting even to death — to death on a 8  
 cross! And that is why God raised him to the very highest place, 9  
 and gave him the name which stands above all other names, so  
 that in adoration of the name of Jesus every knee should bend, 10  
 in heaven, on earth, and under the earth, and that every tongue 11  
 should acknowledge JESUS CHRIST as LORD — to the glory of  
 God the Father. Therefore, my dear friends, as you have always 12  
 been obedient in the past, so now work out your own salvation  
 with anxious care, not only when I am with you, but all the more 13  
 now that I am absent. Remember it is God who, in his kindness,  
 is at work within you, enabling you both to will and to work. In 14  
 all that you do, avoid murmuring and dissension, so as to prove  
 yourselves blameless and innocent — ‘faultless children of God, 15  
 in the midst of an evil-disposed and perverse generation,’ in  
 which you are seen shining like stars in a dark world, offering  
 to them the message of life; and then I will be able at the day of 16  
 Christ to boast that I did not run my course for nothing, or toil  
 for nothing. And yet, even if, when your faith is offered as a sac- 17  
 rifice to God, my lifeblood must be poured out in addition, still I  
 will rejoice and share the joy of you all; and you must also rejoice 18  
 and share my joy. I hope, however, as one who trusts in the Lord  
 Jesus, to send Timothy to you before long, so that I may myself 19  
 be cheered by receiving news of you. For I have no one but him  
 to send — no one of kindred spirit who would take the same 20  
 genuine interest in your welfare. They are all pursuing their own  
 aims and not those of Christ Jesus. But you know what Timothy 21  
 22

23 has proved himself to be, and how, like a child working for his  
24 father, he worked hard with me in spreading the good news. It is  
25 Timothy, then, whom I hope to send, as soon as ever I can foresee  
26 how it will go with me. And I am confident, as one who trusts in  
27 the Lord Jesus, that before long I myself will follow. Still I think  
28 it necessary to send Epaphroditus to you now, for he is my dear  
29 friend, fellow worker, and fellow soldier, and he was also your  
30 messenger to help me in my need. For he has been longing to see  
you all, and has been distressed because you heard of his illness.  
And I can assure you that his illness very nearly proved fatal.  
But God had pity on him, and not on him only but also on me, so  
that I might not have sorrow on sorrow. I am all the more ready,  
therefore, to send him, so that the sight of him may revive your  
spirits and my own sorrow be lightened. Give him, then, the  
heartiest of Christian welcomes, and hold such people in great  
honor. For it was owing to his devotion to the Master's work that  
he was at the point of death, having risked his own life in the ef-  
fort to supply what was wanting in the help that you sent me.

3 In conclusion, my friends, all joy be yours in your union  
with the Lord. To repeat what I have already written does not  
2 weary me, and is the safe course for you. Beware of those 'dogs'!  
3 Beware of those mischievous workers! Beware of the men who  
mutilate themselves! For it is we who are the circumcised — we  
whose worship is prompted by the Spirit of God, who exult in  
Christ Jesus, and who do not rely on external privileges; though  
4 I, if anyone, have cause to rely even on them. If anyone thinks  
5 he can rely on external privileges, far more can I! I was circum-  
cised when eight days old; I am an Israelite by race, and of the  
6 tribe of Benjamin; I am a Hebrew, and the child of Hebrews. As  
to the law, I was a Pharisee; as to zeal, I was a persecutor of the  
7 church; as to such righteousness as is due to law, I proved myself  
8 blameless. But all the things which I once held to be gains I have  
now, for the Christ's sake, come to count as loss. More than that,  
I count everything as loss, for the sake of the exceeding value of  
the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord. And for his sake I have  
9 lost everything, and count it as refuse, if I may but gain Christ  
and be found in union with him; any righteousness that I have

being, not the righteousness that results from law, but the righteousness which comes through faith in Christ — the righteousness which is derived from God and is founded on faith. Then indeed I will know Christ, and the power of his resurrection, and all that it means to share his sufferings, in the hope that, if I become like him in death, I may possibly attain to the resurrection from the dead. Not that I have already laid hold of it, or that I am already made perfect. But I press on, in the hope of actually laying hold of that for which indeed I was laid hold of by Christ Jesus. For I, friends, do not regard myself as having yet laid hold of it. But this one thing I do — forgetting what lies behind, and straining every nerve for that which lies in front, I press on to the goal, to gain the prize of that heavenward call which God gave me through Christ Jesus. Let all of us, then, whose faith is mature, think this way. Then, if on any matter you think otherwise, God will make that also plain to you. Only we are bound to order our lives by what we have already attained.

My friends, unite in following my example, and fix your eyes on those who are living by the pattern which we have set you. For there are many — of whom I have often told you, and now tell you even with tears — who are living in enmity to the cross of the Christ. The end of such people is ruin; for their appetites are their God, and they glory in their shame; their minds are given up to earthly things. But the State of which we are citizens is in heaven; and it is from heaven that we are eagerly looking for a Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ, who, by the exercise of his power to bring everything into subjection to himself, will make this body that we have in our humiliation like to that body which he has in his glory.

So then, my dear friends, whom I am longing to see — you who are my joy and my crown, stand fast in union with the Lord, dear friends. I entreat Euodia, and I entreat Syntyche, to live in harmony, in union with the Lord; yes, and I ask you, my true comrade, to help them, remembering that they toiled by my side in spreading the good news; and so, too, did Clement and my other fellow workers, whose names are 'in the book of life.' All joy be yours at all times in your union with the Lord. Again I repeat — All joy be yours. Let your forbearing spirit be plain to

6 everyone. The Lord is near. Do not be anxious about anything;  
7 but under all circumstances, by prayer and entreaty joined with  
thanksgiving, make your needs known to God. Then the peace  
of God, which is beyond all human understanding, will stand  
guard over your hearts and thoughts, through your union with  
Christ Jesus.

8 In conclusion, friends, whenever you find things that are  
true or honorable, righteous or pure, lovable or praiseworthy,  
9 or if 'virtue' and 'honor' have any meaning, let them fill your  
thoughts. All that you learned and received and heard and saw  
in me put into practice continually; and then God, the giver of  
10 peace, will be with you. It was a matter of great joy to me, as one  
in union with the Lord, that at length your interest in me had re-  
11 vived. The interest indeed you had, but not the opportunity. Do  
not think that I am saying this under the pressure of want. For I,  
however I am placed, have learned to be independent of circum-  
12 stances. I know how to face humble circumstances, and I know  
how to face prosperity. Into all and every human experience I  
have been initiated — into plenty and hunger, into prosperity  
13 and want. I can do everything in the strength of him who makes  
me strong! Yet you have acted nobly in sharing my troubles. And  
14 you at Philippi know, as well as I, that in the early days of the  
good news — at the time when I had just left Macedonia — no  
15 church, with the one exception of yourselves, had anything to  
do with me as far as giving and receiving are concerned. Indeed,  
16 even while I was still in Thessalonica, you sent more than once  
to relieve my wants. It is not that I am anxious for your gifts,  
17 but I am anxious to see the abundant return that will be placed  
to your account. I have enough of everything, and to spare. My  
18 wants are fully satisfied, now that I have received from Epa-  
phroditus the gifts which you sent me — the sweet fragrance of  
19 a sacrifice acceptable and pleasing to God. And my God, out of  
the greatness of his wealth, will, in glory, fully satisfy your every  
20 need, through your union with Christ Jesus. To him, our God  
and Father, be ascribed all glory for every and ever. Amen. Give  
21 my greeting to everyone of the people of Christ Jesus. The Lord's  
22 followers who are with me send your their greetings. All Christ's



people here, and especially those who belong to the Emperor's household, send theirs.

May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ rest on your souls. 23



# Colossians

*Paul's Letter to the Colossians*

## *Introduction*

**F**ROM PAUL, an apostle of Christ Jesus, by the will of God, 1  
and from Timothy, also a follower of the Lord. To Christ's 2  
people at Colossae — the followers who are faithful to him:  
May God, our Father, bless you and give you peace.

Whenever we pray, we never fail to thank God, the Father of 3  
our Lord, Jesus Christ, about you, now that we have heard of 4  
your faith in Christ Jesus and of the love that you have for all 5  
his people, because of the hope which awaits its fulfillment in 6  
heaven. Of this hope you heard long ago in the true message of 7  
the good news which reached you — Bearing fruit and growing, 8  
as it does, through all the world, just as it did among you, from 9  
the very day that you heard of God's loving kindness, and un-  
derstood what that loving kindness really is. It is just what you 10  
learned from Epaphras, our dear fellow servant, who, as a min-  
ister of the Christ, faithfully represents us, and who told us of the 11  
love with which the Spirit has inspired you. And therefore we,  
from the very day that we heard this, have never ceased praying  
for you, or asking that you may possess that deeper knowledge  
of the will of God, which comes through all true spiritual wis-  
dom and insight. Then you will live lives worthy of the Master,  
and so please God in every way. Your lives will be fruitful in ev-  
ery kind of good action, and your characters will grow through  
a fuller knowledge of God; you will be made strong at all points  
with a strength worthy of the power manifested in his glory —  
strong to endure with patience, and even with gladness, what-

12 ever may happen to you; and you will give thanks to the Father  
who made you fit to share the lot which awaits Christ's people  
in the realms of light.

### *The Person and Work of the Christ*

13 FOR GOD HAS RESCUED US FROM THE TYRANNY OF DARKNESS, and has  
removed us into the kingdom of his Son, who is the embodiment  
14 of his love, and through whom we have found deliverance in the  
forgiveness of our sins.

15 For Christ is the incarnation of the invisible God — first-  
16 born and head of all creation; for in him was created all that is  
in heaven and on earth, the visible and the invisible — angels  
17 and archangels and all the powers of heaven. All has been cre-  
ated through him and for him. He was before all things, and all  
18 things unite in him; and he is the head of the church, which is  
his body. The first-born from the dead, he is to the church the  
19 Source of its life, that he, in all things, may stand first. For it  
pleased the Father that in him the divine nature in all its fulness  
20 should live, and through him to reconcile all things to himself  
(making peace by the shedding of Christ's blood offered on the  
21 cross) — whether on earth or in heaven. And it pleased God that  
you, once estranged from him and hostile towards him in your  
22 thoughts, intent only on wickedness — But now he has recon-  
ciled you to himself by the sacrifice of Christ's earthly body in  
death — it has pleased God that you should stand in his pres-  
23 ence holy, pure, and blameless, if only you remain true to your  
faith, firm and immovable, never abandoning the hope held out  
in the good news to which you listened, which has been pro-  
claimed among all created things under heaven, and of which I,  
Paul, was made a minister.

24 Now at last I can rejoice in my sufferings on your behalf, and  
in my own person I supplement the afflictions endured by the  
25 Christ, for the sake of his body, the church; of which I myself be-  
came a minister in virtue of the office with which God entrusted  
me for your benefit, to declare the message of God in all its

fulness — That truth which has been hidden from former ages and generations. But now it has been revealed to God's people, to whom it was his pleasure to make known the surpassing glory of that hidden truth when proclaimed among the Gentiles — 'Christ among you! Your hope of glory!' This is the Christ whom we proclaim, warning everyone, and instructing everyone, with all the wisdom that we possess, in the hope of bringing everyone into God's presence perfected by union with Christ. It is for that I toil, struggling with all the energy which he inspires and which works powerfully within me.

### *Christ and the Gnostic Teaching*

I WANT YOU TO KNOW IN HOW GREAT A STRUGGLE I AM ENGAGED FOR YOU and for Christ's people at Laodicea, and for all who have not yet seen me; in the hope that they, being bound to one another by love, and keeping in view the full blessedness of a firm conviction, may be encouraged to strive for a perfect knowledge of God's hidden truth, even Christ himself, in whom all treasures of wisdom and knowledge lie hidden. I say this to prevent anyone from deceiving you by plausible arguments. It is true that I am not with you in person, but I am with you in spirit, and am glad to see the good order and the unbroken front resulting from your faith in Christ.

Since, therefore, you have received Jesus, the Christ, as your Lord, live your lives in union with him — rooted in him, building up your characters through union with him, growing stronger through your faith, as you were taught, overflowing with faith and thanksgiving. Take care there is not some one who will carry you away by his 'philosophy' — a hollow sham! — following, as it does, mere human traditions, and dealing with puerile questions of this world, and not with Christ. For in Christ the Godhead in all its fulness dwells incarnate; and, by your union with him, you also are filled with it. He is the head of all archangels and powers of heaven. By your union with him

12 you received a circumcision that was not performed by human  
hands, when you threw off the tyranny of the earthly body, and  
received the circumcision of the Christ. For in baptism you were  
buried with Christ; and in baptism you were also raised to life  
with him, through your faith in the omnipotence of God, who  
13 raised him from the dead. And to you, who once were 'dead,'  
by reason of your sins and your uncircumcised nature — to you  
God gave life in giving life to Christ! He pardoned all our sins!  
14 He canceled the bond which stood against us — the bond that  
consisted of ordinances — and which was directly hostile to us!  
15 He has taken it out of our way by nailing it to the cross! He rid  
himself of all the powers of evil, and held them up to open con-  
tempt, when he celebrated his triumph over them on the cross!

16 Do not, then, allow anyone to take you to task on questions  
of eating or drinking, or in the matter of annual or monthly or  
17 weekly festivals. These things are only the shadow of what is to  
come; the substance is in the Christ. Do not let anyone defraud  
18 you of the reality by affecting delight in so-called 'humility' and  
angel-worship. Such a person busies themselves with their vi-  
sions, and without reason are rendered conceited by their mere-  
19 ly human intellect. They fail to maintain union with the head, to  
whom it is due that the whole body, nourished and knit together  
by the contact and connexion of every part, grows with a di-  
vine growth.

20 Since, with Christ, you became dead to the puerile teaching of  
this world, why do you submit, as if you still belonged to the  
21 world, to such ordinances as 'Do not handle, or taste, or touch'?  
22 For all the things referred to in them cease to exist when used.  
You are following mere human directions and instructions. Such  
23 prohibitions appear reasonable where there is a desire for self-  
imposed service, and so-called 'humility,' and harsh treatment  
of the body, but are of no real value against the indulgence of  
3 our earthly nature. Since, therefore, you were raised to life with  
the Christ, seek for the things that are above; for it is there that  
2 the Christ is 'seated at the right hand of God.' Fix your thoughts  
3 on the things that are above, not on those that are on earth. For

you died, and your life now lies hidden, with the Christ, in God. When the Christ, who is our life, appears, then you also will appear with him in glory. 4

### *The Gospel in the Daily Life*

THEREFORE DESTROY ALL THAT IS EARTHLY IN YOU — immorality, uncleanness, passions, evil desires, and that greed which is idolatry. These are the things because of which the wrath of God comes, and to which you, like others, once devoted your lives, when you lived for them. You, however, must now lay aside all such things — anger, passion, malice, slander, abuse. Never lie to one another. Get rid of your old self and its habits, and clothe yourselves with that new self, which, as it gains in knowledge, is being constantly renewed 'in resemblance to him who made it.' In that new life there is no distinction between Greek and Jew, circumcised and uncircumcised, barbarian, Scythian, slave, free; but Christ is all! — and in all! 5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11

Therefore, as God's people, consecrated and dear to him, clothe yourselves with tenderness of heart, kindness, humility, gentleness, forbearance; bearing with one another, and, when there is any ground for complaint, forgiving one another freely. As the Master freely forgave you, so you must forgive one another. Over all these virtues put on love; for that is the girdle which makes all complete. Let the peace that the Christ gives decide all doubts within your hearts; for you also were called to the enjoyment of peace as members of one body. And show yourselves thankful. Let the message of the Christ be alive in your minds in all its wealth, bringing all wisdom with it. Teach and admonish one another with psalms, and hymns, and sacred songs, full of the loving kindness of God, lifting your hearts in song to him. And, whatever you say or do, do everything in the name of the Lord Jesus; and through him offer thanksgiving to God the father. 12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17

Wives, submit to your husbands, as befits those who belong to the Lord. Husbands, love your wives, and never treat them 18  
19

20 harshly. children, always obey your parents; for that is pleas-  
21 ant to see in those who belong to the Lord. Fathers, never irri-  
22 tate your children, otherwise they might become disheartened.  
23 Slaves, always obey your earthly masters, not only when their  
24 eyes are on you, as if you had but to please people alone, but  
25 giving them ungrudging service, in your respect for the Mas-  
26 ter. Whatever you do, do it with all your heart, as if working for  
27 the Master and not for people, since you know that it is from the  
28 Master that you will receive the inheritance which will be your  
29 reward. You are serving Christ, the Master. Those who do wrong  
30 will reap the wrong they have done; and there will be no par-  
31 tiality. Masters, do what is right and fair by your slaves, for you  
32 know that you also have a Master — in heaven.

2 Devote yourselves to prayer. Give your whole mind to it, and  
3 also offer thanksgiving; and at the same time pray for us, so  
4 that God may give us an opening for our message, so that we  
5 may speak of the truths hidden in the Christ — the truths for  
6 which I am in chains! Then I will make them known, as I ought  
7 to do. Show tact in your behavior to the outside world, making  
8 the most of every opportunity. Let your conversation always be  
9 kindly, but not bland, season it, as it were, with salt; be aware in  
10 each case of the answer you should be giving.

### Conclusion

7 OUR DEAR FRIEND, Tychicus, will tell you all about me. He is a  
8 faithful minister, and a fellow servant in the Master's cause. I  
9 send him to you expressly that you may learn our circum-  
10 stances, and that he may give you encouragement. With him will  
11 be Onesimus, our dear faithful friend, who is one of yourselves.  
12 They will tell you all that is going on here.

10 My fellow prisoner, Aristarchus, sends you his greeting, and  
11 Barnabas's cousin, Mark, sends his. (You have received direc-  
12 tions about him. If he comes to you, make him welcome.) Joshua,



who is called Justus, also sends his greeting. These are the only 11  
converts from Judaism who have worked with me for the king-  
dom of God; I have found them a great comfort. Epaphras, who 12  
is one of yourselves, sends you his greeting. He is a servant of  
Christ Jesus, and is always most earnest in your behalf in his  
prayers, praying that you may stand firm, with a matured faith  
and with a sure conviction of all that is in accordance with God's  
will. I can bear testimony to the deep interest he takes in you, 13  
as well as in the followers at Laodicea and at Hierapolis. Luke,  
our dear doctor, sends you his greeting, and Demas sends his. 14  
Give my greeting to the followers at Laodicea, and to Nymphe, 15  
and to the church that meets at her house. And when this letter  
has been read to you, see that it is also read before the church at 16  
Laodicea, and that you yourselves read the letter which will be  
forwarded from there. Give this message to Archippus — 'Take 17  
care to discharge to the best of your ability the office to which  
you were appointed in the Master's cause.'

I, Paul, add this greeting in my own handwriting. Remember 18  
these chains of mine. God's blessing be with you.



# 1 Thessalonians

*Paul's First Letter to the Thessalonians*

## *Introduction*

**T**O THE THESSALONIAN CHURCH IN UNION WITH GOD THE FATHER 1  
AND THE Lord Jesus Christ, from Paul, Silas, and Timothy.  
May God bless you and give you peace.

## *The Apostle and his Converts*

We always mention you in our prayers and thank God for you 2  
all; recalling continually before our God and Father the efforts 3  
that have resulted from your faith, the toil prompted by your  
love, and the patient endurance sustained by your hope in our  
Lord Jesus Christ. Friends, whom God loves, we know that he 4  
has chosen you, because the good news that we brought came 5  
home to you, not merely as so many words, but with a power  
and a fulness of conviction due to the Holy Spirit. For you know  
the life that we lived among you for your good. And you your- 6  
selves began to follow, not only our example, but the Master's  
also; and, in spite of much suffering, you welcomed the message  
with a joy inspired by the Holy Spirit, and so became a pattern 7  
to all who believed in Christ throughout Macedonia and Greece.  
For it was from you that the Lord's message resounded through- 8  
out Macedonia and Greece; and, more than that, your faith in  
God has become known far and wide; so that there is no need for  
us to say another word. Indeed, in speaking about us, the people 9  
themselves tell of the reception you gave us, and how, turning to  
God from your idols, you became servants of the true and living  
God, and are now awaiting the return from heaven of his Son 10

whom he raised from the dead — Jesus, our deliverer from the coming wrath.

2 Yes, friends, you yourselves know that your reception of us  
2 was not without result. For, although we had experienced suffering and ill treatment, as you know, at Philippi, we had the  
3 courage, by the help of our God, to tell you God's good news in  
4 spite of great opposition. Our appeal to you was not based on a  
5 delusion, nor was it made from unworthy motives, or with any  
6 intention of misleading you. But, having been found worthy by  
7 God to be entrusted with the good news, therefore we tell it; with  
8 a view to please, not people, but God who proves our hearts.  
9 Never at any time, as you know, did we use the language of flattery, or make false professions in order to hide selfish aims. God  
10 will bear witness to that. Nor did we seek to win honor from  
11 people, whether from you or from others, although, as apostles  
12 of Christ, we might have burdened you with our support. But  
13 we lived among you with the simplicity of a child; we were like  
14 a woman nursing her own children. In our strong affection for  
15 you, that seemed to us the best way of sharing with you, not  
16 only God's Good news, but our lives as well — so dear had  
17 you become to us. You will not have forgotten, friends, our labor  
18 and toil. Night and day we used to work at our trades, so as not  
19 be a burden to any of you, while we proclaimed to you God's  
20 good news. You will bear witness, and God also, that our relations  
21 with you who believed in Christ were pure, and upright,  
22 and beyond reproach. Indeed, you know that, like a father with  
23 his own children, we used to encourage and comfort every one  
24 of you, and solemnly plead with you; so that you should make  
25 your daily lives worthy of God who is calling you into the glory  
26 of his kingdom.

13 This, too, is a reason why we, on our part, are continually thanking God — because, in receiving the teaching that you had from us, you accepted it, not as the teaching of humans, but as what it really is — the teaching of God, which is even now doing its  
14 work within you who believe in Christ. For you, friends, began  
15 to follow the example of the churches of God in Judea which are

in union with Jesus Christ; you, in your turn, suffering at the hands of your fellow citizens, in the same way as those churches did at the hands of their people — who killed both the Lord Jesus and the prophets, and persecuted us also. They do not try to please God, and they are enemies to all humanity, for they try to prevent us from speaking to the Gentiles with a view to their salvation, and so are always ‘filling up the measure of their iniquity.’ But the wrath of God has come upon them to the full!

As for ourselves, friends, our having been bereaved of you even for a short time — though in body only, and not in spirit — made us all the more eager to see your faces again; and the longing to do so was strong on us. That was why we made up our minds to go and see you — at least I, Paul, did, more than once — but Satan put difficulties in our way. For what hope or joy will be ours, or what crown will we have to boast of, in the presence of our Lord Jesus, at his coming, if it be not you? You are our pride and our delight!

And so, as we could bear it no longer, we made up our minds to remain behind alone at Athens, and sent Timothy, our dear friend and God’s minister of the good news of the Christ, to strengthen you, and to encourage you in your faith, so that none of you should be shaken by the troubles through which you are passing. You yourselves know that we are destined to meet with such things. For, even while we were with you, we warned you beforehand that we were certain to encounter trouble. And so it proved, as you know. Therefore, since I could no longer endure the uncertainty, I sent to make inquiries about your faith, fearing that the Tempter had tempted you, and that our toil might prove to have been in vain. But, when Timothy recently returned to us from you with good news of your faith and love, and told us how kindly you think of us — always longing, he said, to see us, just as we are longing to see you — on hearing this, we felt encouraged about you, friends, in the midst of all our difficulties and troubles, by your faith. For it is new life to us to know that you are holding fast to the Lord. How can we thank God enough for all the happiness that you are giving us in the sight of our God? Night and day we pray most earnestly that we may see

you face to face, and make good any deficiency in your faith.

11 May our God and Father himself, and Jesus, our Lord, make  
12 the way plain for us to come to you. And for you, may the Lord  
13 fill you to overflowing with love for one another and for every-  
one, just as we are filled with love for you; and so make your  
hearts strong, and your lives pure beyond reproach, in the sight  
of our God and Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus, with all  
his Holy Ones.

### *Advice on the Daily Life*

4 FURTHER, friends, we beg and urge you in the name of our Lord  
Jesus to carry out more fully than ever — as indeed you are  
already doing — all that you have heard from us as to what  
2 your daily life must be, if it is to please God. For you have not  
forgotten the directions that we gave you on the authority of our  
Lord Jesus.

3 For this is God's purpose — that you should be pure; abstain-  
4 ing from all immorality; each of you learning to gain control  
over your own body, in a way that is holy and honorable, and  
5 not for the mere gratification of your passions, like the Gentiles  
6 who know nothing of God; none of you overreaching or tak-  
ing advantage of their fellow follower of the Lord in such mat-  
7 ters. 'The Lord takes vengeance' on all who do such things, as  
we have already warned you and solemnly declared. For God's  
8 call to us does not permit of an impure life, but demands purity.  
Therefore the person who disregards this warning disregards,  
not people, but God who gives you his Holy Spirit.

9 As to love for each other there is no need to write to you; for  
you have yourselves been taught by God to love one another;  
10 and indeed you do act in this spirit towards all his people  
throughout Macedonia.

11 Yet, friends, we beg you to do even more. Make it your ambi-  
tion to live quietly, and to attend to your own business, and to  
12 work with your hands, as we directed you; so that your conduct  
may win respect from those outside the church, and that you  
may not want for anything.

*The Dead in Christ at the coming of the Lord*

WE DON'T WANT YOU TO BE IGNORANT, friends, about those who 13  
have passed to their rest. We don't want you to grieve like oth- 14  
er people who have no hope. For, as we believe that Jesus died 15  
and rose again, so also we believe that God will bring, with Je- 16  
sus, those who through him have passed to their rest. This we 17  
tell you on the authority of the Lord — that those of us who are 18  
still living at the coming of the Lord will not anticipate those  
who have passed to their rest. For, with a loud summons, with  
the shout of an archangel, and with the trumpet-call of God,  
the Lord himself will come down from heaven. Then those who  
died in union with Christ will rise first; and afterwards we who  
are still living will be caught up in the clouds, with them, to  
meet the Lord in the air; and so we will be for ever with the Lord.  
Therefore, comfort one another with what I have told you. 18

But as to the times and the moments, there is no need, 5  
friends, for anyone to write to you. You yourselves know well 2  
that the day of the Lord will come just as a thief comes in the 3  
night. When people are saying 'All is quiet and safe,' it is then 4  
that, like birth pains on a pregnant woman, ruin comes sudden- 5  
ly upon them, and there will be no escape! You, however, friends, 6  
are not in darkness, that the daylight should take you by sur- 7  
prise as if you were thieves. For you all are 'sons of light' and 8  
'sons of the day.' 9

We have nothing to do with night, or darkness. Therefore 6  
let us not sleep as others do. No, let us be watchful and self-con- 7  
trolled. It is at night that people sleep, and at night that drunk- 8  
ards get drunk. But let us, who belong to the day, control our- 9  
selves, and put on faith and love as a breast plate, and the hope 10  
of salvation as a helmet. For God destined us, not for wrath, but 11  
to win salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ, who died for us,  
that, whether we are still watching or have fallen asleep, we may  
live with him. Therefore encourage one another, and try to build  
up one another's characters, as indeed you are doing.

### Conclusion

12 WE BEG YOU, friends, to value those who toil among you, and are  
13 your leaders in the Lord's service, and give you counsel. Hold  
14 them in the very greatest esteem and affection for the sake of  
15 their work. Live at peace with one another. We entreat you also,  
16 friends — warn the disorderly, comfort the faint-hearted, give  
17 a helping hand to the weak, and be patient with everyone. Take  
18 care that none of you ever pays back wrong for wrong, but al-  
19 ways follow the kindest course with one another and with ev-  
20 eryone. Always be joyful; never cease to pray; under all circum-  
21 stances give thanks to God. For this is his will for you as made  
22 known in Christ Jesus. Do not quench the Spirit; do not make  
23 light of preaching. Bring everything to the test; cling to what is  
24 good; shun every form of evil. May God himself, the giver of  
25 peace, make you altogether holy; and may your spirits, souls,  
26 and bodies be kept altogether faultless until the coming of our  
27 Lord Jesus Christ. He who calls you will not fail you; he will  
28 complete his work.

Friends, pray for us.

25 Greet all the Lord's followers with a sacred kiss. I order you in  
26 the Lord's name to have this letter read to all the brethren.  
27

28 May the blessing of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.



# 2 Thessalonians

*Paul's Second Letter to the Thessalonians*

## *Introduction*

**T**O THE THESSALONIAN CHURCH IN UNION WITH GOD OUR FATHER 1  
AND THE Lord Jesus Christ, From Paul, Silas, and Timothy.  
May God, the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and 2  
give you peace.

## *The Apostle and his Converts*

FRIENDS, it is our duty always to thank God about you, as is but 3  
right, considering the wonderful growth of your faith, and be-  
cause, without exception, your love for one another is continu- 4  
ally increasing. So much is this the case that we ourselves speak  
with pride, before the churches of God, of the patience and  
faith which you have shown, in spite of all the persecutions and 5  
troubles that you are enduring. These persecutions will vindi-  
cate the justice of God's judgment, and will result in your being 6  
reckoned worthy of God's kingdom, for the sake of which you  
are now suffering; since God deems it just to inflict suffering on 7  
those who are now inflicting suffering on you, and to give relief  
to you who are suffering, as well as to us, at the appearing of the  
Lord Jesus from heaven with his mighty angels, 'in flaming fire.'  
Then he will 'inflict punishment on those who refuse to know 8  
God, and on those who turn a deaf ear' to the good news of Je-  
sus, our Lord. They will pay the penalty of unutterable ruin — 9  
banished 'from the presence of the Lord and from the glorious  
manifestation of his might, when he comes to be honor ed in his 10  
people,' and to be revered in all who have learned to believe in

11 him (for you also believed our testimony)— as he will be on ‘that  
day.’ With this in view, our constant prayer for you is that our  
God may count you worthy of the call that you have received,  
12 and by his power make perfect your delight in all goodness and  
the efforts that have resulted from your faith. Then, in the loving  
kindness of our God and the Lord Jesus Christ, will the name of  
Jesus, our Lord, be honored in you, and you in him.

### *Events that must precede the Lord’s Coming*

2 AS TO THE COMING OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST, and our being gath-  
2 ered to meet him, we beg you, friends, not lightly to let your  
minds become unsettled, nor yet to be disturbed by any revela-  
tion, or by any message, or by any letter, purporting to come  
3 from us, to the effect that the day of the Lord is come. Do not let  
anyone deceive you, whatever he may do. For it will not come  
until after the Great Apostasy, and the appearing of that Incar-  
4 nation of Wickedness, that the Lost soul, who so opposes him-  
self to everyone that is spoken of as a God or as an object of wor-  
ship, and so exalts himself above them, that he seats himself in  
5 the Temple of God, and displays himself as God! Do not you re-  
member how, when I was with you, I used to speak to you of all  
6 this? And you know now what the restraining influence is which  
prevents his appearing before his appointed time. Wickedness,  
7 indeed, is already at work in secret; but only until he who at  
8 present restrains it is removed out of the way. Then will ‘Wicked-  
ness Incarnate’ appear, but the Lord Jesus will destroy him with  
the breath of his lips, and annihilate him by the splendor of his  
9 coming. For at the coming of the Lord there will be great activity  
on the part of Satan, in the form of all kinds of deceptive mira-  
cles, signs, and marvels, as well as of wicked attempts to delude  
10 — to the ruin of those who are on the path to destruction, be-  
cause they have never received and loved the truth to their own  
11 salvation. That is why God places them under the influence of a  
delusion, to cause them to believe a lie; so that sentence may be  
12 passed on all those who refuse to believe the truth, but delight  
in wickedness.

But, friends, whom the Lord loves, it is our duty always to thank 13  
God about you, for, from the first, God chose you for salvation  
through the purifying influence of the Spirit, and your belief in 14  
the truth. To this you were called by the good news which we  
brought you, to attain to the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ. Stand 15  
firm then, friends, and hold fast to the truths that we taught you,  
whether by word or by letter. And may our Lord Jesus Christ 16  
himself, and God our Father, who loved us and, in his loving  
kindness, gave us unfailing consolation and good ground for  
hope, console your hearts, and strengthen you to do and to say 17  
all that is right.

### *Conclusion*

IN CONCLUSION, friends, pray for us — pray that the Lord's mes- 3  
sage may spread rapidly, and be received everywhere with hon- 2  
or, as it was among you; and that we may be preserved from  
wrong-headed and wicked people — for it is not everyone who 3  
believes in Christ. But the Lord will not fail you; he will give you  
strength, and guard you from evil. Yes, and the confidence that 4  
our union with the Lord enables us to place in you leads us to  
believe that you are doing, and will do, what we direct you. May 5  
the Lord bring you to the love of God, and to the patience of  
the Christ.

We beg you, friends, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, to 6  
avoid any follower who is living an ill-ordered life, which is not  
in agreement with the teaching that you received from us. For 7  
you know well that you ought to follow our example. When we  
were with you, our life was not ill-ordered, nor did we eat any- 8  
one's bread without paying for it. Night and day, laboring and  
toiling, we used to work at our trades, so as not to be a burden 9  
on any of you. This was not because we had not a right to receive  
support, but our object was to give you a pattern for you to copy. 10  
Indeed, when we were with you, the rule we laid down was —  
'Whoever does not choose to work will not get to eat.' We hear 11

12 that there are among you people who are living ill-ordered lives,  
and who, instead of attending to their own business, are mere  
13 busybodies. All such people we beg, and implore,, in the name  
of the Lord Jesus Christ, to attend quietly to their business, and  
14 earn their own living. You, friends, must not grow weary of do-  
ing what is right. If anyone disregards what we have said in this  
letter, take note of them and avoid their company, so that they  
15 may feel ashamed. Yet do not think of them as an enemy, but  
caution them as you would a brother or sister. May the Lord,  
16 from whom all peace comes, himself give you his peace at all  
times and in all ways. May he be with you all.

17 I, Paul, add this greeting in my own handwriting. It is my  
signature to every letter. This is how I write. May the blessing of  
18 our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all.

# 1 Timothy

*Paul's First Letter to Timothy*

## *Introduction*

**F**ROM PAUL, an apostle of Christ Jesus by the appointment of 1  
God, our Savior, and Christ Jesus, our hope. To Timothy, 2  
my true child in the faith: May God, the Father, and Christ  
Jesus, our Lord, bless you, and be merciful to you, and give you  
peace.

I beg you, as I did when I was on my way into Macedonia, to 3  
remain at Ephesus; that you may instruct certain people there  
not to teach new and strange doctrines, nor to devote their atten- 4  
tion to legends and interminable genealogies, which tend to give  
rise to argument rather than to further that divine plan which is  
revealed in the faith. The object of all instruction is to call forth 5  
that love which comes from a pure heart, a clear conscience, and  
a sincere faith. And it is because they have not aimed at these 6  
things that the attention of certain people has been diverted to  
unprofitable subjects. They want to be teachers of the law, and 7  
yet do not understand either the words they use, or the subjects  
on which they speak so confidently. We know, of course, that the 8  
law is excellent, when used legitimately, by one who recognizes 9  
that laws were not made for good people, but for the lawless  
and disorderly, for irreligious and wicked people, for those who  
are irreverent and profane, for those who ill-treat their fathers or 10  
mothers, for murderers, for the immoral, for perverts, for slave-  
dealers, for liars, for perjurers, and for whatever else is opposed 11  
to sound Christian teaching — as is taught in the glorious good

news of the ever-blessed God, with which I was entrusted.

12 I am thankful to Christ Jesus, our Lord, who has been my  
strength, for showing that he thought me worthy of trust by ap-  
13 pointing me to his ministry, though I once used to blaspheme,  
and to persecute, and to insult. Yet mercy was shown me, be-  
14 cause I acted in ignorance, while still an unbeliever; and the lov-  
ing kindness of our Lord was boundless, and filled me with that  
faith and love which come from union with Christ Jesus. How  
15 true the saying is, and worthy of the fullest acceptance, that  
'Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners'! And there is  
16 no greater sinner than I! Yet mercy was shown me for the express  
purpose that Christ Jesus might exhibit in my case, beyond all  
others, his exhaustless patience, as an example for those who  
17 were afterwards to believe on him and attain eternal life. To the  
eternal King, ever-living, invisible, the one God, be ascribed hon-  
or and glory for ever and ever. Amen.

18 This, then, is the charge that I lay on you, Timothy, my child,  
in accordance with what was predicted of you — Fight the good  
19 fight in the spirit of those predictions, with faith, and with a clear  
conscience; and it is because they have thrust this aside, that,  
as regards the faith, some have wrecked their lives. Hymenaeus  
20 and Alexander are instances — the men whom I delivered over  
to Satan so that they might be taught not to blaspheme.

### *General Directions on Church Matters*

2 FIRST OF ALL, then, I ask that petitions, prayers, intercessions,  
2 and thanksgivings should be offered for everyone, especially for  
kings and all who are in high positions, in order that we may  
lead a quiet and peaceful life in a deeply religious and reverent  
3 spirit. This will be good and acceptable in the eyes of God, our  
Savior, whose will is that everyone should be saved, and attain  
4 to a full knowledge of the truth. There is but one God, and one  
5 mediator between God and men — the man, Christ Jesus, who  
6 gave himself as a ransom on behalf of all men.

7 This must be our testimony, as opportunities present them-  
selves; and it was for this that I was myself appointed a her-

ald and an apostle (I am telling the simple truth and no lie) — a teacher of the Gentiles in the faith and truth.

My desire, then, is that it should be the custom everywhere 8  
for the men to lead the prayers, with hands reverently uplifted,  
avoiding heated controversy.

I also desire that women should adorn themselves with 9  
appropriate dress, worn quietly and modestly, and not with  
wreaths or gold ornaments for the hair, or pearls, or costly cloth- 10  
ing, but — as is proper for women who profess to be religious 11  
— with good actions. They must learn, listening quietly to their 12  
teachers and showing them all deference. I do not consent to 13  
them becoming teachers, or exercising authority over men; they 14  
ought to not make a fuss. Adam was formed first, not Eve. And 15  
it was not Adam who was deceived; it was the woman who was  
entirely deceived and fell into sin. But she will be saved by the  
birth of a child, if they never abandon faith, love, or holiness,  
and behave with modesty.

How true is this saying: ‘To aspire to be to be a presiding offi- 3  
cer in the church is to be ambitious for a noble task.’ The presid- 2  
ing officer should be of blameless character; a faithful partner;  
living a temperate, discreet, and well-ordered life; hospitable,  
and a skillful teacher, not addicted to drink or brawling, but of a 3  
forbearing and peaceable disposition, and not a lover of money;  
they should provide for own household well, and their children 4  
should kept under control and be well-behaved. If someone 5  
does not know how to provide for their own household, how  
can they take charge of the church of God? The presiding officer 6  
should not be a recent convert, or they might become blinded by  
pride and fall under the same condemnation as the devil. They 7  
should also be well spoken of by outsiders, so that they may not  
incur censure and so fall into the devil’s trap. So, too, assistant of- 8  
ficers should be serious and straightforward, not given to taking 9  
much drink or to questionable money-making, but people who  
hold the deep truths of the faith and have a clear conscience. 10  
They should be tested first, and only appointed to their office if 11  
no objection is raised against them. It should be the same with  
the women in this office. They should be serious, not gossips,  
sober, and trustworthy in all respects. Assistant officers should 12

13 be faithful partners who manage their children and their households well. Those who have filled that post with honor gain for themselves an honorable position, as well as great confidence through the faith that they place in Christ Jesus.

### *Special Directions to Timothy*

14 I AM WRITING THIS TO YOU, though I hope that I will come to see  
15 you before long; but in case I should be delayed, I want you to  
know what your conduct ought to be in the Household of God,  
which is the church of the living God — the pillar and stay of the  
16 truth. Yes, and confessedly wonderful are the deep truths of our  
religion; for —

‘He was revealed in our nature,  
Pronounced righteous in spirit,  
Seen by angels,  
Proclaimed among the Gentiles,  
Believed on in the world,  
Taken up into glory.’

4 But the Spirit distinctly says that in later times there will be  
some who will fall away from the faith, and devote their atten-  
2 tion to misleading spirits, and to the teaching of demons, who  
will make use of the hypocrisy of lying teachers. These people’s  
3 consciences are seared, and they discourage marriage and enjoin  
abstinence from certain kinds of food; though God created these  
4 foods to be enjoyed thankfully by those who hold the faith and  
have attained a full knowledge of the truth. Everything created  
by God is good, and there in nothing that need be rejected —  
5 provided only that it is received thankfully; for it is consecrated  
by God’s blessing and by prayer.

6 Put all this before the followers, and you will be a good ser-  
vant of Christ Jesus, sustained by the precepts of the faith and  
7 of that good teaching by which you have guided your life. As  
for profane legends and old wives’ tales, leave them alone. Train  
8 yourself to lead a religious life; for while the training of the body



is of service in some respects, religion is of service in all, carrying with it, as it does, a promise of life both here and hereafter. How true that saying is and worthy of the fullest acceptance! With that aim we toil and struggle, for we have set our hopes on the living God, who is the Savior of all, and especially of those who hold the faith.

Remember these things in your teaching. Do not let anyone look down on you because you are young, but, by your conversation, your conduct, your love, your faith, and your purity, be an example to those who hold the faith. Until I come, apply yourself to public reading, preaching, and teaching. Do not neglect the divine gift within you, which was given you, amid many a prediction, when the hands of the officers of the church were laid on your head. Practice these things, devote yourself to them, so that your progress may be plain to everyone. Look to yourself as well as to your teaching. Persevere in this, for your doing so will mean salvation for yourself as well as for your hearers.

Do not reprimand an older man, but plead with him as if he were your father. Treat the young men as brothers, the older women as mothers, and the younger women as sisters — with all purity. Show consideration for widows — I mean those who are really widowed. but, if a widow has children or grandchildren, let them learn to show proper regard for the members of their own family first, and to make some return to their parents; for that is pleasing in God's sight. As for the woman who is really widowed and left quite alone, her hopes are fixed on God, and she devotes herself to prayers and supplications night and day. But the life of a widow who is devoted to pleasure is a living death. Those are the points you should teach, so that there may be no call for your censure. Anyone who fails to provide for their own relations, and especially for those under their own roof, has disowned the faith, and is worse than an unbeliever. A widow, when her name is added to the list, should not be less than sixty years old; she should have been a faithful wife, and be well spoken of for her kind actions. She should have brought up children, have shown hospitality to strangers, have washed the feet of her

11 fellow Christians, have relieved those who were in distress, and  
devoted herself to every kind of good action. But you should  
12 exclude the younger widows from the list; for, when they grow  
restive under the yoke of the Christ, they want to marry, and so  
13 they bring condemnation on themselves for having broken their  
previous promise. And not only that, but they learn to be idle as  
they go about from house to house. Nor are they merely idle, but  
14 they also become gossips and busybodies, and talk of what they  
ought not. Therefore I advise young widows to marry, bear chil-  
15 dren, and attend to their homes, and so avoid giving the enemy  
an opportunity for scandal. There are some who have already  
16 left us, to follow Satan. Any Christian woman, who has relations  
who are widows, ought to relieve them and not allow them to  
become a burden to the church, so that the church may relieve  
those widows who are really widowed.

17 Those officers of the church who fill their office well should  
be held deserving of especial consideration, particularly those  
18 whose work lies in preaching and teaching. The words of scrip-  
ture are —

‘You should not muzzle the ox while it is treading out the  
grain.’

and again —

‘The worker is worth their wages.’

19 Do not receive a charge against an officer of the church, unless  
20 it is supported by two or three witnesses; but rebuke offenders  
21 publicly, so that others may take warning. I charge you solemn-  
ly, before God and Christ Jesus and the chosen angels, to carry  
out these directions, unswayed by prejudice, never acting with  
22 partiality. Never ordain anyone hastily, and take no part in the  
23 wrong-doing of others. Keep your life pure. Do not continue to  
drink water only, but take a little wine because of the weakness  
24 of your stomach, and your frequent ailments. There are some  
people whose sins are conspicuous and lead on to judgment,  
25 while there are others whose sins dog their steps. In the same

way noble deeds become conspicuous, and those which are otherwise cannot be concealed.

All who are in the position of slaves should regard their masters as deserving of the greatest respect, so that the name of God, and our teaching, may not be maligned. Those who have Christian masters should not think less of them because they are also followers of Christ, but on the contrary they should serve them all the better, because those who are to benefit by their good work are dear to them as their fellow Christians.

### Conclusion

Those are the things to insist on in your teaching. Anyone who teaches otherwise, and refuses their assent to sound instruction — the instruction of our Lord Jesus Christ — and to the teaching of religion, is puffed up with conceit, not really knowing anything, but having a morbid craving for discussions and arguments. Such things only give rise to envy, quarreling, recriminations, base suspicions, and incessant wrangling on the part of these corrupt-minded people who have lost all hold on the truth, and who think of religion only as a source of gain. And a great source of gain religion is, when it brings contentment with it! For we brought nothing into the world, because we cannot even carry anything out of it. So, with food and shelter, we will be content. Those who want to be rich fall into the net of temptation, and become the prey of many foolish and harmful ambitions, which plunge people into destruction and ruin. Love of money is a source of all kinds of evil; and in their eagerness to be rich some have wandered away from the faith, and have been pierced to the heart by many a regret.

But you must, servant of God, avoid all this. Aim at righteousness, piety, faith, love, endurance, gentleness. Run the great race of the faith, and win the eternal life. It was for this that you received the call, and, in the presence of many witnesses, made the great profession of faith. I beg you, as in the sight of God, the source of all life, and of Christ Jesus who before Pontius Pilate made the great profession of faith — I implore you to keep

15 his command free from stain or reproach, until the appearing of  
our Lord Jesus Christ. This will be brought about in his own time  
16 by the one ever-blessed Potentate, the king of all kings and Lord  
of all lords, who alone is possessed of immortality and dwells  
in unapproachable light, whom no one has ever seen or ever can  
see — to whom be ascribed honor and power for ever. Amen.

17 Teach those who are wealthy in this life not to pride them-  
selves, or fix their hopes, on so uncertain a thing as wealth,  
but on God, who gives us a wealth of enjoyment on every side.  
18 Teach them to show kindness, to exhibit a wealth of good ac-  
19 tions, to be open-handed and generous, storing up for them-  
selves what in the future will prove to be a good foundation, so  
that they may gain the only true life.

20 Timothy, guard what has been entrusted to you. Avoid the  
profane prattle and contradictions of what some miscall 'theol-  
21 ogy,' for there are those who, while asserting their proficiency in  
it, have yet, as regards the faith, gone altogether astray.

God bless you all.

# 2 Timothy

*Paul's Second Letter to Timothy*

## *Introduction*

**T**O TIMOTHY, my dear child, from Paul who, by the will of 1  
God, is an apostle of Christ Jesus, charged to proclaim the  
life that comes from union with Christ Jesus. May God, the  
Father, and Christ Jesus, our Lord, bless you, and be merciful to  
you, and give you peace.

I am thankful to God, whom I serve, as my ancestors did, with a 3  
clear conscience, when I remember you, as I never fail to do, in  
my prayers — night and day alike, as I think of your tears, long- 4  
ing to see you, that my happiness may be completed, now that 5  
I have been reminded of the sincere faith that you have shown.  
That faith was seen first in your grandmother Lois and your  
mother Eunice, and is now, I am convinced, in you also. And 6  
that is my reason for reminding you to stir into flame that gift  
of God, which is yours through your ordination at my hands.  
For the Spirit which God gave us was not a spirit of cowardice, 7  
but a spirit of power, love, and self-control. Do not, therefore, be 8  
ashamed of the testimony which we have to bear to our Lord,  
nor yet of me who am a prisoner for him; but join with me in  
suffering for the good news, as far as God enables you. It was 9  
God who saved us, and from him we received our solemn call —  
not as a reward for anything that we had done, but in fulfillment  
of his own loving purpose. For that love was extended to us,  
through Christ Jesus, before time began, and has now been made 10  
apparent through the appearing of our Savior, Christ Jesus; who

11 has made an end of death, and has brought life and Immortali-  
12 ty to light by that good news, of which I was myself appointed  
13 a herald and apostle, and teacher. That is why I am undergoing  
14 these sufferings; yet I feel no shame, for I know in whom I have  
15 put my faith, and am convinced that he is able to guard what  
16 I have entrusted to him until 'that day.' Keep before you, as an  
17 example of sound teaching, all that you learnt from me as you  
18 listened with that faith and love which come from union with  
19 Christ Jesus. Guard by the help of the Holy Spirit, who is within  
20 us, the glorious trust that has been committed to you.

21 You know, of course, that all our friends in Roman Asia  
22 turned their backs on me, and among them Phygellus and Her-  
23 mogenes. May the Lord show mercy to the household of One-  
24 siphorus; for he often cheered me and was not ashamed of my  
25 chains. On the contrary, when he arrived in Rome, he sought  
26 eagerly for me until he found me. The Lord grant that he may  
27 find mercy at the hands of the Lord on 'that day.' The many ser-  
28 vices that he rendered at Ephesus you have the best means of  
29 knowing.

### *Injunctions to Timothy*

2 YOU MUST, then, my child, find strength in the help which comes  
3 from the union with Christ Jesus; and what you learnt from me,  
4 in the presence of many listeners, entrust to reliable people, who  
5 will be able in their turn to teach others. Share hardships with  
6 me, as a true soldier of Christ Jesus. A soldier on active service, to  
7 please his superior officer, always avoids entangling himself in  
8 the affairs of ordinary life. No athlete is ever awarded the wreath  
9 of victory unless they have kept the rules. The laborer who does  
10 the work should be the first to receive a share of the fruits of the  
11 earth. Reflect on what I say; the Lord will always help you to  
12 understand. Keep before your mind Jesus Christ, raised from the  
13 dead, a descendant of David, as told in the good news entrusted  
14 to me; in the service of which I am suffering hardships, even  
15 to being put in fetters as a criminal. But the message of God is  
16 not fettered; and that is why I submit to anything for the sake of

God's people: so that they also may obtain the salvation which comes from union with Christ Jesus, and imperishable glory. How true this saying is — 'If we have shared his death, we will also share his life. If we continue to endure, we will also share his throne. If we should ever disown him, he, too, will disown us. If we lose our trust, he is still to be trusted, for he cannot be false to himself!'

Remind people of all this; tell them solemnly, as in the sight of God, to avoid controversy, a useless thing and the ruin of those who listen to it. Do your utmost to show yourself true to God, a worker with no reason to be ashamed, accurate in delivering the message of the truth. Avoid profane prattle. Those who indulge in it only get deeper into irreligious ways, and their teaching will spread like a cancer. Hymenaeus and Philetus are instances of this. They have gone completely astray as regards the truth; they say that a resurrection has already taken place, and so upset some people's faith. Yet God's firm foundation still stands unmoved, and it bears this inscription —

'THE LORD KNOWS THOSE WHO ARE HIS';

and this —

'LET ALL THOSE WHO USE THE NAME OF THE LORD TURN AWAY FROM WICKEDNESS.'

Now in a large house there are not only things of gold and silver, but also others of wood and earthenware, some for better and some for common use. If, then, a person has escaped from the pollution of such errors as I have mentioned, they will be like a thing kept for better use, set apart, serviceable to its owner, ready for any good purpose. Flee from the passions of youth, but pursue righteousness, faith, love, and peace, in the company of those who, with a pure heart, invoke the Lord. Shun foolish and ignorant discussions, for you know that they only breed quarrels; and a servant of the Lord should never quarrel. They ought, on the contrary, to be courteous to everyone, skillful teachers, and forbearing. They should instruct their opponents in a gentle spirit; for, possibly, God may give those opponents a repentance

26 that will lead to a fuller knowledge of truth, and they may yet come to a sober mind, and escape from the devil's net, when captured by the Lord's servant to do the will of God.

3 Be sure of this, that in the last days difficult times will come.  
2 People will be selfish, mercenary, boastful, haughty, and blasphemous; disobedient to their parents, ungrateful, impure, incapable of affection, merciless, slanderous, wanting in self-control,  
3 brutal, careless of the right, treacherous, reckless, and puffed up  
4 with pride; they will love pleasure more than they love God; and  
5 while they retain the outward form of religion, they will not allow it to influence them. Turn your back on such people as these.  
6 For among them are to be found those who creep into homes and captivate weak women — women who, loaded with sins, and  
7 slaves to all kinds of passions, are always learning, and yet never  
8 able to attain to a real knowledge of the truth. Just as Jannes and Jambres opposed Moses, so do these people, in their turn,  
9 oppose the truth. Their minds are corrupted, and, as regards the faith, they are utterly worthless. They will not, however, make  
10 further progress; for their wicked folly will be plain to everyone, just as the folly Jannes and Jambres was. But you, Timothy, were  
11 a close observer of my teaching, my conduct, my purposes, my faith, my forbearance, my love, and my patient endurance, as  
12 well as of my persecutions, and of the sufferings which I met with at Antioch, Iconium, and Lystra. You know what persecutions I underwent; and yet the Lord brought me safe out of  
13 all! Yes, and all who aim at living a religious life in union with Christ Jesus will have to suffer persecution; but wicked people  
14 and impostors will go from bad to worse, deceiving others and deceived themselves. You, however, must stand by what you learnt and accepted as true. You know who they were from  
15 whom you learnt it; and that, from your childhood, you have known the sacred writings, which can give you the wisdom that,  
16 through belief in Christ Jesus, leads to salvation. All scripture is God-breathed: helpful for teaching, for refuting error, for giving  
17 guidance, and for training others in righteousness; so that God's people may be capable and equipped for good work of



every kind.

I solemnly charge you, in the sight of God and of Christ Jesus, who will one day judge the living and the dead — I charge you by his appearing and by his kingdom: — Proclaim the message, be ready in season and out of season, convince, rebuke, encourage, never failing to instruct with forbearance. For a time will come when people will not tolerate sound teaching. They will follow their own wishes, and, in their itching for novelty, procure themselves a crowd of teachers. They will turn a deaf ear to the truth, and give their attention to legends instead. But you, Timothy, must always be temperate. Face hardships; do the work of a missionary; discharge all the duties of your office.

As for me, my life blood is already being poured out; the time of my departure is close at hand. I have run the great race; I have finished the course; I have kept the faith. And now the crown of righteousness awaits me, which the Lord, the just judge, will give me on 'that day' — and not only to me, but to all who have loved his appearing.

### *Conclusion*

Do your utmost to come to me soon; for Demas, in his love for the world, has deserted me. He has gone to Thessalonica, Crescens to Galatia, and Titus to Dalmatia. There is no one but Luke with me. Pick up Mark on your way, and bring him with you, for he is useful to me in my work. I have sent Tychicus to Ephesus. Bring with you, when you come, the cloak which I left at Troas with Carpus, and the books, especially the parchments. Alexander, the coppersmith, showed much ill feeling towards me. 'The Lord will give him what his actions deserve.' You must also on your guard against him, for he is strongly opposed to our teaching. At my first trial no one stood by me. They all deserted me. May it never be counted against them! But the Lord came to my help and strengthened me, in order that, through me, the proclamation should be made so widely that all the Gentiles should hear it; and I was rescued 'out of the Lion's mouth.' The Lord will rescue me from all evil, and bring me safe into his

Heavenly kingdom. All glory to him for ever and ever! Amen.

- 19 Give my greeting to Prisca and Aquila, and to the household of  
20 Onesiphorus. Erastus remained at Corinth, and I left Thopimus  
21 ill at Miletus. Do your utmost to come before winter. Eubulus,  
Pudens, Linus and Claudia send you their greetings, and so do  
the rest of the Lord's followers.
- 22 May the Lord be with your soul. God bless you all.

# Titus

*Paul's Letter to Titus*

## *Introduction*

FROM PAUL, a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, 1  
charged to strengthen the faith of God's chosen people, and 2  
their knowledge of that truth which makes for godliness and is 3  
based on the hope of eternal life, which God, who never lies, 4  
promised before the ages began, and has revealed at his own 5  
time in his message, with the proclamation of which I was 6  
entrusted by the command of God our Savior. To Titus, my true 7  
child in our one faith: May God, the Father, and Christ Jesus, 8  
our Savior, bless you and give you peace. 9

## *Mission of Titus in Crete*

MY REASON FOR LEAVING YOU IN CRETE WAS THAT YOU MIGHT PUT IN 5  
order what had been left unsettled, and appoint officers of the 6  
church in the various towns, as I myself directed you. They are to 7  
be of irreproachable character, faithful to their partners, whose 8  
children are Christians and have never been charged with dis- 9  
solute conduct or have been unruly. For a presiding officer, as  
God's steward, ought to be of irreproachable character; not self-  
willed or quick-tempered, nor addicted to drink or to brawling  
or to questionable money-making. On the contrary, they should  
be hospitable, eager for the right, discreet, upright, people of  
holy life and capable of self-restraint, who hold doctrine that can  
be relied on as being in accordance with the accepted teaching;  
so that they may be able to encourage others by sound teaching,  
as well as to refute our opponents.

10        There are, indeed, many unruly persons — great talkers who  
deceive themselves, principally converts from Judaism, whose  
11        mouths ought to be stopped; for they upset whole households  
by teaching what they ought not to teach, merely to make ques-  
12        tionable gains. It was a Cretan — one of their own teachers —  
who said: ‘Cretans are always liars, base brutes, and gluttonous  
13        idlers’; and his statement is true. Therefore rebuke them sharply,  
14        so that they may be sound in the faith, and may pay no atten-  
tion to Jewish legends, or to the directions of those who turn  
15        their backs on the truth. Everything is pure to the pure-minded,  
but to those whose minds are polluted and who are unbelievers  
nothing is pure. Their minds and consciences are alike polluted.  
16        They profess to know God, but by their actions they disown him.  
They are degraded and self-willed; and, as far as anything good  
is concerned, they are utterly worthless.

2        You should, however, speak of such subjects as properly have  
a place in sound Christian teaching. Teach that the older men  
2        should be temperate, serious, and discreet; strong in faith, love,  
and endurance. So, too, that the older women should be rever-  
3        ent in their demeanor, and that they should avoid scandal, and  
beware of becoming slaves to drink; that they should teach what  
4        is right, so as to train the younger women to love their husbands  
and children, and to be discreet, pure-minded, domesticated,  
5        good women, respecting the authority of their husbands, in or-  
der that God’s message may not be maligned. And so again with  
6        the younger men — impress on them the need of discretion.  
7        Above all, set an example of doing good. Show sincerity in your  
8        teaching, and a serious spirit; let the instruction that you give be  
sound and above reproach, so that the enemy may be ashamed  
9        when he fails to find anything bad to say about us. Tell slaves  
to respect their owner’s authority in all circumstances, and to  
10        try their best to please them. Teach them not to contradict or  
to pilfer, but to show such praiseworthy fidelity in everything,  
as to recommend the teaching about God our Savior by all that  
they do.

11        For the loving kindness of God has been revealed, bring-

ing salvation for all; leading us to renounce irreligious ways 12  
and worldly ambitions, and to live discreet, upright, and re- 13  
ligious lives here in this present world, while we are awaiting 13  
our blessed hope — the appearing in glory of our great God and 14  
Savior, Christ Jesus. For he gave himself on our behalf, to deliver 14  
us from all wickedness, and to purify for himself a people who 15  
should be peculiarly his own and eager to do good. Speak of 15  
all this, and encourage and rebuke with all authority. Do not let 3  
anyone despise you. Remind your hearers to respect and obey 3  
the powers that be, to be ready for every kind of good work, 2  
to speak ill of no one, to avoid quarreling, to be forbearing, and 2  
under all circumstances to show a gentle spirit in dealing with 3  
others, whoever they may be. There was, you remember, a time 3  
when we ourselves were foolish, disobedient, misled, slaves to 4  
all kinds of passions and vices, living in a spirit of malice and 4  
envy, detested ourselves and hating one another. But, when the 5  
kindness of God our Savior and his love for humanity were re- 5  
vealed, he saved us, not as the result of any righteous actions 6  
that we had done, but in fulfillment of his merciful purposes. 6  
He saved us by that washing which was a new birth to us, and 7  
by the renewing power of the Holy Spirit, which he poured out 7  
on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior; that, having 8  
been pronounced righteous through his loving kindness, we 8  
might enter on our inheritance with the hope of eternal life. How 9  
true that saying is! And it is on these subjects that I desire you to 9  
lay especial stress, so that those who have learned to trust in God 10  
may be careful to devote themselves to doing good. Such sub- 10  
jects are excellent in themselves, and of real use to humanity. But 11  
have nothing to do with foolish discussions, or with genealogies, 11  
or with controversy, or disputes about the law. They are use-  
less and futile. If someone is causing divisions among you, after  
warning them once or twice, have nothing more to say to them.  
You may be sure that such a person has forsaken the truth and is  
in the wrong; they stand self-condemned.

*Conclusion*

- 12 AS SOON AS I SEND ARTEMAS OR TYCHICUS TO YOU, join me as quickly  
as possible at Nicopolis, for I have arranged to spend the winter  
13 there. Do your best to help Zenas, the teacher of the law, and  
Apollos, on their way, and see that they want for nothing. Let  
14 all our people learn to devote themselves to doing good, so as  
to meet the most pressing needs, and that their lives may not  
be unfruitful.
- 15 All who are with me here send you their greeting. Give my  
greeting to our friends in the faith.

God bless you all.

# Philemon

*Paul's Letter to Philemon*

## *Introduction*

FROM PAUL, now a prisoner for Christ Jesus, and from 1  
Timothy, a fellow follower of the Lord. To our dear friend 2  
and fellow worker Philemon, to our sister Apphia, to our  
fellow soldier Archippus; and to the church that meets at  
Philemon's house; may God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus 3  
Christ bless you and give you peace.

## *Request regarding runaway slave*

I always mention you in my prayers and thank God for you, 4  
because I hear of the love and the faith which you show, not only 5  
to the Lord Jesus, but also to all his people; and I pray that your 6  
participation in the faith may result in action, as you come to a  
fuller realization of everything that is good and Christlike in us.  
I have indeed found great joy and encouragement in your love, 7  
knowing, as I do, how the hearts of Christ's People have been  
cheered, friend, by you.

And so, though my union with Christ enables me, with all 8  
confidence, to dictate the course that you should adopt, yet the 9  
claims of love make me prefer to plead with you — yes, even me,  
Paul, though I am an ambassador for Christ Jesus and, now a  
prisoner for him as well. I plead with you for this child of mine, 10  
Onesimus, to whom, in my prison, I have become a father. Once  
he was of little service to you, but now he has become of great 11  
service, not only to you, but to me as well; and I am sending him 12  
back to you with this letter — though it is like tearing out of my

13 heart. For my own sake I should like to keep him with me, so  
14 that, while I am in prison for the good news, he might attend to  
15 my wants on your behalf. But I do not wish to do anything with-  
16 out your consent, because I want your generosity to be volun-  
17 tary and not, as it were, compulsory. It may be that he was sep-  
18 arated from you for an hour, for this reason, so that you might  
19 have him back for ever, no longer as a slave, but as something  
20 better — a dearly loved friend and follower of the Lord, espe-  
cially dear to me, and how much more so to you, not only as a  
person, but as your fellow Christian! If, then, you count me your  
friend, receive him as you would me. If he has caused you any  
loss, or owes you anything, charge it to me. I, Paul, put my own  
hand to it — I will repay you myself. I say nothing about your  
owing me your self. Yes, friend, let me gain something from you  
because of your union with the Lord. Cheer my heart by your  
Christlike spirit.

21 Even as I write, I have such confidence in your compliance with  
22 my wishes, that I am sure that you will do even more than I am  
asking. Please also get a lodging ready for me, for I hope that I  
will be given back to you all in answer to your prayers.

### *Messages and Blessing*

23 EPAPHRAS, who is my fellow prisoner for Christ Jesus, sends you  
24 his greeting; and Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, and Luke, my  
fellow workers, send theirs.

25 May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ rest on your souls.



# Hebrews

*The Letter to the Hebrews*

## *Christ the Mediator*

**G**OD, who, of old, at many times and in many ways, spoke 1  
to our ancestors, by the prophets, has in these latter days 2  
spoken to us by the Son, whom he appointed the heir of all 3  
things, and through whom he made the universe. For he is the 3  
radiance of the glory of God and the expression of his being,  
upholding all creation by the power of his word; and, when he  
had made an expiation for the sins of humanity, he 'took his  
seat at the right hand' of God's Majesty on high, having shown 4  
himself as much greater than the angels as the name that he 4  
has inherited surpasses theirs.

For to which of the angels did God ever say — 5

'You are my Son; this day I have become your Father'?

or again —

'I will be to him a Father, and he will be to me a Son'?

And again, when God brought the first-born into the world, he 6  
said —

'Let all the angels of God bow down before him.'

Speaking of the angels, he said — 7

'He makes the winds his angels  
And the flames of fire his servants';

8 while of the Son he said —

‘God is your throne for ever and ever;

The scepter of his kingdom is the scepter of Justice;

9 You love righteousness and hates iniquity;

Therefore God, your God, has anointed you with the festal oil more abundantly than your peers.’

10 Again —

‘You, Lord, in the beginning did lay the foundation of the earth,

And the heavens are the work of your hands.

11 They will perish, but you remain;

As a garment they will all grow old;

12 As a mantle you will fold them up,

And as a garment they will be changed,

But you are the same, and your years will know no end.’

13 To which of the angels has God ever said —

‘Sit you at my right hand

Until I put your enemies as a stool for your feet’?

14 Are not all the angels spirits in the service of God, sent out to minister for the sake of those who are destined to obtain salvation?

2 Therefore we must give still more heed to what we were  
2 taught, so we do not drift away. For, if the message which was delivered by angels had its authority confirmed, so that every offense against it, or neglect of it, met with a fitting requital, how  
3 can we, of all people, expect to escape, if we disregard so great a salvation? It was the Master who at the outset spoke of this salvation, and its authority was confirmed for us by those who  
4 heard him, while God himself added his testimony to it by signs, and marvels, and many different miracles, as well as by imparting the Holy Spirit as he saw fit.

God has not given to angels the control of that future world of 5  
which we are speaking! No; a writer has declared somewhere 6  
—

‘What are mere mortals that you should remember them?  
Or human beings that you should care for them?  
You have made them, for a while, lower than angels; 7  
With glory and honor you have crowned them;  
You have set them over all that your hands have made;  
You have placed all things beneath their feet.’ 8

This ‘placing of everything’ under humanity means that there was nothing which was not placed under them. As yet, however, 9  
we do not see everything placed under humanity. What our eyes do see is Jesus, who was made for a while lower than angels, now, because of his sufferings and death, crowned with glory and honor; so that his tasting the bitterness of death should, in God’s loving kindness, be on behalf of all humanity. It was, indeed, fitting that God, for whom and through whom all things exist, should, when leading many children to glory, make the author of their salvation perfect through suffering. For he who purifies, and those whom he purifies, all spring from One; and therefore he is not ashamed to call them his brothers and sisters.’ 10  
He says — 11  
12

‘I will tell of your name to my brothers and sisters,  
In the midst of the congregation I will sing your praise.’

And again — 13

‘As for me, I will put my trust in God.’

And yet again —

‘See, here am I and the children whom God gave me.’

Therefore, since human nature is the common heritage of ‘the children,’ Jesus also shared it, in order that by death he might render powerless him whose power lies in death — that is, the 14

15 devil — and so might deliver all those who, from fear of death,  
 16 had all their lives been living in slavery. It was not, surely, to  
 17 the help of the angels that Jesus came, but ‘to the help of the de-  
 18 scendants of Abraham.’ And consequently it was necessary that  
 he should in all points be made like ‘his brothers and sisters,’ in  
 order that he might prove a merciful as well as a faithful high  
 priest in humanity’s relations with God, for the purpose of expi-  
 ating the sins of his people. The fact that he himself suffered un-  
 der temptation enables him to help those who are tempted.

3 Therefore, my Christian friends, you who, all alike, have re-  
 ceived the call from heaven, fix your attention on Jesus, the apos-  
 2 tle and high priest of our religion. See how faithful he was to  
 the God who appointed him, as Moses was in the whole house  
 3 of God. He has been deemed worthy of far higher honor than  
 Moses, just as the founder of the house is held in greater regard  
 4 than the house itself. For every house has its founder, and the  
 5 founder of the universe is God. While the faithful service of  
 Moses in the whole house of God was that of a servant, whose  
 6 duty was to bear testimony to a message still to come, the faith-  
 fulness of Christ was that of a son set over the house of God. And  
 we are his house — if only we retain, unshaken to the end, the  
 courage and confidence inspired by our hope.

7 Therefore, as the Holy Spirit says —

‘If today you hear God’s voice,  
 8 harden not your hearts, as when Israel provoked me  
 On the day when they tried my patience in the desert,  
 9 Where your ancestors tried my forbearance,  
 And saw my mighty deeds for forty years.  
 10 Therefore I was sorely vexed with that generation,  
 And I said — “Their hearts are always straying;  
 They have never learned my ways”;  
 11 While in my wrath I swore —  
 “They will never enter upon my rest.”’

12 Be careful, friends, that there is never found in anyone of you

a wicked and faithless heart, shown by that person separating themselves from the living God. Rather encourage one another daily — while there is a ‘Today’ — to prevent anyone among you from being hardened by the deceitfulness of sin. For we now all share in the Christ, if indeed we retain, unshaken to the end, the confidence that we had at the first. To use the words of scripture —

‘If today you hear God’s voice,  
Harden not your hearts, as when Israel provoked me.’

Who were they who heard God speak and yet provoked him? Were not they all those who left Egypt under the leadership of Moses? And with whom was it that God was sorely vexed for forty years? Was not it with those who had sinned, and who fell dead in the desert? And who were they to whom God swore that they should not enter upon his rest, if not those who had proved faithless? We see, then, that they failed to enter upon it because of their want of faith. We must, therefore, be very careful, though there is a promise still standing that we will enter upon God’s rest, that none of you even appear to have missed it. For we have had the good news told us just as they had. But the message which they heard did them no good, since they did not share the faith of those who were attentive to it. Upon that rest we who have believed are now entering. As God has said —

‘In my wrath I swore —  
“They will never enter upon my rest;”’

Although God’s work was finished at the creation of the world; for, in a passage referring to the seventh day, you will find these words —

‘God rested on the seventh day after all his work.’

On the other hand, we read in that passage —

‘They will never enter upon my rest.’

6 Since, then, there is still a promise that some will enter upon  
this rest, and since those who were first told the good news did  
7 not enter upon it, because of their disbelief, again God fixed a  
day. 'Today,' he said, speaking after a long interval through the  
mouth of David, in the passage already quoted —

'If today you hear God's voice  
Harden not your hearts.'

8 Now if Joshua had given 'rest' to the people, God would not  
9 have spoken of another and later day. There is, then, a Sabbath  
10 rest still awaiting God's people. For the person who enters upon  
God's rest do themselves rest after their work, just as God did.  
11 Let us, therefore, make every effort to enter upon that rest, so  
that none of us fall through such disbelief as that of which we  
12 have had an example. God's message is a living and active power,  
sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing its way until it  
penetrates soul and spirit — not the joints only but the marrow  
— and detecting the inmost thoughts and purposes of the mind.  
13 There is no created thing that can hide itself from the sight of  
God. Everything is exposed and laid bare before the eyes of him  
to whom we have to give account.

14 We have, then, in Jesus, the Son of God, a great high priest  
who has passed into the highest heaven; let us, therefore, hold  
15 fast to the faith which we have professed. Our high priest is not  
one unable to sympathize with our weaknesses, but one who  
has in every way been tempted, exactly as we have been, but  
16 without sinning. Therefore, let us draw near boldly to the throne  
of love, to find pity and love for the hour of need.

5 Every high priest, taken from among the people, is appointed as  
their representative in their relations with God, to offer both gifts  
2 and sacrifices in expiation of sins. And he is able to sympathize  
with the ignorant and deluded, since he is himself subject to  
3 weakness, and is therefore bound to offer sacrifices for sins, not  
4 only for the people, but equally so for himself. Nor does anyone  
take that high office on themselves, until they have been called

to do so by God, as Aaron was. In the same way, even the Christ 5  
did not take the honor of the high priesthood on himself, but he  
was appointed by him who said to him —

‘You are my Son; this day I have become your Father’;

and on another occasion also — 6

‘You are a priest for all time of the order of Melchizedek.’

Jesus, in the days of his earthly life, offered prayers and suppli- 7  
cations, with earnest cries and with tears, to him who was able  
to save him from death; and he was heard because of his devout  
submission. Son though he was, he learned obedience from his 8  
sufferings; and, being made perfect, he became to all those who 9  
obey him the source of eternal salvation, while God himself pro- 10  
nounced him a high priest of the order of Melchizedek.

Now on this subject I have much to say, but it is difficult to 11  
explain it to you, because you have shown yourselves so slow to  
learn. For whereas, considering the time that has elapsed, you 12  
ought to be teaching others, you still need some one to teach you  
the alphabet of the divine revelation, and need again to be fed 13  
with ‘milk’ instead of with ‘solid food.’ For everyone who still 14  
has to take ‘milk’ knows nothing of the teaching of righteous-  
ness; they are a mere infant. But ‘solid food’ is for Christians of 6  
mature faith — those whose faculties have been trained by prac-  
tice to distinguish right from wrong. Therefore, let us leave be-  
hind the elementary teaching about the Christ and press on to  
perfection, not always laying over again a foundation of repen- 2  
tance for a lifeless formality, of faith in God — teaching concern-  
ing baptisms and the laying on of hands, the resurrection of the 3  
dead and a final judgment. Yes and, with God’s help, we will. 4  
For if those who were once for all brought into the light, and  
learned to appreciate the gift from heaven, and came to share in 5  
the Holy Spirit, and learned to appreciate the beauty of the di-  
vine message, and the new powers of the coming age — if those, 6  
I say, fell away, it would be impossible to bring them again to

repentance; they would be crucifying the Son of God over again for themselves, and exposing him to open contempt. Ground  
7 that drinks in the showers that from time to time fall on it, and  
produces vegetation useful to those for whom it is tilled, receives  
8 a blessing from God; but, if it 'bears thorns and thistles,' it is re-  
garded as worthless, it is in danger of being 'cursed,' and its end  
will be the fire.

9 But about you, dear friends, even though we speak in this  
way, we are confident of better things — of things that point  
10 to your salvation. For God is not unjust; he will not forget the  
work that you did, and the love that you showed for his name, in  
sending help to your fellow Christians — as you are still doing.  
11 But our great desire is that every one of you should be equally  
earnest to attain to a full conviction that our hope will be ful-  
12 filled, and that you should keep that hope to the end. Then you  
will not show yourselves slow to learn, but you will copy those  
who, through faith and patience, are now entering upon the en-  
joyment of God's promises.

13 When God gave his promise to Abraham, since there was no  
one greater by whom he could swear, he swore by himself. His  
14 words were —

'I will assuredly bless you and increase your numbers.'

15 And so, after patiently waiting, Abraham obtained the fulfill-  
16 ment of God's promise. People, of course, swear by what is  
greater than themselves, and with them an oath is accepted  
17 as putting a matter beyond all dispute. And therefore God, in  
his desire to show, with unmistakable plainness, to those who  
were to enter on the enjoyment of what he had promised, the  
unchangeableness of his purpose, bound himself with an oath.  
18 For he intended us to find great encouragement in these two un-  
changeable things, which make it impossible for God to prove  
false — we, I mean, who fled for safety where we might lay hold  
19 on the hope set before us. This hope is an anchor for our souls,  
secure and strong, and it 'reaches into the sanctuary that lies be-  
20 hind the curtain,' where Jesus, our forerunner, has entered on  
our behalf, after being made for all time a high priest of the order



of Melchizedek.

### *Paramount Priesthood of the Christ*

IT WAS THIS MELCHIZEDEK, king of Salem and priest of the Most High God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and gave him his blessing; and it was to him that Abraham allotted a tithe of all the spoil. The meaning of his name is 'king of righteousness,' and besides that, he was also king of Salem, which means 'king of peace.' There is no record of his father, or mother, or lineage, nor again of any beginning of his days, or end of his life. In this he resembles the Son of God, and stands before us as a priest whose priesthood is continuous.

Consider, then the importance of this Melchizedek, to whom even the patriarch Abraham himself gave a tithe of the choicest spoils. Those descendants of Levi, who are from time to time appointed to the priesthood, are directed to collect tithes from the people in accordance with the law — that is from their own kindred, although they also are descended from Abraham. But Melchizedek, although not of this lineage, received tithes from Abraham, and gave his blessing to the man who had God's promises. Now no one can dispute that it is the superior who blesses the inferior. In the one case the tithes are received by people who are mortal; in the other case by one about whom there is the statement that his life still continues. Moreover, in a sense, even Levi, who is the receiver of the tithes, has, through Abraham, paid tithes; for Levi was still in the body of his ancestor when Melchizedek met Abraham.

If, then, perfection had been attainable through the Levitical priesthood — and it was under this priesthood that the people received the law — why was it still necessary that a priest of a different order should appear, a priest of the order of Melchizedek and not of the order of Aaron? With the change of the priesthood a change of the law became a necessity. And he of whom all this is said belonged to quite a different tribe, no member of which has ever served at the altar. For it is plain

15 that our Lord had sprung from the tribe of Judah, though of that  
 16 tribe Moses said nothing about their being priests. All this be-  
 17 comes even yet plainer when we remember that a new priest has  
 appeared, resembling Melchizedek, and that he was appointed,  
 not under a law regulating only earthly matters, but by virtue  
 of a life beyond the reach of death; for that is the meaning of the  
 declaration —

‘You are for all time a priest of the order of Melchizedek.’

18 On the one hand, we have the abolition of a previous regulation  
 19 as being both inefficient and useless (for the law never brought  
 anything to perfection); and, on the other hand, we have the  
 introduction of a better hope, which enables us to draw near to  
 20 God. Then again, the appointment of this new priest was ratified  
 21 by an oath, which is not so with the Levitical priests, but his  
 appointment was ratified by an oath, when God said to him —

‘The Lord has sworn, and will not change, “You are a priest  
 for all time.”’

22 And the oath shows the corresponding superiority of the  
 23 covenant of which Jesus is appointed the surety. Again, new  
 Levitical priests are continually being appointed, because death  
 24 prevents their remaining in office; but Jesus remains for all time,  
 and therefore the priesthood that he holds will never pass to  
 25 another. And that is why he is able to save perfectly those who  
 come to God through him, living for ever, as he does, to inter-  
 cede of their behalf.

26 This was the high priest that we needed — holy, innocent,  
 spotless, withdrawn from sinners, exalted above the highest  
 27 heaven, one who has no need to offer sacrifices daily as those  
 high priests have, first for their own sins, and then for those of  
 the people. For this he did once and for all, when he offered him-  
 28 self as the sacrifice. The law appoints as high priests men who  
 are weak, but the words of God’s oath, which was later than the  
 law, name the Son as, for all time, the perfect priest.

8 To sum up what I have been saying: — Such is the high priest  
 that we have, one who ‘has taken his seat at the right hand’ of

the throne of God's Majesty in heaven, where he ministers in the sanctuary, in that true tent set up by the Lord and not by man. Every high priest is appointed for the purpose of offering gifts and sacrifices to God; it follows, therefore, that this high priest must have some offering to make. If he were, however, still on earth, he would not even be a priest, since there are already priests who offer the gifts as the law directs. (These priests, it is true, are engaged in a service which is only a copy and shadow of the heavenly realities, as is shown by the directions given to Moses when he was about to construct the tent. 'Look to it,' are the words, 'that you make every part in accordance with the pattern shown you on the mountain.') But Jesus, as we see, has obtained a ministry as far excelling theirs, as the covenant of which he is the intermediary, based, as it is, on better promises, excels the former covenant. If that first covenant had been faultless, there would have been no occasion for a second. But, finding fault with the people, God says —

“A time is coming,” says the Lord,  
“When I will ratify a new covenant with the people of Israel  
and with the people of Judah —  
Not such a covenant as I made with their ancestors  
On the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out  
of the land of Egypt.  
For they did not abide by their covenant with me,  
And therefore I disregarded them,” says the Lord.  
“This is the covenant that I will make with the people of  
Israel  
After those days,” says the Lord.  
“I will impress my laws on their minds,  
And will inscribe them on their hearts;  
And I will be their God,  
And they will be my people.  
There will be no need for anyone to instruct their fellow citizen,  
Or for a person to say to their relatives ‘Learn to know  
the Lord’;

For everyone will know me,  
 From the lowest to the highest.  
 12 For I will be merciful to their wrong-doings,  
 And I will no longer remember their sins.”

13 By speaking of a ‘new’ covenant, God at once renders the former covenant obsolete; and whatever becomes obsolete and loses its force is virtually annulled.

### *The New Revelation and the Old*

9 IT IS TRUE THAT EVEN THE FIRST COVENANT HAD ITS REGULATIONS FOR di-  
 vine worship, and its sanctuary — though only a material one.  
 2 For a tent was constructed, with an outer part which contained  
 the stand for the lamps, and the table, and the consecrated bread.  
 3 This is called the sanctuary. The part of the tent behind the sec-  
 4 ond curtain is called the inner sanctuary. In it is the gold incense-  
 altar, and the ark containing the covenant, completely covered  
 with gold. In the ark is a gold casket containing the manna,  
 Aaron’s rod that budded, and the tablets on which the covenant  
 5 was written; while above it, and overshadowing the cover on  
 which atonement was made, are the cherubim of the presence.  
 6 Now is not the time to discuss these things in detail. Such, then,  
 was the arrangement of the tent. Into the outer part priests are  
 7 constantly going, in the discharge of their sacred duties; but  
 into the inner only the high priest goes, and that but once a year,  
 and never without taking the blood of a victim, which he offers  
 on his own behalf, and on behalf of the errors of the people. By  
 8 this the Holy Spirit is teaching that the way into the sanctuary  
 was hidden, as long as the outer part of the tent still remained.  
 9 For that was only a type, to continue down to the present time;  
 and, in keeping with it, both gifts and sacrifices are offered,  
 though incapable of satisfying the conscience of the worshiper;  
 10 the whole system being concerned only with food and drink  
 and various ablutions — external ceremonials imposed until the  
 coming of the new order.

11 But, when Christ came, he appeared as high priest of that

better system which was established; and he entered through that nobler and more perfect 'tent,' not made by human hands — that is to say, not a part of this present creation. Nor was it with the blood of goats and calves, but with his own blood, that he entered, once and for all, into the sanctuary, and obtained our eternal deliverance. For, if the blood of goats and bulls, and the sprinkling of the ashes of a heifer, purify those who have been defiled (as far as ceremonial purification goes), how much more will the blood of the Christ, who, through his eternal Spirit, offered himself up to God, as a victim without blemish, purify our consciences from a lifeless formality, and fit us for the service of the living God! And that is why he is the intermediary of a new covenant; in order that, as a death has taken place to effect a deliverance from the offenses committed under the first covenant, those who have received the call may obtain the eternal inheritance promised to them. Whenever such a covenant as a will is in question, the death of the testator must of necessity be alleged. For such a covenant takes effect only on death, it does not come into force as long as the testator is alive. This explains why even the first covenant was not ratified without the shedding of blood. For, when every command had been announced to all the people by Moses in accordance with the law, he took the blood of the calves and of the goats, with water, scarlet wool, and a bunch of hyssop, and sprinkled even the book of the law, as well as all the people, saying, as he did so — "This is the blood that renders valid the covenant which God has commanded to be made with you." And in the same way he also sprinkled with the blood the tent and all the things that were used in public worship. Indeed, under the law, almost everything is purified with blood; and, unless blood is shed, no forgiveness is to be obtained.

While, then, it was necessary for the copies of the heavenly realities to be purified by such means as these, the heavenly realities themselves required better sacrifices. For it was not into a sanctuary made by human hands, which merely foreshadowed the true one, that Christ entered, but into heaven itself, so that he might now appear in the presence of God on our behalf. Nor yet was it to offer himself many times, as year after year the high priest entered the sanctuary with an offering of blood — but not

26 his own blood; for then Christ would have had to undergo death  
 many times since the creation of the world. But now, once and  
 27 for all, at the close of the age, he has appeared, in order to abolish  
 sin by the sacrifice of himself. And, as it is ordained for people  
 28 to die but once (death being followed by judgment), so it is with  
 the Christ. He was offered up once and for all, to 'bear away the  
 sins of many'; and the second time he will appear — but without  
 any burden of sin — to those who are waiting for him, to bring  
 salvation.

10 The law, though able to foreshadow the better system which was  
 coming, never had its actual substance. Its priests, with those  
 sacrifices which they offer continuously year after year, can never  
 2 make those who come to worship perfect. Otherwise, would  
 not the offering of these sacrifices have been abandoned, as the  
 worshipers, having been once purified, would have had their  
 3 consciences clear from sins? But, on the contrary, these sacrifices  
 4 recall their sins to mind year after year. For the blood of bulls  
 5 and goats is powerless to remove sins. That is why, when he was  
 coming into the world, the Christ declared —

'Sacrifice and offering you do not desire, but you provide for  
 me a body;

6 You take no pleasure in burnt offerings and sacrifices  
 for sin.

7 So I said, "See, I have come' (as is written of me in the pages  
 of the book),

"To do your will, God."

8 First come the words — 'You do not desire, nor do you take  
 pleasure in, sacrifices, offerings, burnt offerings, and sacrifices  
 9 for sin' (offerings regularly made under the law), and then there  
 is added — 'See, I have come to do your will.' The former sac-  
 10 rifices are set aside to be replaced by the latter. And it is in the  
 fulfillment of the will of God that we have been purified by the  
 11 sacrifice, once and for all, of the body of Jesus Christ. Every oth-  
 er priest stands day after day at his ministrations, and offers the  
 same sacrifices over and over again — sacrifices that can never

take sins away. But, this priest, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins, which should serve for all time, 'took his seat at the right hand of God,' and has since then been waiting 'for his enemies to be put as a stool for his feet.' By a single offering he has made perfect for all time those who are being purified. We have also the testimony of the Holy Spirit. For, after saying —

“This is the covenant that I will make with them  
After those days,” says the Lord;  
“I will impress my laws on their hearts,  
And will inscribe them on their minds,”

then we have —

‘And their sins and their iniquities I will no longer remember.’

And, when these are forgiven, there is no further need of an offering for sin.

### *Encouragement and Warning*

THEREFORE, friends, since we may enter the sanctuary with confidence, in virtue of the blood of Jesus, by the way which he inaugurated for us — a new and living way, a way through the sanctuary curtain (that is, his human nature); and, since we have in him ‘a great priest set over the house of God,’ let us draw near to God in all sincerity of heart and in perfect faith, with our hearts purified by the sprinkled blood from all consciousness of wrong, and with our bodies washed with pure water. Let us maintain the confession of our hope unshaken, for he who has given us his promise will not fail us. Let us vie with one another in a rivalry of love and noble actions. And let us not, as some do, cease to meet together; but, on the contrary, let us encourage one another, and all the more, now that you see the day drawing near. Remember, if we sin willfully after we have gained a full knowledge of the truth, there can be no further sacrifice for sin; there is only a fearful anticipation of judgment, and a burning

28 indignation which will destroy all opponents. When someone  
 29 disregarded the law of Moses, they were, on the evidence of two  
 or three witnesses, put to death without pity. How much worse  
 then, think you, will be the punishment deserved by those who  
 have trampled underfoot the Son of God, who have treated the  
 blood that rendered the covenant valid — the blood by which  
 they were purified — as if it were not holy, and who have out-  
 30 raged the Spirit of love? We know who it was that said —

‘It is for me to avenge, I will requite’;

and again —

‘The Lord will judge his people.’

31 It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.  
 32 Call to mind those early days in which, after you had re-  
 ceived the light, you patiently underwent a long and painful  
 33 conflict. Sometimes, in consequence of the taunts and injuries  
 heaped on you, you became a public spectacle; and sometimes  
 you suffered through having shown yourselves to be the friends  
 of people who were in the same position in which you had been.  
 34 For you not only sympathised with those who were in prison,  
 but you even took the confiscation of your possessions joyfully,  
 knowing, as you did, that you had in yourselves a greater pos-  
 35 session and a lasting one. Do not, therefore, abandon the confi-  
 dence that you have gained, for it has a great reward awaiting  
 36 it. You still have need of patient endurance, in order that, when  
 you have done God’s will, you may obtain the fulfillment of  
 his promise.

37 ‘For there is indeed but a very little while  
 Ere He who is coming will have come, without delay;  
 38 And through faith the righteous will find life,  
 But, if anyone draws back, my heart can find no pleasure  
 in them.’

39 But we do not belong to those who draw back, to their ruin, but  
 to those who have faith, to the saving of their souls.



*Heroes of Faith*

FAITH IS THE REALIZATION OF THINGS HOPED FOR — the proof of 11  
things not seen. And it was for faith that the people of old were 2  
renowned. Faith enables us to perceive that the universe was 3  
created at the bidding of God — so that we know that what we 4  
see was not made out of visible things. Faith made the sacrifice  
which Abel offered to God a better sacrifice than Cain's, and 5  
won him renown as a righteous man, God himself establishing  
his renown by accepting his gifts; and it is by the example of his 6  
faith that Abel, though dead, still speaks. Faith led to Enoch's  
removal from earth, so that he might not experience death. 'He  
could not be found because God had removed him.' For, before  
his removal, he was renowned as having pleased God; but with- 7  
out faith it is impossible to please him, for he who comes to God  
must believe that God exists, and that he rewards those who  
seek for him.

It was faith that enabled Noah, after he had received the 8  
divine warning about what could not then be foreseen, to build,  
in reverent obedience, an ark in which to save his family. By his  
faith he condemned the world, and became possessed of that  
righteousness which follows on faith.

It was faith that enabled Abraham to obey the call that he 9  
received, and to set out for the place which he was afterwards  
to obtain as his own; and he set out not knowing where he was  
going. It was faith that made him go to live as an emigrant in 10  
the promised land — as in a strange country — living there in  
tents with Isaac and Jacob, who shared the promise with him.  
For he was looking for the city with the sure foundations, whose  
architect and builder is God.

Again, it was faith that enabled Sarah to conceive (though 11  
she was past the age for child-bearing), because she felt sure that  
he who had given her the promise would not fail her. And so 12  
from one man — and that when his powers were dead — there  
sprang a people as numerous 'as the stars in the heavens or the  
countless grains of sand on the shore.'

All these died sustained by faith. They did not obtain the 13  
promised blessings, but they saw them from a distance and

14 welcomed the sight, and they acknowledged themselves to be  
15 only aliens and strangers on the earth. Those who speak like  
16 this show plainly that they are seeking their homeland. If they  
17 had been thinking of the land that they had left, they could have  
18 found opportunities to return. But no, they were longing for a  
better, a heavenly, land! And therefore God was not ashamed to  
be called their God; indeed he had already prepared them a city.  
It was faith that enabled Abraham, when put to the test, to offer  
Isaac as a sacrifice — he who had received the promises offering  
up his only son, of whom it had been said —

‘It is through Isaac that there will be descendants to bear  
your name.’

19 For he argued that God was even able to raise a man from the  
20 dead — and indeed, figuratively speaking, Abraham did re-  
ceive Isaac back from the dead. It was faith that enabled Isaac  
to bless Jacob and Esau, even with regard to the future. Faith  
21 enabled Jacob, when dying, to give his blessing to each of the  
sons of Joseph, and ‘to bow himself in worship as he leant on  
22 the top of his staff.’ Faith caused Joseph, when his end was near,  
to speak of the future migration of the Israelites, and to give in-  
23 structions with regard to his bones. Faith caused the parents of  
Moses to hide the child for three months after his birth, for they  
saw that he was a beautiful child; and they would not respect  
24 the king’s order. It was faith that caused Moses, when he was  
grown up, to refuse the title of ‘son of a daughter of Pharaoh.’  
25 He preferred sharing the hardships of God’s people to enjoying  
the short-lived pleasures of sin. For he counted ‘the reproaches  
26 that are heaped on the Christ’ of greater value than the treasures  
of Egypt, looking forward, as he did, to the reward awaiting  
27 him. Faith caused him to leave Egypt, though undaunted by the  
king’s anger, for he was strengthened in his endurance by the vi-  
28 sion of the invisible God. Faith led him to institute the Passover  
and the sprinkling of the blood, so that the Destroyer might  
29 not touch the eldest children of the Israelites. Faith enabled the  
people to cross the Red Sea, as if it had been dry land, while the  
Egyptians, when they attempted to do so, were drowned. Faith

caused the walls of Jericho to fall after being encircled for seven days. Faith saved Rahab, the prostitute, from perishing with the unbelievers, after she had entertained the spies with friendliness.

Need I add anything more? Time would fail me if I attempted to relate the stories of Gideon, Barak, Samson, and Jephthah, and those of David, Samuel, and the prophets. By their faith they subdued kingdoms, ruled righteously, gained the fulfillment of God's promises, 'shut the mouths of lions,' quelled the fury of the flames, escaped the edge of the sword, found strength in the hour of weakness, displayed their prowess in war, and routed hostile armies. Women received back their dead raised to life. Some were tortured on the wheel, and refused release in order that they might rise to a better life. Others had to face taunts and blows, and even chains and imprisonment. They were stoned to death, they were tortured, they were swan asunder, they were put to the sword; they wandered about clothed in the skins of sheep or goats, destitute, persecuted, ill-used — people of whom the world was not worthy — roaming in lonely places, and on the mountains, and in caves and holes in the ground. Yet, though they all won renown by their faith, they did not obtain the final fulfillment of God's promise; since God had in view some better thing for us, so that they would only reach perfection together with us.

Seeing, therefore, that there is on every side of us such a throng of witnesses, let us also lay aside everything that hinders us, and the sin that clings about us, and run with patient endurance the race that lies before us, our eyes fixed on Jesus, the leader and perfect example of our faith, who, for the joy that lay before him, endured the cross, heedless of its shame, and now 'has taken his seat at the right hand' of the throne of God. Weigh well the example of him who had to endure such opposition from 'people who were sinning against themselves,' so that you should not grow weary or faint-hearted. You have not yet, in your struggle with sin, resisted to the death; and you have forgotten the encouraging words which are addressed to you as God's chil-

dren —

6       ‘My child, think not lightly of the Lord’s discipline,  
           Do not despond when he rebukes you;  
       For it is him whom he loves that he disciplines,  
           And he chastises every child whom he acknowledges.’

7       It is for your discipline that you have to endure all this. God  
 8       is dealing with you as his children. For where is there a child  
 9       whom his father does not discipline? If you are left without that  
 10      discipline, in which all children share, it shows that you are bas-  
 11      tards, and not true children. Further, when our earthly fathers  
 12      disciplined us, we respected them. Should we not, then, much  
 13      rather yield submission to the Father of souls, and live? Our fa-  
       thers disciplined us for only a short time and as seemed best to  
       them; but God disciplines us for our true good, to enable us to  
       share his holiness. No discipline is pleasant at the time; on the  
       contrary, it is painful. But afterwards its fruit is seen in the peace-  
       fulness of a righteous life which is the lot of those who have been  
       trained under it. Therefore ‘lift again the down-dropped hands  
       and straighten the weakened knees; make straight paths for  
       your feet,’ so that the lame limb may not be put out of joint, but  
       rather be cured.

### *Conclusion*

14      TRY EARNESTLY TO LIVE AT PEACE WITH EVERYONE, and to attain to that  
 15      purity without which no one will see the Lord. Take care that  
 16      no one fails to use the loving help of God, ‘that no bitterness is  
 17      allowed to take root and spring up, and cause trouble,’ and so  
       poison the whole community. Take care that no one becomes im-  
       moral, or irreligious like Esau, who sold his birthright for a sin-  
       gle meal. For you know that even afterwards, when he wished to  
       claim his father’s blessing, he was rejected — for he never found  
       an opportunity to repair his error — though he begged for the  
       blessing with tears.

18      It is not to tangible ‘flaming fire’ that you have drawn near,  
 19      nor to ‘gloom, and darkness, and storm, and the blast of a trum-

pet, and an audible voice.' Those who heard that voice entreated that they might hear no more, for they could not bear to think of the command — 'If even an animal touches the mountain, it is to be stoned to death;' and so fearful was the sight that Moses said — 'I tremble with fear.' No, but it is to Mount Zion that you have drawn near, the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, to countless hosts of angels, to the festal gathering and assemblage of God's firstborn whose names are enrolled in heaven, to God the judge of all people, to the spirits of the righteous who have attained perfection, to Jesus, the intermediary of a new covenant, and to the sprinkled blood that tells of better things than the blood of Abel. Beware how you refuse to hear him who is speaking. For, if the Israelites did not escape punishment, when they refused to listen to him who taught them on earth the divine will, far worse will it be for us, if we turn away from him who is teaching us from heaven. Then his voice shook the earth, but now his declaration is —

'Still once more I will cause not only the earth to tremble, but also the heavens.'

And those words 'still once more' indicate the passing away of all that is shaken — that is, of all created things — in order that only what is unshaken may remain. Therefore, let us, who have received a kingdom that cannot be shaken, be thankful, and so offer acceptable worship to God, with awe and the deepest respect. For our God is 'a consuming fire.'

Let your love for the Lord's followers continue. Do not neglect to show hospitality; for, through being hospitable, people have all unawares entertained angels. Remember the prisoners, as if you were their fellow prisoners, and the oppressed, not forgetting that you also are still in the body. Let marriage be honored by all and the married life be pure; for God will judge those who are immoral and those who commit adultery. Do not let your conduct be ruled by the love of money. Be content with what you have, for God himself has said —

'I will never forsake you, nor will I ever abandon you.'

6 Therefore we may say with confidence —

‘The Lord is my helper, I will not be afraid.  
What can mere people do to me?’

7 Do not forget your leaders, who told you God’s message. Recall the close of their lives, and imitate their faith.

8 Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and today — yes, and for  
9 ever! Do not let yourselves be carried away by the various novel  
forms of teaching. It is better to rely for spiritual strength on the  
divine help, than on regulations regarding food; for those whose  
lives are guided by such regulations have not found them of ser-  
vice. We are not without an altar; but it is one at which those who  
10 still worship in the tent have no right to eat. The bodies of those  
11 animals whose blood is brought by the high priest into the sanc-  
12 tuary, as an offering for sin, are burnt outside the camp. And so  
Jesus, also, to purify the people by his own blood, suffered out-  
side the gate. Therefore let us go out to him ‘outside the camp,’  
13 bearing the same reproaches as he; for here we have no perma-  
14 nent city, but are looking for the city that is to be. Through him  
15 let us offer, as our sacrifice, continual praise to God — an offer-  
16 ing from lips that glorify his name. Never forget to do kindly acts  
and to share what you have with others, for such sacrifices are  
17 acceptable to God. Obey your leaders, and submit to their con-  
trol, for they are watching over your souls, since they will have  
to render an account, so that they may do it with joy, and not in  
sorrow. That would not be to your advantage.

18 Pray for us, for we are sure that our consciences are clear, since  
19 our wish is to be occupied with what is good. And I the more  
earnestly ask for your prayers, so that I may be restored to you  
the sooner.

20 May God, the source of all peace, who brought back from the  
dead him who, ‘by virtue of the blood that rendered valid the  
unchangeable covenant, is the great shepherd of God’s Sheep,’  
21 Jesus, our Lord — may God make you perfect in everything that  
is good, so that you may be able to do his will. May he bring

out in us all that is pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be all glory for ever and ever. Amen.

I beg you, friends, to bear with these words of advice. For I have written only very briefly to you. 22

You will be glad to hear that our friend, Timothy, has been set free. If he comes here soon, we will visit you together. 23

Give our greeting to all your leaders, and to all Christ's people. Our friends from Italy send their greetings to you. 24

May God bless you all. 25





# James

*The Letter from James*

## *Greeting*

**J**AMES, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, greets 1  
the twelve tribes that are living abroad.

## *Advice on Various Subjects*

MY FRIENDS, whatever may be the temptations that beset you 2  
from time to time, always regard them as a reason for rejoicing,  
knowing, as you do, that the testing of your faith develops 3  
endurance. And let endurance do its work perfectly, so that you 4  
may be altogether perfect, and in no respect deficient.

If one of you is deficient in wisdom, let them ask wisdom 5  
from the God who gives freely to everyone without reproaches,  
and it will be given to them. But let them ask with confidence, 6  
never doubting; for the person who doubts is like a wave of the  
sea driven here and there at the mercy of the wind — Such a 7  
person must not expect that they will receive anything from the  
Lord, vacillating as they are, irresolute at every turn. 8

Let a follower in humble circumstances be proud of their 9  
exalted position, but a rich follower of their humiliation; for the  
rich will pass away 'like the flower of the grass.' As the sun rises, 10  
and the hot wind blows, 'the grass withers, its flower fades,' and  
all its beauty is gone. So is it with the rich . In the midst of their 11  
pursuits they will come to an untimely end.

Blessed is the person who remains firm under temptation, 12  
for, when they have stood the test, they will receive the crown of

13 life, which the Lord has promised to those who love him. Let no  
one say, when they are tempted, "It is God who is tempting me!"  
For God, who cannot be tempted to do wrong, does not himself  
14 tempt anyone. A person is in every case tempted by their own  
15 passions — allured and enticed by them. Then passion conceives  
and gives birth to sin, and sin, on reaching maturity, brings forth  
16 death. Do not be deceived, my dear friends. Every good thing  
17 given us, and every perfect gift, is from above, and comes down  
to us from the Maker of the lights in the heavens, who is himself  
18 never subject to change or to eclipse. Because he so willed, he  
gave us life, through the message of the truth, so that we should  
be, as it were, an earnest of still further creations.

19 Mark this, my dear friends — Let everyone be quick to listen,  
20 slow to speak, and slow to get angry; for human anger does not  
forward the righteous purpose of God. Therefore, have done  
21 with all filthiness and whatever wickedness still remains, and in  
a humble spirit receive that message which has been planted in  
22 your hearts and is able to save your souls. Put that message into  
practice, and do not merely listen to it — deceiving yourselves.  
23 For, when anyone listens to it and does not practice it, they like a  
24 person looking at their own face in a mirror. They look at them-  
selves, then go on their way, but the person who looks careful-  
25 ly into the perfect law, the law of freedom, and continues to do  
so, not listening to it and then forgetting it, but putting it into  
26 practice — that person will be blessed in what they do. When a  
person appears to be religious, yet does not bridle their tongue,  
but imposes on their own conscience, that person's religious ob-  
27 servances are valueless. That religious observance which is pure  
and spotless in the eyes of God our Father is this — to visit or-  
phans and widows in their trouble, and to keep oneself uncon-  
taminated by the world.

*Warning on Various Subjects*

MY FRIENDS, are you really trying to combine faith in Jesus Christ, 2  
 our glorified Lord, with the worship of rank? Suppose a visi- 2  
 tor should enter your Synagogue, with gold rings and in grand  
 clothes, and suppose a poor man should come in also, in shab- 3  
 by clothes, and you are deferential to the visitor who is wearing  
 grand clothes, and say — “There is a good seat for you here,” 3  
 but to the poor man — “You must stand; or sit down there by  
 my footstool,” Is not that to make distinctions among your- 4  
 selves, and show yourselves prejudiced judges? Listen, my dear 5  
 friends. Has not God chosen those who are poor in the things  
 of this world to be rich through their faith, and to possess the  
 kingdom which he has promised to those who love him? But 6  
 you — you insult the poor man! Is not it the rich who oppress 6  
 you? Is not it they who drag you into law courts? Is not it they 7  
 who malign that honorable name which has been bestowed on  
 you? Yet, if you keep the royal law which runs — ‘You must love 8  
 your neighbor as you love yourself,’ you are doing right; but,  
 if you worship rank, you commit a sin, and stand convicted by 9  
 that same law of being offenders against it. For a person who has 10  
 laid the law, as a whole, to heart, but has failed in one particular,  
 is accountable for breaking all its provisions. He who said ‘You 11  
 must not commit adultery’ also said ‘You must not murder.’ If,  
 then, you commit murder but not adultery, you are still an of- 12  
 fender against the law. Therefore, speak and act as people who  
 are to be judged by the ‘law of freedom.’ For there will be justice 13  
 without mercy for the person who has not acted mercifully. Mer-  
 cy triumphs over Justice.

My friends, what is the good of a person’s saying that they 14  
 have faith, if they do not prove it by actions? Can such faith  
 save them? Suppose some brother or sister should be in need of 15  
 clothes and of daily bread, and one of you were to say to them  
 — “Go, and peace be with you; find warmth and food for your- 16  
 selves,” and yet you were not to give them the necessaries of  
 life, what good would it be to them? In just the same way faith, 17  
 if not followed by actions, is, by itself, a lifeless thing. Some one, 18  
 indeed, may say — “You are a man of faith, and I am a man of

action.”

19 “Then show me your faith,” I reply, “apart from any actions,  
and I will show you my faith by my actions.” It is a part of your  
20 faith, is it not, that there is one God? Good; yet even the demons  
have that faith, and tremble at the thought. Now do you really  
21 want to understand, fool, how it is that faith without actions  
leads to nothing? Look at our ancestor, Abraham. Was not it the  
22 result of his actions that he was pronounced righteous after he  
had offered his son, Isaac, on the altar? You see how, in his case,  
23 faith and actions went together; that his faith was perfected as  
the result of his actions; and that in this way the words of scrip-  
24 ture came true — “Abraham believed God, and that was regard-  
ed by God as righteousness,” and “He was called the friend of  
25 God.” You see, then, that it is as the result of their actions that a  
person is pronounced righteous, and not of their faith only. Was  
26 not it the same with the prostitute, Rahab? Was not it as the re-  
sult of her actions that she was pronounced righteous, after she  
had welcomed the messengers and helped them escape by? Ex-  
actly as a body is dead without a spirit, so faith is dead without  
actions.

3 I do not want many of you, my friends, to become teachers,  
knowing, as you do, that we who teach will be judged by a more  
2 severe standard than others. We often make mistakes, every one  
of us. Anyone who does not make mistakes when speaking is  
indeed a perfect person, able to bridle their whole body as well.  
3 When we put bits into horses’ mouths, to make them obey us,  
4 we control the rest of their bodies so. Again, think of ships. Large  
as they are, and even when driven by fierce winds, they are con-  
trolled by a very small rudder and steered in whatever direction  
5 the man at the helm may determine. So is it with the tongue.  
Small as it is, it is a great boaster. Think how tiny a spark may set  
6 the largest forest ablaze! And the tongue is like a spark. Among  
the members of our body it proves itself a world of mischief;  
it contaminates the whole body; it sets the wheels of life on fire,  
7 and is itself set on fire by the flames of Gehenna. For while all  
sorts of beasts and birds, and of reptiles and creatures in the sea,  
8 are tameable, and actually have been tamed by man, no human

being can tame the tongue. It is a restless plague! It is charged with deadly poison! With it we bless our Lord and Father, and with it we curse people who are made 'in God's likeness.' From the very same mouth come blessings and curses! My friends, it is not right that this should be so. Does a spring give both good and bad water from the same source? Can a fig tree, my friends, bear olives? Or a vine bear figs? No, nor can a brackish well give good water.

Who among you claims to be wise and intelligent? Let them show that their actions are the outcome of a good life lived in the humility of true wisdom. But, while you harbor envy and bitterness and a spirit of rivalry in your hearts, do not boast or lie to the detriment of the truth. That is not the wisdom which comes from above; no, it is earthly, animal, devilish. For, where envy and rivalry exist, there you will also find disorder and all kinds of base actions. But the wisdom from above is, before every thing else, pure; then peace-loving, gentle, open to conviction, rich in compassion and good deeds, and free from partiality and insincerity. And righteousness, its fruit, is sown in peace by those who work for peace.

What is the cause of the fighting and quarreling that goes on among you? Is not it to be found in the desires which are always at war within you? You crave, yet do not obtain. You murder and rage, yet cannot gain your end. You quarrel and fight. You do not obtain, because you do not ask. You ask, yet do not receive, because you ask for a wrong purpose — to spend what you get on your pleasures. Unfaithful people! Do not you know that to be friends with the world means to be at enmity with God? Therefore whoever chooses to be friends with the world makes himself an enemy to God. Do you suppose there is no meaning in the passage of scripture which asks — 'Is envy to result from the longings of the Spirit which God has implanted within you?' No; the gift that God gives is for a nobler end; and that is why it is said — 'God is opposed to the haughty, but gives help to the humble.' Therefore submit to God; but resist the devil, and he will flee from you. Draw near to God, and he will draw near to

9 you. Make your hands clean, you sinners; and your hearts pure,  
10 you vacillator! Grieve, mourn, and lament! Let your laughter  
11 be turned to mourning, and your happiness to gloom! Humble  
yourselves before the Lord, and he will exalt you. Do not dispar-  
age one another, friends. The person who disparages others, or  
passes judgment on them, disparages the law and passes judg-  
ment on the law. But, if you pass judgment on the law, you are  
12 not obeying it, but judging it. There is only one lawgiver and  
judge — he who has the power both to save and to destroy. But  
who are you that pass judgment on your neighbor?

13 Listen to me, you who say ‘Today or tomorrow we will go to  
such and such a town, spend a year there, and trade, and make  
14 money,’ And yet you do not know what your life will be like to-  
morrow! For you are but a mist appearing for a little while and  
15 then disappearing. You ought, rather, to say ‘If the Lord wills,  
16 we will live and do this or that.’ But, as it is, you are constantly  
17 boasting presumptuously! All such boasting is wicked. The per-  
son, then, who knows what is right but fails to do it — that is sin  
in them.

5 Listen to me, you rich people, weep and wail for the miseries  
2 that are coming upon you! Your riches have wasted away, and  
3 your clothes have become moth-eaten. Your gold and silver are  
rusted; and the rust on them will be evidence against you, and  
will eat into your flesh. It was fire, so to speak, that you stored  
4 up for yourselves in these last days. I tell you, the wages of the  
laborers who mowed your fields, which you have been fraudu-  
lently keeping back, are crying out against you, and the outcries  
of your reapers have reached the ears of the Lord of Hosts! You  
5 have lived on earth a life of extravagance and luxury; you have  
6 indulged your fancies in a time of bloodshed. You have con-  
demned, you have murdered, the righteous one! Must not God  
be opposed to you?

*Concluding Appeal*

BE PATIENT, then, friends, until the coming of the Lord. Even the farmer has to wait for the precious fruit of the earth, watching over it patiently, until it has had the spring and summer rains. And you must be patient also, and not be discouraged; for the Lord's coming is near. Do not make complaints against one another, friends, or judgment will be passed on you. The judge is already standing at the door! Friends, as an example of the patient endurance of suffering, take the prophets who spoke in the name of the Lord. We count those who displayed such endurance blessed! You have heard, too, of Job's endurance, and have seen what the Lord's purpose was, for 'the Lord is full of pity and compassion.'

Above all things, my friends, never take an oath, either by heaven, or by earth, or by anything else. With you let 'Yes' suffice for yes, and 'No' for no, so that you may escape condemnation.

If any of you is in trouble, let them pray; if anyone is happy, let them sing hymns. If anyone of you is ill, let him send for the officers of the church, and let them pray over them, after anointing them with oil in the name of the Lord. The prayer offered in faith will save the person who is sick, and the Lord will raise them from their bed; and if they have committed sins, they will be forgiven. Therefore, confess your sins to one another and pray for one another, so that you may be cured. Great is the power of a good person's fervent prayer. Elijah was only human like ourselves, but, when he prayed fervently that it might not rain, no rain fell on the land for three years and a half. And, when he prayed again, the clouds brought rain, and the land bore crops. My friends, should one of you be led astray from the truth, and someone bring them back again, be sure that the person who brings a sinner back from their mistaken ways will save that person's soul from death, and throw a veil over countless sins.





# 1 Peter

*Peter's First Letter*

## *Introduction*

TO THE PEOPLE OF GOD WHO ARE LIVING ABROAD, dispersed 1  
throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Roman Asia, and 2  
Bithynia, and who were chosen in accordance with the  
foreknowledge of God the Father, through the consecration of  
the Spirit, to learn obedience, and to be purified by the  
sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ, from Peter, an apostle of  
Jesus Christ. May blessing and peace be yours in ever  
increasing measure.

## *The Christian's Hope of Salvation*

BLESSED IS THE GOD AND FATHER OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST, who has, 3  
in his great mercy, through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from  
the dead, given us the new life of undying hope, that promis- 4  
es an inheritance, imperishable, stainless, unfading, which has  
been reserved for you in heaven — for you who, through faith, 5  
are being guarded by the power of God, awaiting a salvation  
that is ready to be revealed in the last days. At the thought of 6  
this you are full of exultation, though (if it has been necessary)  
you have suffered for the moment somewhat from various trials;  
that the genuineness of your faith — a thing far more precious 7  
than gold, which is perishable, yet has to be tested by fire — may  
win praise and glory and honor at the appearing of Jesus Christ.  
Though you have never seen him, yet you love him; though 8  
you do not even now see him, yet you believe in him, and ex-  
ult with a triumphant happiness too great for words, as you re- 9

ceive the reward of your faith in the salvation of your souls! It  
10 was this salvation that the prophets, who spoke long ago of the  
blessing intended for you, sought, and strove to comprehend;  
11 as they strove to discern what that time could be, to which the  
Spirit of Christ within them was pointing, when foretelling the  
sufferings that Christ would have to endure, and the glories that  
12 would follow. And it was revealed to them that it was not for  
themselves, but for you, that they were acting as Ministers of the  
truths which have now been told to you, by those who, with the  
help of the Holy Spirit sent from heaven, have brought you the  
good news — truths into which even angels long to look.

### *The Christian's Character*

13 THEREFORE CONCENTRATE YOUR MINDS, with the strictest self-con-  
control, and fix your hopes on the blessing that is coming for you at  
14 the appearing of Jesus Christ. Be like obedient children; do not  
let your lives be shaped by the passions which once swayed you  
15 in the days of your ignorance, but in your whole life show your-  
selves to be holy, after the pattern of the Holy One from whom  
16 you received your call. For scripture says —

‘You will be holy, because I am holy.’

17 And since you call on him as ‘Father,’ who judges everyone im-  
partially by what he has done, let respectful awe be the spirit of  
18 your lives during the time of your stay on earth. For you know  
that it was not by perishable things, such as silver and gold,  
that you were ransomed from the aimless way of living which  
19 was handed down to you from your ancestors, but by precious  
blood, as it were of a lamb, unblemished and spotless, the blood  
20 of Christ. Destined for this before the beginning of the world, he  
21 has been revealed in these last days for your sakes, who, through  
him, are faithful to God who raised him from the dead and gave  
him honor, so that your faith and hope are now in God.

22 Now that, by your obedience to the truth, you have purified  
your lives, so that there is growing up among you a genuine  
affection, love one another earnestly with all your hearts; since

your new life has come, not from perishable, but imperishable, 23  
seed, through the message of the Everliving God. For — 24

‘All earthly life is but as grass,  
and all its splendor as the flower of grass.  
The grass fades,  
its flower falls,  
but the teaching of the Lord remains for ever.’ 25

And that is the teaching of the good news which has been told to  
you. Now that you have done with all malice, all deceitfulness, 2  
insincerity, jealous feelings, and all backbiting, like newly born 2  
infants, crave pure spiritual milk, so that you may be enabled by  
it to grow until you attain salvation — since ‘you have found by 3  
experience that the Lord is kind.’ Come to him, then, as to a liv- 4  
ing stone, rejected, indeed, by men, but in God’s eyes choice and  
precious; and, as living stones, form yourselves into a spiritual 5  
house, to be a consecrated priesthood, for the offering of spiritu-  
al sacrifices that will be acceptable to God through Jesus Christ.  
For there is a passage of scripture that runs — 6

‘See, I am placing in Zion a choice and precious corner-stone;  
And those who believe in him will have no cause for  
shame.’

It is to you, then, who believe in him that he is precious, but to 7  
those who do not believe he is ‘a stone which, though rejected  
by the builders, has now itself become the corner-stone,’ and 8  
‘a stumbling-block, and a rock which will prove a hindrance.’  
They stumble because they do not accept the message. This was 9  
the fate destined for them. But you are ‘a chosen race, a royal  
priesthood, a consecrated nation, God’s own people,’ entrusted  
with the proclamation of the goodness of him who called you  
out of darkness into his wonderful light. Once you were ‘not 10  
a people,’ but now you are ‘God’s people’; once you ‘had not  
found mercy,’ but now you ‘have found mercy.’

*Practical Appeals in view of the Dangers of the  
Times.*

11 DEAR FRIENDS, I beg you, as pilgrims and strangers on earth, to  
12 refrain from indulging the cravings of your earthly nature, for  
they make war on the soul. Let your daily life among the Gen-  
tiles be so upright, that, whenever they malign you as evil-doers,  
they may learn, as they watch, from the uprightness of your con-  
duct, to praise God 'at the time when he will visit them.'

13 Submit to all human institutions for the Lord's sake, alike  
14 to the emperor as the supreme authority, and to governors as  
sent by him to punish evil-doers and to commend those who do  
15 right. For God's will is this — that you should silence the igno-  
16 rance of foolish people by doing what is right. Act as free people,  
yet not using your freedom as those do who make it a cloak for  
17 wickedness, but as Servants of God. Show honor to everyone,  
love the Lord's followers, 'revere God, honor the emperor.'

18 Those of you who are domestic servants should always be  
submissive and respectful to their masters, not only to those who  
are good and considerate, but also to those who are arbitrary.  
19 For this wins God's approval when, because conscious of God's  
presence, a person who is suffering unjustly bears their troubles  
20 patiently. What credit can you claim when, after doing wrong,  
you take your punishment for it patiently? But, on the other  
hand, if, after doing right, you take your sufferings patiently,  
21 that does win the approval of God. For it was to this that you  
were called! For Christ, too, suffered — on your behalf — and  
22 left you an example, that you should follow in his steps. He 'nev-  
er sinned, nor was anything deceitful ever heard from his lips.'  
23 He was abused, but he did not answer with abuse; he suffered,  
but he did not threaten; he entrusted himself to him whose judg-  
24 ments are just. And he 'himself carried our sins' in his own body  
to the cross, so that we might die to our sins, and live for righ-  
25 teousness. 'His bruising was your healing.' Once you were stray-  
ing like sheep, but now you have returned to the shepherd and  
guardian of your souls.

3 Again, you married women should submit to your hus-  
bands, so that if any of them reject the message, they may, apart

from the message, be won over, by the conduct of their wives, 2  
as they watch your submissive and blameless conduct. Yours 3  
should be, not the external adornment of the arrangement of the 4  
hair, the wearing of jewelery, or the putting on of dresses, but 4  
the inner life with the imperishable beauty of a quiet and gentle 5  
spirit; for this is very precious in God's sight. It was by this that 5  
the holy women of old, who rested their hopes on God, adorned 6  
themselves; submitting to their husbands, as Sarah did, who 6  
obeyed Abraham, and called him master. And you are her true 6  
children, as long as you live good lives, and let nothing terrify 6  
you.

Again, those of you who are married men should live con- 7  
siderately with their wives, showing due regard to their sex, as 7  
physically weaker than their own, and not forgetting that they 7  
share with you in the gift of life. Then you will be able to pray 7  
without hindrance.

Lastly, you should all be united, sympathetic, full of love for 8  
each other, kind-hearted, humble-minded; never returning evil 8  
for evil, or abuse for abuse, but, on the contrary, blessing. It was 9  
to this that you were called — to obtain a blessing!

'The person who wants to enjoy life 10  
And see happy days —  
Let them keep their tongue from evil  
And their lips from deceitful words,  
let them turn from evil and do good, 11  
Let them seek for peace and follow after it;  
For the eyes of the Lord are on the righteous, 12  
And his ears are attentive to their prayers,  
But the face of the Lord is set against those who do  
wrong.'

Who, indeed, is there to harm you, if you prove yourselves to 13  
be eager for what is good? Even if you should suffer for righ- 14  
teousness, count yourselves blessed! 'Do not let people terrify 14  
you, or allow yourselves to be dismayed.' Revere the Christ as 15  
Lord in your hearts; always ready to give an answer to anyone

16 who asks your reason for the hope that you cherish, but giving  
it with courtesy and respect, and keeping your consciences clear,  
17 so that, whenever you are maligned, those who vilify your good  
and Christian conduct may be put to shame. It is better that you  
18 should suffer, if that should be God's will, for doing right, than  
for doing wrong. For Christ himself died to atone for sins once  
for all — the good on behalf of the bad — that he might bring  
19 you to God; his body being put to death, but his spirit entering  
on new life. And it was then that he went and preached to the  
20 imprisoned spirits, who once were disobedient, at the time when  
God patiently waited, in the days of Noah, while the ark was be-  
ing prepared; in which some few lives, eight in all, were saved  
21 by means of water. And baptism, which this foreshadowed, now  
saves you — not the mere cleansing of the body, but the search of  
a clear conscience after God — through the resurrection of Jesus  
22 Christ, who has gone into heaven, and is at God's right hand,  
where angels and archangels and the powers of heaven now  
yield submission to him.

4 Since, then, Christ suffered in body, arm yourselves with the  
same resolve as he; for he who has suffered in body has ceased  
2 to sin, and so will live the rest of his earthly life guided, not by  
human passions, but by the will of God. Surely in the past you  
3 have spent time enough living as the Gentiles delight to live. For  
your path has lain among scenes of debauchery, licentiousness,  
drunkenness, revelry, hard-drinking, and profane idolatry. And,  
4 because you do not run to the same extremes of profligacy as  
5 others, they are astonished, and malign you. But they will have  
to answer for their conduct to him who is ready to judge both the  
6 living and the dead. For that was why the good news was told  
to the dead also — that, after they have been judged in the body,  
as people are judged, they might live in the spirit, as God lives.

7 But the end of all things is near. Therefore exercise self-restraint  
8 and be calm, so that you may be able to pray. Above all things, let  
your love for one another be earnest, for 'love throws a veil over  
9 countless sins.' Never grudge hospitality to one another. What-  
10 ever the gift that each has received, use it in the service of oth-

ers, as good stewards of the varied bounty of God. When any- 11  
one speaks, let them speak as one who is delivering the oracles  
of God. When anyone is endeavoring to serve others, let them do  
so in reliance on the strength which God supplies; so that in ev-  
erything God may be honor ed through Jesus Christ — to whom  
be ascribed all honor and might for ever and ever. Amen.

Dear friends, do not be astonished at the trial of fire that you are 12  
passing through, to test you, as though something strange were  
happening to you. No, the more you share the sufferings of the 13  
Christ, the more may you rejoice, that, when the time comes for  
the manifestation of his glory, you may rejoice and exult. If you 14  
are insulted for bearing the name of Christ, count yourselves  
blessed; because the divine glory and the Spirit of God are rest- 15  
ing on you. I need hardly say that no one among you must suf-  
fer as a murderer, or a thief, or a criminal, or for interfering in  
matters which do not concern Christians. But, if someone suffers 16  
as a Christian, do not let them be ashamed of it; let them bring  
honor to God even though they bear that name. For the time has 17  
come for judgment to begin with the house of God; and, if it be-  
gins with us, what will be the end of those who reject God's good 18  
news? If 'a good person is saved only with difficulty, what will  
become of the godless and the sinful?' Therefore, I say, let those 19  
who suffer, because God wills it so, commit their lives into the  
hands of a faithful Creator, and persevere in doing right.

### *Conclusion*

AS FOR THE OLDER ONES AMONG YOU, who bear office in the church, 5  
I, their fellow officer, and a witness to the sufferings of the Christ,  
who will also share in the glory that is to be revealed — I beg you 2  
to be true shepherds of the flock of God among you, not because  
you are compelled, but of your own free will; not from a base  
love of gain, but with a ready spirit; not as lords of your charges, 3  
but as examples to your flock. Then, when the chief shepherd ap- 4  
pears, you will win the crown of glory that never fades. Again, 5  
you younger ones should show deference to the older. And all of

you should put on the badge of humility in mutual service, for 'God is opposed to the proud, but gives his help to the humble.'

6 Humble yourselves, therefore, under the mighty hand of God,  
7 so that he may exalt you in his good time, laying all your anxieties on him, for he makes you his care. Exercise self-control, be  
8 watchful. Your adversary, the devil, like a roaring lion, is prowling about, eager to devour you. Stand firm against him, strong  
9 in your faith; knowing, as you do, that the sufferings which you are undergoing are being endured to the full by the Lord's fol-  
10 lowers throughout the world. God, from whom all help comes, and who called you, by your union with Christ, into his eternal  
11 glory, will, when you have suffered for a little while, himself perfect, establish, strengthen you. To him be ascribed dominion for ever. Amen.

12 I have been writing to you briefly by the hand of Silas, our true-hearted friend (for so I regard him), to encourage you, and to bear my testimony that in what I have written is to be found  
13 the true love of God. On that take your stand. Your sister church in 'Babylon' sends you greeting, and so does Mark, who is as a  
14 son to me. Greet one another with the kiss of love.



# 2 Peter

*Peter's Second Letter*

## *Introduction*

**T**O THOSE TO WHOM, through the justice of our God and 1  
Savior Jesus Christ, there has been granted faith equally  
privileged with our own, from Simon Peter, a servant and an  
apostle of Jesus Christ.

May blessing and peace be yours in ever increasing measure, as 2  
you advance in the knowledge of God and of Jesus, our Lord.  
For his divine power has given us everything that is needful 3  
for a life of piety, as we advance in the knowledge of him who  
called us by a glorious manifestation of his goodness. For it was 4  
through this that he gave us what we prize as the greatest of his  
promises, that through them you might participate in the divine  
nature, now that you have fled from the corruption in the world,  
resulting from human passions. Yes, and for this reason do your 5  
best to supplement your faith by goodness, goodness by knowl-  
edge, knowledge by self-control, self-control by endurance, en- 6  
durance by piety, piety by mutual affection, and mutual affec- 7  
tion by love. For, when these virtues are yours, in increasing 8  
measure, they prevent your being indifferent to, or destitute of,  
a fuller knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. Surely the person 9  
who has not these virtues is shortsighted even to blindness, and  
has chosen to forget that they have been purified from their sins  
of the past! Therefore, friends, do your best to put God's call 10  
and selection of you beyond all doubt; for, if you do this, you  
will never fall. For in this way you will be given a triumphant 11  
admission into the eternal kingdom of our Lord and Savior, Je-

sus Christ.

*The Transfiguration and the 'Second Coming' of  
the Christ*

12 I WILL, therefore, always be ready to remind you of all this, even  
 13 though you know it and are firmly established in the truth that  
 14 you now hold. But I think it my duty, as long as I live in this  
 15 'tent,' to rouse you by awakening memories of the past; for I  
 16 know that the time for this 'tent' of mine to be put away is soon  
 17 coming, as our Lord Jesus Christ himself assured me. So I will  
 18 do my best to enable you, at any time after my departure, to call  
 19 these truths to mind. For we were not following cleverly devised  
 20 stories when we told you of the coming in power of our Lord  
 21 Jesus Christ, but we had been eye-witnesses of his majesty. For  
 he received honor and glory from God the Father, when from the  
 glory of the Divine Majesty there were borne to his ears words  
 such as these — 'This is my dearly loved son, who brings me  
 great joy.' These were the words that we heard, borne to our ears  
 from heaven, when we were with him on that sacred mountain.  
 And still stronger is the assurance that we have in the teaching  
 of the prophets; to which you will do well to pay attention (as if  
 it were a lamp shining in a gloomy place), until the day dawns  
 and the morning star rises in your hearts. But first be assured of  
 this: — There is no prophetic teaching found in scripture that can  
 be interpreted by a person's unaided reason; for no prophetic  
 teaching ever came in the old days at the mere wish of people,  
 but people, moved by the Holy Spirit, spoke direct from God.

*Warning against separating Christianity from a Holy  
Life*

2 BUT THERE WERE FALSE PROPHETS ALSO IN THE NATION, just as there  
 will be false teachers among you, people who will secretly intro-  
 duce ruinous divisions, disowning even the Lord who bought  
 them, and bringing speedy ruin on themselves. There will be

many, too, who will follow their licentious courses, and cause  
the way of the truth to be maligned. In their covetousness they  
will try to make you a source of profit by their fabrications; but  
for a long time past their sentence has not been standing idle,  
nor their ruin slumbering. Remember, God did not spare angels  
when they sinned, but sent them down to Tartarus, and com-  
mitted them to caverns of darkness, to be kept under guard for  
judgment. Nor did he spare the world of old; though he pre-  
served Noah, the preacher of righteousness, and seven others,  
when he brought a flood on the godless world. He condemned  
the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah and reduced them to ash-  
es, holding them up as a warning to the godless of what was in  
store for them; but he rescued righteous Lot, whose heart was  
vexed by the wanton licentiousness of his neighbors; for, seeing  
and hearing what he did, as he lived his righteous life among  
them, day after day, Lot's righteous soul was tortured by their  
wicked doings. The Lord, therefore, knows how to deliver the pi-  
ous from temptation, and to keep the wicked, who are even now  
suffering punishment, in readiness for 'the day of judgment' —  
especially those who, following the promptings of their lower  
nature, indulge their polluting passions and despise all control.  
Audacious and self-willed, they feel no awe of the celestial be-  
ings, maligning them, even where angels, though excelling them  
in strength and power, do not bring against them a malignant  
charge before the Lord. These people, however, like animals  
without reason, intended by nature to be caught and killed —  
these people, I say, malign those of whom they know nothing,  
and will assuredly perish through their own corruption, suffer-  
ing themselves, as the penalty for the suffering that they have  
inflicted. They think that pleasure consists in the self-indulgence  
of the moment. They are a stain and a disgrace, indulging, as  
they do, in their wanton revelry, even while joining you at your  
feasts. They have eyes only for adulteresses, eyes never tired of  
sin; they entice weak souls; their minds are trained to covet; they  
live under a curse. Leaving the straight road, they have gone  
astray and followed in the steps of Balaam, the son of Beor, who  
set his heart on the reward for wrong-doing, but was rebuked

17 for his offense. A dumb animal spoke with a human voice, and  
checked the prophet's madness. These people are like springs  
18 without water, or mists driven before a gale; and for them the  
blackest darkness has been reserved. With boastful and foolish  
talk, they appeal to the passions of people's lower nature, and,  
19 by their profligacy, entice those who are just escaping from the  
people who live such misguided lives. They promise them free-  
20 dom, while they themselves are slaves to corrupt habits; for a  
person is the slave of anything to which they give way. If, after  
having escaped the polluting influences of the world, through  
knowing our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, people are again en-  
21 tangled in them, and give way to them, their last state has be-  
come worse than their first. It would, indeed, have been better  
for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, af-  
22 ter knowing it, to turn away from the holy command delivered  
to them. In their case is seen the truth of the proverb — 'A dog  
returns to what it has vomited' and 'A sow after washing to her  
wallowing-place in the mud.'

### *A Reassertion of the 'Second Coming' of the Christ*

3 THIS, dear friends, is my second letter to you. In both of them I  
have tried, by appealing to your remembrance, to arouse your  
2 better feelings. I want you to recall what was foretold by the holy  
prophets, as well as the command of our Lord and Savior giv-  
3 en to you through your apostles. First be assured of this, that,  
as the age draws to an end, scoffers, led by their own passions,  
4 will come and ask scoffingly — 'Where is his promised coming?  
Ever since our ancestors passed to their rest, everything remains  
5 just as it was when the world was first created!' For they willful-  
ly shut their eyes to the fact that long ago the heavens existed;  
and the earth, also — formed out of water and by the action of  
6 water, by the fiat of God; and that by the same means the world  
7 which then existed was destroyed in a deluge of water. But the  
present heavens and earth, by the same fiat, have been reserved  
for fire, and are being kept for the day of the judgment and de-  
struction of the godless.

But you, dear friends, must never shut your eyes to the fact 8  
that, to the Lord, one day is the same as a thousand years, and  
a thousand years as one day. The Lord is not slow to fulfill his 9  
promise, as some count slowness; but he is forbearing with you,  
as it is not his will that any of you should perish, but that all  
should be brought to repentance. The day of the Lord will come 10  
like a thief; and on that day the heavens will pass away with  
a crash, the elements will be burnt up and dissolved, and the  
earth and all that is in it will be disclosed. Now, since all these 11  
things are in the process of dissolution, think what you your-  
selves ought to be — what holy and pious lives you ought to 12  
lead, while you wait for the coming of the day of God and strive  
to make it come soon<sup>1</sup>. At its coming the heavens will be dis- 13  
solved in fire, and the elements melted by heat, but we look for  
'new heavens and a new earth,' where righteousness will have  
its home, in fulfillment of the promise of God.

Therefore, dear friends, in expectation of these things, make 14  
every effort to be found by him spotless, blameless, and at peace.  
Regard our Lord's forbearance as your one hope of salvation. 15  
This is what our dear friend Paul wrote to you, with the wis-  
dom that God gave him. It is the same in all his letters, when he 16  
speaks in them about these subjects. There are some things in  
them difficult to understand, which untaught and weak people  
distort, just as they do all other writings, to their own ruin. You  
must, therefore, dear friends, now that you know this before- 17  
hand, be on your guard against being led away by the errors of  
reckless people, and so lapsing from your present steadfastness;  
and advance in the love and knowledge of our Lord and Savior, 18  
Jesus Christ. All glory be to him now and for ever.

---

<sup>1</sup>Or and desire its coming



# 1 John

*John's First Letter*

## *The Immortal Love*

IT IS OF WHAT HAS BEEN IN EXISTENCE FROM THE BEGINNING, of what 1  
we have heard, of what we have seen with our eyes, of what  
we watched reverently and touched with our hands — it is 2  
about the Word who is the life that we are now writing. That  
life was made visible, and we have seen it, and now bear our  
testimony to it, and tell you of that eternal life, which was with 3  
the Father and was made visible to us. It is of what we have  
seen and heard that we now tell you, so that you may have  
communion with us. And our communion is with the Father  
and with his Son, Jesus Christ. And we are writing all this to 4  
you that our joy may be complete.

These, then, are the tidings that we have heard from him and 5  
now tell you — ‘God is light, and darkness has no place at all in  
him.’ If we say that we have communion with him, and yet con- 6  
tinue to live in the darkness, we lie, and are not living the truth.  
But, if our lives are lived in the light, as God himself is in the 7  
light, we have communion with one another, and the blood of Je-  
sus, his Son, purifies us from all sin. If we say that there is no sin 8  
in us, we are deceiving ourselves, and the truth has no place in  
us. If we confess our sins, God may be trusted, in his righteous- 9  
ness, to forgive us our sins and purify us from all wickedness. If  
we say that we have not sinned, we are making God a liar, and 10  
his message has no place in us.

My children, I am writing to you to keep you from sinning; 2

2 but if anyone should sin, we have one who can plead for us with  
3 the Father — Jesus Christ, the righteous — and he is the atoning  
4 sacrifice for our sins, and not for ours only, but for those of the  
5 whole world besides. And by this we know that we have learned  
6 to know him — by our laying his commands to heart. The per-  
son who says ‘I know Jesus,’ but does not lay his commands to  
heart, is a liar, and the truth has no place in them; but, whenever  
a person lays his message to heart, in that person the love of God  
has indeed reached its perfection. By this we know that we are  
in union with God — He who professes to maintain union with  
God is himself bound to live as Christ lived.

7 Dear friends, it is no new command that I am writing to you, but  
8 an old command, which you have had from the first. That old  
9 command is the message to which you listened. Yet, in a way,  
10 it is a new command that I am writing to you — manifest in  
11 Christ’s life and in your own — for the darkness is passing away  
and the true light is already shining. The person who says that  
they are in the light, and yet hates others, is in the darkness even  
now. The person who loves others is always in the light, and  
there is nothing within them to cause them to stumble; while the  
person who hates others is in the darkness, and is living in the  
darkness, and does not know where they are going, because the  
darkness prevents them seeing.

12 I am writing, God’s children, to you, because your sins have  
13 been forgiven you for Christ’s sake. I am writing, adults in the  
faith, to you, because you have learned to know him who has  
been from the beginning. I am writing, young ones in the faith,  
to you, because you have conquered the evil one. I write, chil-  
14 dren, to you, because you have learned to know the Father. I  
write, adults in the faith, to you, because you have learned to  
know him who has been from the beginning. I write, young ones  
in the faith, to you, because you are strong, and God’s message  
is always in your hearts, and you have conquered the evil one.  
15 Do not love the world or what the world can offer. When any-  
16 one loves the world, there is no love for the Father in them; for  
all that the world can offer — the gratification of the earthly na-



ture, the gratification of the eye, the pretentious life — belongs, not to the Father, but to the world. And the world, and all that it gratifies, is passing away, but they who do God's will remains for ever. 17

### *Warnings against Antichrist*

MY CHILDREN, these are the last days. You were told that an antichrist was coming; and many antichrists have already arisen. By that we know that these are the last days. From us, it is true, they went out, but they had never belonged to us; for, if they had belonged to us, they would have remained among us. They left us that it might be made clear that they do not, any of them, belong to us. You, however, have received consecration from the Holy One. You all know — But I am not writing to you because you do not know the truth, but because you do know it, and because nothing false can come from the truth. 18

Who is a liar, if not the person who rejects the truth that Jesus is the Christ? That person is the antichrist — the person who rejects the Father and the Son. No one who rejects the Son has found the Father; the person who acknowledges the Son has found the Father also. As for you, let what you were told at the first be always in your thoughts. If, then, what you were told at the first is always in your thoughts, you yourselves will maintain your union both with the Son and with the Father. And this is what he himself promised us — eternal life! 19

In writing this this to you, I have in mind those who are trying to mislead you. But you — you still retain in your hearts that consecration which you received from the Christ, and are not in need of anyone to teach you; but, since his consecration of you teaches you about everything, and since it is a real consecration, and no lie, then, as it has taught you, maintain your union with him. Yes, my children, maintain your union with Christ, so that, whenever he appears, our confidence may not fail us, and we may not be ashamed to meet him at his coming. Knowing him to be righteous, you realize that everyone who lives righteously has received the new life from him. 20

### *The Privileges and Duties of God's Children*

3 THINK WHAT LOVE THE FATHER HAS SHOWN US IN ALLOWING US TO BE  
called 'children of God'; as indeed we are. The reason why the  
world does not know us is that it has not learned to know him.  
2 Dear friends, we are God's children now; what we will be has  
not yet been revealed. What we do know is that, when it is re-  
vealed, we will be like Christ; because we will see him as he is.  
3 And everyone who has this hope with regard to Christ tries to  
make themselves pure — as Christ is pure.

4 Everyone who lives sinfully is living in violation of law. Sin  
is violation of law. And you know that Christ appeared to take  
5 away our sins; and in him sin has no place. No one who main-  
tains union with him lives in sin; no one who lives in sin has ever  
6 really seen him or learned to know him. My children, do not let  
anyone mislead you. The person who lives righteously is right-  
7 teous — as Christ is righteous. The person who lives sinfully be-  
8 longs to the devil, for the devil has sinned from the first. It was  
for this that the Son of God appeared, that he might undo the  
devil's work.

9 No one who has received the new life from God lives sinfully,  
because the nature of God dwells within them; and they cannot  
live in sin, because they have received the new life from God. By  
10 this the children of God are distinguished from the children of  
the devil — No one who lives unrighteously comes from God,  
11 and especially the person who does not love others. For these are  
the tidings that we heard from the first — that we are to love one  
12 another. We must not be like Cain, who belonged to the evil one  
and killed his brother. And why did he kill him? It was because  
his life was bad while his brother's was good.

13 Do not wonder, friends, if the world hates you. We know that we  
14 have passed out of death into life, because we love each other.  
The person who does not love remains in a state of death. The  
15 person who hates another is a murderer; and you know that no  
murderer has eternal life within them.

16 We have learned to know what love is from this — that

Christ laid down his life on our behalf. Therefore we also ought to lay down our lives for each other. But, if anyone has worldly possessions, and yet looks on while one of our own is in need, and steels their heart against that person, how can it be said that the love of God is within them? My children, do not let our love be mere words, or end in talk; let it be true and show itself in acts. 17 18

By that we will know that we are on the side of the truth; and we will satisfy ourselves in God's sight, that if our conscience condemns us, yet God is greater than our conscience and knows everything. Dear friends, if our conscience does not condemn us, then we approach God with confidence, and we receive from him whatever we ask, because we are laying his commands to heart, and are doing what is pleasing in his sight. His command is this — that we should put our trust in the name of his Son, Jesus Christ, and love one another, in accordance with the command that he gave us. And the person who lays his commands to heart maintains union with Christ, and Christ with them. And by this we know that Christ maintains union with us — by our possession of the Spirit which he gave us. 19 20 21 22 23 24

### *True and False Inspiration*

DEAR FRIENDS, do not trust every inspiration, but test each inspiration, to see whether it proceeds from God; because many false prophets have gone out into the world. 4

This is the way by which to know the inspiration of God — All inspiration that acknowledges Jesus Christ as come in our human nature is from God; while all inspiration that does not acknowledge Jesus is not inspiration from God. It is the inspiration of the Antichrist; you have heard that it was to come, and it is now already in the world. 2 3

You, my children, come from God, and you have successfully resisted such people as these, because he who is in you is greater than the one who is in the world. Those people belong to the world; and therefore they speak as the world speaks, and the world listens to them. We come from God. He who knows 4 5 6

God listens to us; the person who does not come from God does not listen to us. By that we may know the true inspiration from the false.

### *Love of God and Love of People*

7 DEAR FRIENDS, let us love one another, because love comes from  
8 God; and everyone who loves has received the new life from  
9 God and knows God. The person who does not love has not  
10 learned to know God; for God is love. The love of God was re-  
vealed to us by his sending his only Son into the world, so that  
we might find life through him. His love is seen in this — not in  
our having loved God, but in his loving us and sending his Son  
to be an atoning sacrifice for our sins.

11 Dear friends, since God loved us in this way, we, surely,  
12 ought to love one another. No human eyes have ever seen God,  
13 yet, if we love one another, God remains in union with us, and  
his love attains its perfection in us. We know that we remain in  
14 union with him, and he with us, by this — by his having given us  
some measure of his Spirit. Moreover, our eyes have seen — and  
15 we are testifying to the fact — that the Father has sent the Son  
to be the Savior of the world. Whoever acknowledges that Jesus  
16 Christ is the Son of God — God remains in union with that man,  
and he with God. And, moreover, we have learned to know, and  
have accepted as a fact, the love which God has for us.

17 God is love; and whoever lives in love lives in God, and God  
18 in them. It is through this that love has attained its perfection  
in us, so that we may have confidence on the day of judgment,  
19 because what Christ is that we also are in this world. There is  
no fear in love. No! Love, when perfect, drives out fear, because  
20 fear implies punishment, and the person who feels fear has not  
attained to perfect love. We love, because God first loved us. If  
someone says 'I love God,' and yet hates another person, they  
21 are a liar; for the person who does not love their fellow, whom  
they have seen, cannot love God, whom they have not seen.  
Indeed, we have this command from God — 'Those who love  
God must also love each other.'

*A Christian's Faith and Confidence*

EVERYONE WHO BELIEVES THAT JESUS IS THE CHRIST HAS RECEIVED THE 5  
new life from God; and everyone who loves him who gave that 2  
life loves him who has received it. By this we know that we love  
God's children — when we love God and carry out his com- 3  
mands. For to love God is to lay his commands to heart; and his 4  
commands are not burdensome, because all that has received  
the new life from God conquers the world. And this is the pow- 5  
er that has conquered the world — our faith! Who is the person  
that conquers the world but the person who believes that Jesus is 6  
the Son of God? He it is whose coming was by water and blood  
— Jesus Christ himself; not by water only, but by water and by 7  
blood. And there is the Spirit also to bear testimony, and the Spir-  
it is truth itself. It is a threefold testimony — that of the Spirit, 8  
the water, and the blood — and these three are at one. We accept  
the testimony of people, but God's testimony is still stronger; 9  
and there is the testimony of God — the fact that he has already  
borne testimony about his Son. The person who believes in the 10  
Son of God has that testimony within them. The person who  
does not believe God has made God a liar, by refusing to believe  
in that testimony which he has borne about his Son. And that 11  
testimony is that God gave us eternal life, and that this life is in  
his Son. The person who finds the Son finds life; the person who 12  
does not find the Son of God does not find life.

I write this to you so that you may realize that you have 13  
found eternal life — you who believe in the name of the Son of  
God. And this is the confidence with which we approach him, 14  
that whenever we ask anything that is in accordance with his  
will, he listens to us. And if we realize that he listens to us — 15  
whatever we ask — we realize that we have what we have asked  
from him. If anyone sees one of our people committing some 16  
sin that is not a deadly sin, they will ask, and so be the means  
of giving life to them — to any whose sin is not deadly. There is  
such a thing as deadly sin; about that I do not say that a person  
should pray. Every wrong action is sin, and there is sin that is not 17  
deadly.

We know that no one who has received the new life from God 18

lives in sin. No, the person who has received the new life from  
19 God keeps the thought of God in their heart, and then the evil  
20 one does not touch them. We realize that we come from God,  
while all the world is under the influence of the evil one. We re-  
alize, too, that the Son of God has come among us, and has given  
us the discernment to know the true God; and we are in union  
with the true God by our union with his Son, Jesus Christ. He is  
21 the true God and he is eternal life. My children, guard yourselves  
against false ideas of God.

## 2 John

### *John's Second Letter*

**T**O AN EMINENT CHRISTIAN LADY, and to her children, from the officer of the church. I sincerely love you all, and not I only, but also all those who have learned to know the truth. We love you for the sake of that truth which is always in our hearts; yes, and it will be ours for ever. 1  
2

Blessing, mercy, and peace will be ours — the gift of God, the Father, and of Jesus Christ, the Father's Son — in a life of truth and love. 3

It was a great joy to me to find the lives of some of your children guided by the truth, in obedience to the command that we received from the Father. And now, I pray you, Lady — not as though I were writing a new command for you; no, it is the command which we had from the first — Let us love one another. And this is love — to live in obedience to the Father's commands. This is the command as you learned from the first, to live in a spirit of love. I say this because many impostors have left us to go into the world — people who do not acknowledge Jesus as Christ come in our human nature. It is that which marks someone as an impostor and an antichrist. Take care that you do not lose the fruit of all our work; rather, reap the benefit of it in full. Everyone who goes beyond the limits of the teaching of the Christ has failed to find God; the person who keeps to that teaching — they have found both the Father and the Son. If anyone comes to you and does not bring this teaching, do not receive them into your house or welcome them; for the person who wel- 4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11

comes them is sharing with them in his wicked work.

- 12 Though I have a great deal to say to you, I would rather not trust  
it to paper and ink, but I am hoping to come and see you, and  
to speak with you face to face, so that your joy may be complete.
- 13 The children of your eminent sister send you their greetings.



# 3 John

## *John's Third Letter*

**T**O HIS DEAR FRIEND GAIUS, whom he sincerely loves, From the 1  
officer of the church.

Dear friend, I pray that all may be well with you and that you 2  
may have good health — I know that all is well with your soul.  
For it was a great joy to me, when some followers of the Lord 3  
came and testified to your fidelity to the truth — I know that  
your own life is guided by the truth. Nothing gives me greater 4  
pleasure than to hear from time to time that the lives of my chil-  
dren are guided by the truth.

Dear friend, whatever you do for other followers is done in 5  
a Christian spirit — even when they are strangers to you. They  
themselves have testified before the church to your love; and 6  
you will do well to help them on their way in a manner worthy  
of the service of God. For it was on behalf of the name that they 7  
left their homes, and refused to take anything from the Gentiles.  
We, therefore, ought to give such people a hearty welcome, and 8  
so take our share in their work for the truth.

I wrote a few lines to the church; but Diotrephes, who loves to 9  
be first among them, declines to recognize us. Therefore, when 10  
I come, I will not forget his conduct in ridiculing us with his  
wicked tongue. Not content with that, he not only declines to  
recognize our friends who are followers himself, but actually  
prevents those who would, and expels them from the church.

Dear friend, take what is good for your example, not what is 11  
bad. The person who does what is good is from God; the person

- 12 who does what is bad has never seen God. Everyone has always had a good word for Demetrius, and the truth itself speaks for him. Yes, and we also add our good word, and you know that what we say about him is true.
- 13 I have a great deal to say to you, but I do not care to trust it to  
14 pen and ink in a letter. I hope, however, it will not be long before I see you, and then we will speak face to face. Peace be with you. Our friends here send you their greetings. Greet each one of our friends.

# Jude

*The Letter from Jude*

## *Introduction*

**T**O THOSE WHO, having received the call, have been loved by 1  
God the Father and protected by Jesus Christ, From Jude, a 2  
servant of Jesus Christ, and the brother of James. May mercy, 2  
peace, and love be yours in ever increasing measure.

## *Warnings against moral corruption*

DEAR FRIENDS, while I was making every effort to write to you 3  
about our common salvation, I felt that I must write to you at 3  
once to encourage you to fight in defense of the faith that has 3  
once for all been entrusted to the keeping of Christ's people. For 4  
there have crept in among you certain godless people, whose 4  
sentence has long since been pronounced, and who make the 4  
mercy of God an excuse for profligacy, and disown our only lord 4  
and master, Jesus Christ.

Now I want to remind you — but you already know it all — 5  
that, though the Lord delivered the people from Egypt, yet he 5  
afterwards destroyed those who refused to believe in him; and 5  
that even those angels, who did not keep to their appointed 6  
spheres, but left their proper homes, have been kept by him for 6  
the judgment of the great day in everlasting chains and black 6  
darkness. Like Sodom and Gomorrah and the towns near them, 7  
which gave themselves up to fornication, and fell into unnatural 7  
vice, these angels now stand out as a warning, undergoing, as 7  
they are, punishment in eternal fire.

8        Yet in the same way these people, too, cherishing vain  
dreams, pollute our human nature, reject control, and malign the  
9        celestial beings. Yet even Michael, the archangel, when, in his  
dispute with the devil, he was arguing about the body of Moses,  
did not venture to charge him with maligning, but said merely  
10       ‘The Lord rebuke you!’ But these people malign whatever they  
do not understand; while they use such things as they know by  
instinct (like the animals that have no reason) for their own cor-  
11       ruption. Alas for them! They walk in the steps of Cain; led astray  
by Balaam’s love of gain, they plunge into sin, and meet their  
12       ruin through rebellion like Korah. These are the people who are  
blots on your ‘love-feasts,’ when they feast together and provide  
without scruple for themselves alone. They are clouds without  
rain, driven before the winds; they are leafless trees without a  
13       vestige of fruit, dead through and through, torn up by the roots;  
they are wild sea waves, foaming with their own shame; they  
are ‘wandering stars,’ for which the blackest darkness has been  
reserved for ever.

14       To these people, as to others, Enoch, the seventh in descent  
from Adam, declared — ‘See! The Lord has come with his hosts  
15       of holy ones around him, to execute judgment on all people,  
and to convict all godless people of all their godless acts, which  
in their ungodliness they have committed, and of all the harsh  
words which they have spoken against him, godless sinners that  
they are!’

16       These people are always murmuring, and complaining of  
their lot; they follow where their passions lead them; they have  
arrogant words on their lips; and they flatter others for the sake  
of what they can get from them.

17       But you should, dear friends, recall what was foretold by the  
18       apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ; how they used to say to you —  
‘As time draws to an end, there will be scoffers, who will be led  
19       by their godless passions.’ These are the people — animal and  
20       unspiritual — who cause divisions. But you must, dear friends,  
build up your characters on the foundation of your most holy  
21       faith, pray under the guidance of the Holy Spirit, and keep with-

in the love of God, while waiting for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, to bring you to eternal life. To some show pity, because they are in doubt. 'Drag them out of the fire,' and save them. To others show pity, but with caution, hating the clothing polluted by their touch. 22  
23

*Ascription*

TO HIM WHO IS ABLE TO GUARD YOU FROM FALLING, and to bring you into his glorious presence, blameless and rejoicing — to the one God, our Savior, be ascribed, through Jesus Christ, our Lord, glory, majesty, power, and dominion, as it was before time began, is now, and will be for all time to come. Amen. 24  
25



# Revelation

## *The Revelation to John*

**T**HE REVELATION OF JESUS CHRIST, which God gave to him to 1  
make known to his servants, concerning what must  
shortly take place, and which he sent and revealed by his  
angel to his servant John, who testified to the message of 2  
God and to the testimony to Jesus Christ, omitting nothing  
of what he had seen. Blessed is the one who reads, and 3  
blessed are they who listen to, the words of this prophecy,  
and lay to heart what is here written; for the time is near.

## *Messages to the Seven Churches*

FROM JOHN, to the seven churches which are in Roman Asia. 4  
Blessing and peace be yours from him who is, and who was, and  
who will be, and from the seven spirits that are before his throne,  
and from Jesus Christ, 'the faithful witness, the first-born from 5  
the dead, and the Ruler of all the kings of the earth.' To him who  
loves us and freed us from our sins by his own blood — and he 6  
made us 'a kingdom of priests in the service of God,' his Father!  
— to Him be ascribed glory and dominion for ever. Amen. 'He 7  
is coming among the clouds!' Every eye will see him, even those  
who pierced him; 'and all the nations of the earth will mourn  
over him.' So will it be. Amen.

'I am the Alpha and the Omega,' says the Lord, the God who is, 8  
and who was, and who will be, the Almighty.

I, John, who am your brother, and who share with you in the 9

suffering and kingship and endurance of Jesus, found myself on the island called Patmos, for the sake of the message of God and the testimony to Jesus. I fell into a trance on the Lord's day, and I heard behind me a loud voice, like the blast of a trumpet. It said — 'Write what you see in a book and send it to the seven churches, to Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamus, Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia, and Laodicaea.' I turned to see what voice it was that spoke to me; and when I turned, I saw seven golden lamps, and in the midst of the lamps one 'like a man, in a robe reaching to his feet,' and with a golden girdle across his breast. 'The hair of his head was as white as wool, as white as snow; his eyes were like flaming fire; and his feet were like brass' as when molten in a furnace; 'his voice was like the sound of many streams,' in his right hand he held seven stars, from his mouth came a sharp two-edged sword, and his face was like 'the sun in the fulness of its power.' And, when I saw him, I fell at his feet like one dead. He laid his hand on me and said — 'Do not be afraid. I am the First and the Last, the Everliving. I died, and I am alive for ever and ever. And I hold the keys of the Grave and of the place of the dead. Therefore write of what you have seen and of what is happening now and of what is about to take place — the mystic meaning of the seven stars which you saw in my right hand, and the seven golden lamps. The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches, and the seven lamps are the seven churches.

2 To the angel of the church in Ephesus write: —

"These are the words of him who holds the seven stars in his right hand, and walks among the seven golden lamps: — I know your life, your toil and endurance, and I know that you cannot tolerate evil-doers. I know, too, how you tested those who declare that they are apostles, though they are not, and how you proved them false. You possess endurance, and have borne much for my name, and have never grown weary. But this I have against you — You have abandoned your first love. Therefore remember from what you have fallen, and repent, and live the life that you lived before; or else, I will come and remove your Lamp from its place, unless you repent. But this is in your favor



— You hate the life lived by the Nikolaitans, and I also hate it. Let  
him who has ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the churches.  
To him who conquers — to him I will give the right 'to eat the  
fruit of the Tree of life, which stands in the Paradise of God.' "

To the angel of the church in Smyrna write: — 8

"These are the words of him who is the First and the Last,  
who died, but is restored to life: — I know your persecution  
and your poverty — yet you are rich! I know, too, the slander  
that comes from those who declare that they are God's people<sup>1</sup>,  
though they are not, but are a Congregation of Satan. Do not be  
afraid of what you are about to suffer. The devil is about to throw  
some of you into prison so that you may be tempted, and may  
undergo persecution for ten days. Be faithful even to death, and  
I will give you the Crown of life. Let those who have ears hear  
what the Spirit is saying to the churches. Those who conquer  
will suffer no hurt from the Second Death."

To the angel of the church in Pergamus write: — 12

"These are the words of him who holds the sharp two-edged  
sword: — I know where you live, where the throne of Satan  
stands. And yet you hold to my name, and you did not disown  
my faith even in the days of Antipas, my faithful witness, who  
was put to death among you where Satan dwells. Yet I have a  
few things against you — You have among you those who hold  
to the teaching of Balaam, who taught Balak to put temptations  
in the way of the Israelites, so that they should eat idol-offerings  
and commit licentious acts. Again you have among you those  
who hold in the same way to the teaching of the Nikolaitans.  
Therefore repent, or else, I will come quickly and contend with  
such people with words that will cut like a sword. Let those who  
have ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the churches. To those  
who conquer — to them I will give a share of the mystic manna,  
and I will give them a white stone; and on the stone will be in-

---

<sup>1</sup>God's people: Literally 'Jews.' These people claimed to be God's people because they were Jews.

scribed a new name, which no one knows except the person who receives it.”

18 To the angel of the church in Thyatira write: —

19 “These are the words of the Son of God, ‘whose eyes are like  
20 flaming fire, and whose feet are like brass’: — I know your life,  
21 your love, faith, service, and endurance; and I know that your  
22 life of late has been better than it was at first. Yet I have this  
23 against you — You tolerate the woman Jezebel, who declares  
24 that she is a Prophetess, and misleads my servants by her teach-  
25 ing, until they commit licentious acts and eat idol-offerings. I  
26 gave her time to repent, but she is determined not to turn from  
27 her licentiousness. Therefore I am laying her on a bed of sick-  
28 ness, and bringing great suffering on those who are unfaithful  
29 with her, unless they repent and turn from a life like hers. I will  
also put her children to death; and all the churches will learn  
that I am he who ‘looks into people’s hearts and souls’; and I  
will give to each one of you what their life deserves. But I say to  
the rest of you at Thyatira — all who do not accept such teach-  
ing, whose who did not learn ‘the secrets of Satan,’ as people call  
them — I am not laying on you any further burden; only hold  
fast to what you have received, until I come. To those who con-  
quer and are careful to live my life to the end — to them I will  
give authority over the nations, and ‘they will rule them with  
an iron rod, as when earthen vessels are broken in pieces’ (as I  
myself have received from my Father) and I will give them the  
morning star. Let those who have ears hear what the Spirit is  
saying to the churches.”

3 To the angel of the church in Sardis write: —

2 “These are the words of him who has the seven spirits of God  
and the seven stars; — I know your life, and that people say of  
3 you that you are living, though you are dead. Be on the watch,  
and strengthen what still survives, though once it was all but  
dead; for I have not found your life perfect in the eyes of my  
God. Therefore remember what you have received and heard,  
and lay it to heart and repent. Unless you are on the watch, I

will come like a thief, and you will not know at what hour I am  
coming to you. Yet there are some few among you at Sardis who 4  
did not soil their robes; they will walk with me, robed in white,  
for they are worthy. Those who conquer will be clothed in these 5  
white robes, and I will not 'strike their name out of the book of  
life'; but I will own them before my Father, and before his angels.  
Let those who have ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the 6  
churches."

To the angel of the church in Philadelphia write: — 7

"These are the words of him who is holy and true, who  
holds 'the Key of David, who opens and no one will shut, and  
shuts and no one opens': — I know your life (see, I have set a 8  
door open before you which no one is able to shut), I know that,  
though you have but little strength, you kept my teaching in  
mind, and did not disown my name. Listen, I give some of the 9  
Congregation of Satan, the people who declare that they are  
God's people<sup>1</sup>, though they are not, but are lying — I will make  
them 'come and bow down at your feet,' and they will learn 10  
that I loved you. Because you kept in mind the story of my en-  
durance, I will keep you in the hour of trial that is about to come  
on the whole world, the hour that will test all who are living on  
earth. I will come quickly. Hold to what you have received so 11  
that no one may take your crown. Those who conquer — I will 12  
make them a pillar in the Temple of my God; and never more  
will they leave it; and I will write on them the name of my God  
and the name of the city of my God, the New Jerusalem, which  
is coming down out of heaven from my God, and I will write 13  
on them my new name. Let those who have ears hear what the  
Spirit is saying to the churches."

To the angel of the church in Laodicea write: — 14

"These are the words of the Unchanging One, 'the witness  
faithful and true, the beginning of the Creation of God': — I

---

<sup>1</sup>God's people: Literally 'Jews.' These people claimed to be God's people because they were Jews.

15 know your life; I know that you are neither cold nor hot. If only  
16 you were either cold or hot! But now, because you are lukewarm,  
17 neither hot nor cold, I am about to spit you out of my mouth. You  
say 'I am rich and have grown rich, and I want for nothing,' and  
you do not know that you are wretched, miserable, poor, blind,  
18 naked! Therefore I counsel you to buy from me gold which has  
been refined by fire so that you may grow rich; and white robes,  
so that you may be clothed and your shameful nakedness be  
hidden; and ointment to anoint your eyes, so that you may see.  
19 'All whom I love I rebuke and discipline.' Therefore be in earnest  
20 and repent. I am standing at the door and knocking! If anyone  
hears my voice and opens the door, I will go in, and will feast  
21 with them, and they will feast with me. To those who conquer —  
to them I will give the right to sit beside me on my throne, as I,  
when I conquered, took my seat beside my Father on his throne.  
22 Let those who have ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the  
churches."

### *The Vision of the Seven Seals*

4 AFTER THIS, in my vision, I saw an open door in the heavens, and  
the first voice that I heard was like the blast of a trumpet speak-  
ing to me. It said — 'Come up here and I will show you what  
2 must take place.' Immediately after this I fell into a trance. There  
stood a throne in heaven, and on the throne was One seated.  
3 He who was seated on it was in appearance like a jasper and a  
sardius; and 'around the throne there was a rainbow' of the col-  
4 or of an emerald. And around the throne were twenty-four oth-  
er thrones, and on these I saw twenty-four councillors sitting  
clothed in white robes; and on their heads they had crowns of  
5 gold. Out from the throne 'come flashes of lightning, cries, and  
peals of thunder'! There are seven torches burning in front of  
6 the throne, which are the seven spirits of God; and in front of the  
throne is what seemed to be a sea of glass, 'resembling crystal,  
while within the space before the throne and around the throne  
7 are four Creatures full of eyes' in front and behind. The first  
Creature is like a lion, the second Creature like a calf, the third

Creature has a face like a man's, and the fourth Creature is like an eagle on the wing. These four Creatures have each of them six wings, and all around, and within, they are full of eyes; and day and night they never cease to say — 8

'Holy, holy, holy is the Lord, our God, the Almighty, who was, and who is, and who will be.'

And, whenever these Creatures give praise and honor and thanks to him who is 'seated on the throne, to him who lives for ever and ever,' the twenty-four councillors prostrate themselves before him who is seated on the throne, and worship him who lives for ever and ever, and throw down their crowns before the throne, saying — 9  
10

'Worthy are you, our Lord and God, to receive all praise, and honor, and power, for you did create all things, and at your bidding they came into being and were created.' 11

Then I saw at the right hand of him who was 'seated on the throne a book, with writing inside and out, and sealed' with seven seals; and I saw a mighty angel who was proclaiming in a loud voice — 'Who is worthy to open the book and break its seals?' But no one either in heaven or on earth or under the earth was able to open the book or look within it. At this I wept long, because no one could be found who was worthy to open the book or look within it. But one of the councillors said to me — 5  
2  
3  
4  
5  
'Do not weep. The Lion conquered — the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Scion of David — and can therefore open the book with its seven seals.'

Then, within the space between the throne and the four Creatures, and in the midst of the councillors, I saw, standing, a Lamb, which seemed to have been sacrificed. It had seven horns and seven eyes. (These eyes are the seven spirits of God, and they are sent into all the world.) The Lamb came forward; and he has taken the book from the right hand of him who was seated on the throne. And, when he had taken the book, the four Creatures and the twenty-four councillors prostrated themselves before the Lamb, each of them holding a harp and golden bowls 6  
7  
8

9 full of incense. (These are the prayers of Christ's people.) And they are singing a new song —

10 'You are worthy to take the book and break its seals, for you were sacrificed, and with your blood you did buy for God people of every tribe, and language, and people, and nation, and did make them a kingdom of priests in the service of our God, and they are reigning on the earth.'

11 Then, in my vision, I heard the voices of many angels around the throne, and of the Creatures, and of the councillors. In number they were 'ten thousand times ten thousand and thousands of thousands,' and they cried in a loud voice —

'Worthy is the Lamb that was sacrificed to receive all power, and wealth, and wisdom, and might, and honor, and praise, and blessing.'

13 And I heard every created thing in the air, and on the earth, and under the earth, and on the sea, and all that is in them crying —

'To him who is seated on the throne and to the Lamb be ascribed all blessing, and honor, and praise, and dominion for ever and ever.'

14 And the four Creatures said 'Amen,' and the councillors prostrated themselves and worshiped.

6 Then I saw the Lamb break one of the seven seals, and I heard one of the four Creatures crying with a voice like thunder —  
2 'Come.' And in my vision I saw 'a white horse.' Its rider held a bow, and he was given a crown, and he went out conquering and to conquer.

3 When the Lamb broke the second seal, I heard the second  
4 Creature crying — 'Come.' Then there went out another horse, 'a red horse,' and to its rider was given the power to deprive the earth of peace, so that people should kill one another; and he

was given a great sword.

When the Lamb broke the third seal, I heard the third Creature crying — ‘Come.’ And in my vision I saw ‘a black horse.’ Its rider held scales in his hand. And I heard what seemed to be a voice, coming from among the four Creatures, crying — ‘A quart of wheat for a silver coin, and three quarts of barley for a silver coin! But do not harm the oil and the wine.’

When the Lamb broke the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth Creature crying — ‘Come.’ And in my vision I saw a grey horse. His rider’s name was Death, and the Lord of the place of Death rode behind him; and power was given them over the fourth part of the earth, so that they might ‘destroy with sword and famine and death, and by means of the wild beasts of the earth.’

When the Lamb opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been killed for the sake of God’s message and for the testimony which they had borne. They cried in a loud voice — ‘How long, Sovereign Lord, holy and true, before you will give judgment and avenge our blood on all who are living on the earth?’ Then to each of them was given a white robe, and they were told to rest yet a little longer, until the number of their fellow servants and of their friends in Christ’s service who were about to be put to death, as they had been, should be complete.

And I saw the Lamb break the sixth seal, and then there was a great earthquake. The sun became black, like sackcloth, and the moon, which was at its full, like blood. ‘The stars of the heavens fell’ to the earth, as when a fig-tree, shaken by a strong wind, drops its unripe fruit. The heavens disappeared like a scroll when it is rolled up, and every mountain and island was moved from its place. Then all the kings of the earth, and the princes, and the generals, and the rich, and the powerful, and every slave and free person, ‘hid themselves in the caves and under the rocks’ of the mountains; and they are crying to the mountains and the rocks — ‘Fall on us, and hide us from the eyes of him who is seated on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb, for the great day of their wrath is come, and who can stand to meet it?’

7 After this, I saw four angels standing 'on the four corners  
of the earth,' restraining the four winds of the earth, so that no  
wind should blow over the earth, or over the sea, or against any  
2 tree. And, in the east, I saw another angel, ascending, holding the  
seal of the living God; and he cried in a loud voice to the four an-  
gels, to whom there had been given power to harm the earth and  
3 the sea — 'Do not harm the earth, or the sea, or the trees, until we  
4 have sealed the servants of our God on their foreheads.' I heard,  
too, the number of those who had been sealed. It was one hun-  
dred and forty-four thousand; and they were from every tribe of  
the Israelites.

5 From the tribe of Judah twelve thousand were sealed,  
from the tribe of Reuben twelve thousand,  
from the tribe of Gad twelve thousand,  
6 from the tribe of Asher twelve thousand,  
from the tribe of Napthali twelve thousand,  
from the tribe of Manasseh twelve thousand,  
7 from the tribe of Simeon twelve thousand,  
from the tribe of Levi twelve thousand,  
from the tribe of Issachar twelve thousand,  
8 from the tribe of Zebulon twelve thousand,  
from the tribe of Joseph twelve thousand,  
from the tribe of Benjamin twelve thousand were sealed.

9 After this, in my vision, I saw a vast throng which no one could  
number, of people from every nation and of all tribes, and peo-  
ples, and languages. They stood in front of the throne and in  
front of the Lamb, robed in white, holding palm branches in  
10 their hands. And they are crying in a loud voice —

'salvation be ascribed to our God who is seated on his throne  
and to the Lamb.'

11 And all the angels were standing around the throne and the  
councillors and the four Creatures, and they prostrated them-  
selves on their faces in front of the throne and worshiped God,  
12 saying —



'Amen. Blessing and praise, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honor, and power, and might be ascribed to our God for ever and ever. Amen.'

Then one of the councillors turned to me and said 'Who are these who are robed in white? And where did they come from?' 13

'My Lord,' I answered, 'it is you who know.' 14

'These,' he said, 'are they who come through the Great Persecution; they washed their robes white in the blood of the Lamb. And therefore it is that they are before the throne of God, and are serving him day and night in his Temple; and he who is seated on the throne will shelter them. Never again will they be hungry, never again will they be thirsty, nor will the sun smite them, nor any scorching heat; for the Lamb that stands in the space before the throne will be their shepherd, and will lead them to life-giving springs of water; and God will wipe away all tears from their eyes.' 15  
16  
17

As soon as the Lamb had broken the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven for, it might be, half an hour. 8

### *Vision of Seven Trumpet-Blasts*

THEN I SAW THE SEVEN ANGELS WHO STAND BEFORE GOD, and seven trumpets were given to them. 2

Next, another angel came and stood at the altar with a golden censer in his hand; and a great quantity of incense was given to him, to mingle with the prayers of all Christ's people on the golden altar before the throne. The smoke of the incense ascended, with the prayers of Christ's people, from the hand of the angel before God. Then the angel took the censer, and filled it with fire from the altar, and threw it down on the earth; and there followed 'peals of thunder, cries, flashes of lightning,' and an earthquake. Then the seven angels holding the seven trumpets prepared to blow their blasts. 3  
4  
5  
6

7 The first blew; and there came hail and fire mixed with blood,  
and it fell on the earth. A third part of the earth was burnt up,  
and a third of the trees, and every blade of grass.

8 Then the second angel blew; and what appeared to be a great  
mountain, burning, was hurled into the sea. A third of the sea  
9 became blood, and a third part of all created things that are in  
the sea — that is, of all living things — died, and a third of the  
ships was destroyed.

10 Then the third angel blew; and there fell from the heavens a  
great star, burning like a torch. It fell on a third of the rivers and  
11 on the springs. (The star is called 'Wormwood.') A third of the  
water became bitter as wormwood, and so bitter was the water  
that many died from drinking it.

12 Then the fourth angel blew; and a third of the sun and a third  
of the moon and a third of the stars were blasted, so that a third  
of them was eclipsed, and for a third part of the day there was  
no light, and at night it was the same.

13 And, in my vision, I heard an eagle flying in mid-heaven and  
crying in a loud voice — 'Woe, woe, woe for all who live on the  
earth, at the other trumpet-blasts of the three angels who have  
yet to blow.'

9 Then the fifth angel blew; and I saw a star that had fallen  
on the earth from the heavens, and to him was given the key of  
the bottomless pit. He opened the bottomless pit, and from the  
2 pit rose a smoke like the smoke of a great furnace. The sun and  
3 the air grew dark because of the smoke from the pit. Out of the  
smoke locusts descended on the earth, and they received the  
4 same power as that possessed by scorpions. They were told not  
to harm the grass, or any plant, or any tree, but only those who  
5 have not 'the seal of God on their foreheads.' Yet they were not  
allowed to kill them, but it was ordered that those men should  
be tortured for five months. Their torture was like the torture  
6 caused by a scorpion when it stings a person. In those days peo-  
ple 'will seek Death and will not find it'; They will long to die,  
7 but Death flees from them. In appearance the locusts were like  
horses equipped for battle. On their heads there were what ap-  
peared to be crowns that shone like gold, their faces resembled  
8 human faces, and they had hair like the hair of a woman, their

teeth were like lions' teeth, and they had what seemed to be iron breastplates, while the noise of their wings was like the noise of chariots drawn by many horses, galloping into battle. They have tails like scorpions, and stings, and in their tails lies their power to harm people for five months. They have as their king the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name, in Hebrew, is 'Abaddon,' while, in Greek, his name is 'Apollyon' (the Destroyer).

The first Woe has passed; and still there are two Woes to follow!

Then the sixth angel blew; and I heard a voice proceeding from the corners of the golden altar that stood before God. It spoke to the sixth angel — the angel with the trumpet — and said 'Let loose the four angels that are in chains at the great river Euphrates.' Then the four angels, that were held in readiness for that hour and day and month and year, were let loose, to destroy a third of mankind. The number of the hosts of cavalry was ten thousand times ten thousand, twice told; I heard their number. And this is what the horses and their riders appeared to be like in my vision: — They had breastplates of fire, blood-red and sulphurous, and the heads of the horses were like lions' heads, while out of their mouths issue fire, and smoke, and sulphur. Through these three curses a third of humanity perished — because of the fire, and the smoke, and the sulphur that issued from their mouths; for the power of the horses lies in their mouths and in their tails. For their tails are like snakes, with heads, and it is with them that they do harm. But those who were left of humanity, who had not perished through these curses, did not repent and turn away from what their own hands had made; they would not abandon the worship of 'demons, and of idols made of gold or silver or brass or stone or wood, which can neither see, nor hear, nor walk'; and they did not repent of their murders, or their sorceries, or their licentiousness, or their thefts.

Then I saw another mighty angel, descending from heaven. His robe was a cloud; over his head was the rainbow; his face was like the sun, and his feet like pillars of fire; in his hand he

3 held a little book open. He set his right foot on the sea, and his  
4 left on the land; and he cried in a loud voice like the roaring of  
5 a lion. At his cry the seven peals of thunder spoke, each with  
6 its own voice. And, when they spoke, I was about to write; but  
7 I heard a voice from heaven say — ‘Keep secret what the seven  
8 peals of thunder said, and do not write it down.’ Then the angel,  
9 whom I had seen standing on the sea and on the land, ‘raised his  
10 right hand to the heavens, and swore by him who lives for ever  
11 and ever, who created the heavens and all that is in them, and  
the earth and all that is in it, and the sea and all that is in it,’ that  
time should cease to be. Moreover at the time when the seventh  
angel will speak, when he is ready to blow his blast, then the  
hidden purposes of God, of which he told the good news to his  
servants, the prophets, are at once fulfilled. Then came the voice  
which I had heard from heaven. It spoke to me again, and said —  
‘Go and take the book that is open in the hand of the angel who  
stands on the sea and on the land.’ So I went to the angel and  
asked him to give me the little book. And he said ‘Take it, and eat  
it. It will be bitter to your stomach, but in your mouth it will be as  
sweet as honey.’ I took the little book out of the angel’s hand ‘and  
ate it, and, while in my mouth, it was like the sweetest honey’;  
but, when I had eaten it, it was bitter to my stomach. And I was  
told — ‘You must prophesy again about men of many peoples,  
and nations, and languages, and about many kings.’

11 Then I was given a measure like a rod, and a voice said to me  
— ‘Go and measure the Temple of God and the altar, and count  
2 the worshiper there. But omit the court outside the Temple, and  
3 do not measure that, for it has been given up to the nations; and  
the holy City will be under their heel for forty-two months. Then  
I will give permission to my Two Witnesses, and for those twelve  
hundred and sixty days they will continue teaching, clothed  
4 in sackcloth.’ These men are represented by ‘the two olive trees  
5 and the two lamps that stand before the Lord of the earth.’ When  
anyone wishes to harm them, ‘fire comes from their mouths and  
consumes their enemies’; and whoever wishes to harm them  
6 will, in this way, inevitably perish. These men have the power to  
close the heavens, so that ‘no rain may fall’ during the time that  
they are teaching; and they have power ‘to turn the streams into

blood, and to smite the land with any curse,' whenever they will. As soon as they have completed their testimony, 'the wild Beast that ascends from the bottomless pit will make war on them and conquer' and kill them. Their dead bodies will lie in the streets of the great city, which is mystically spoken of as 'Sodom' and 'Egypt,' where their Master was crucified. People of all nations, and tribes, and languages, and races look at their dead bodies for three days and a half, and do not allow them to be laid in a grave. Those who live on the earth rejoice over them and are merry, and they will send presents to one another, because these two prophets brought torments on those who live on the earth. After three days and a half 'the life-giving breath of God entered these men, and they stood up on their feet,' and a great terror took possession of those who were watching them. The two men heard a loud voice from heaven which said to them — 'Come up here,' and they went up to heaven in the cloud, while their enemies watched them. At that very time a great earthquake occurred. A tenth part of the city fell, and seven thousand people perished in the earthquake. Those who escaped were much terrified, and praised the God of heaven.

The second Woe has passed; and there is a third Woe soon to follow!

Then the seventh angel blew; and loud voices were heard in heaven saying —

'The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of his Christ, and he will reign for ever and ever.'

At this the twenty-four councillors, who were seated on their thrones before God, prostrated themselves on their faces and worshiped Him, saying —

'We thank you, Lord, our God, the Almighty, who is and who was, that you have assumed your great power and reigned. The nations were enraged, and your wrath fell on them; the time came for the dead to be judged, and for you to give the reward to your servants the prophets, and to the people of Christ, and

to those who honor your name — the high and the low alike — and to destroy those who are destroying the earth.’

- 19 Then the Temple of God in heaven was opened, and the ark containing his covenant was seen in his Temple; and there followed ‘flashes of lightning, cries, peals of thunder,’ an earthquake, and ‘a great storm of hail.’

### *Vision of Seven Figures*

- 12 THEN A GREAT PORTENT WAS SEEN IN THE HEAVENS — a woman whose robe was the sun, and who had the moon under her feet, and on her head a crown of twelve stars. She was pregnant; and ‘she is crying out in the pain and agony of childbirth.’ Another portent also was seen in the heavens There was a great red Dragon, with seven heads and ten horns, and on his heads were seven diadems. His tail draws after it a third of the stars in the heavens, and it hurled them down on the earth. The Dragon is standing in front of the woman who is about to give birth to the child, so that he may devour it as soon as it is born. The woman gave birth to a son, a male child, who is destined to rule all the nations with an iron rod; and her child was at once caught up to God on his throne. But the woman fled into the wilderness, where there is a place prepared for her by God, to be tended there for twelve hundred and sixty days.

- 7 Then a battle took place in the heavens. Michael and his angels fought with the Dragon. But though the Dragon, with his angels, fought, he did not prevail; and there was no place left for them any longer in the heavens. Then the great Dragon, the primeval snake, known as the ‘devil’ and ‘Satan,’ who deceives all the world, was hurled down to the earth, and his angels were hurled down with him. And I heard a loud voice in heaven which said —

- 11 ‘Now has begun the day of the salvation, and Power, and Dominion of our God, and the Rule of his Christ; for the Accuser of our people has been hurled down, he who has been accusing them before our God day and night. Their victory was due to

the blood of the Lamb, and to the message to which they bore their testimony. In their love of life they shrank not from death. Therefore, be glad, heaven, and all who live in heaven! Alas for the earth and for the sea, for the devil has gone down to you in great fury, knowing that he has but little time.' 12

when the Dragon saw that he was hurled down to the earth, he pursued the woman who had given birth to the male child. But to the woman were given the two wings of the great eagle, so that she might fly to her place in the wilderness, where she is being tended for 'one year, and for two years, and for half a year' in safety from the snake. Then the snake poured water from its mouth after the woman, like a river, so that it might sweep her away. But Earth came to her help, and opened her mouth and drank up the river which the Dragon had poured out of its mouth. The Dragon was enraged at the woman, and went to fight with the rest of her offspring — those who lay to heart the commands of God and bear their testimony to Jesus; and he took his stand on the sea-shore. 13 14 15 16 17

Then I saw, 'rising out of the sea, a wild Beast with ten horns' and seven heads. On its horns were ten diadems, and on its heads were blasphemous names. The Beast that I saw was like a leopard; but its feet were like a bear's, and its mouth like the mouth of a lion. The Dragon gave it his power and his throne, and wide dominion. One of its heads seemed to me to have been mortally wounded, but its deadly wound had been healed. The whole earth followed the Beast, wondering; and men worshiped the Dragon, because he had given his dominion to the Beast; while, as they worshiped the Beast, they said — 'Who can compare with the Beast? And who can fight with it?' The Beast was given 'a mouth that spoke proudly' and blasphemously, and it was empowered to work its will for forty-two months. It opened its mouth only to blaspheme God, to blaspheme his name and his tent — those who live in his tent in heaven. It had been permitted to fight with Christ's people and to conquer them, and it had received power over men of every tribe, and people, and language, and nation. All who are living on earth will worship it — all whose names have not been written in the Lamb's book of 13 2 3 4 5 6 7 8

9 life, the Lamb that has been sacrificed from the foundation of the  
10 world. Let those who have ears hear. 'Whoever is destined for  
11 captivity goes into captivity.' Whoever will kill with the sword  
12 must inevitably be killed with the sword. (Here there is need for  
13 endurance and faith on the part of Christ's people.)

14 Then I saw, rising out of the earth, another wild Beast. It had  
15 two horns like those of a lamb, and its voice was like a dragon's.  
16 It exercises all the authority of the first Beast under its eyes; and  
17 it makes the earth and all who are living on it worship that first  
18 Beast, whose mortal wound was healed. It performs great mar-  
19 vels, even causing fire to fall from the heavens to the earth, be-  
20 fore people's eyes; and in consequence of the marvels which it  
21 was allowed to perform under the eyes of the Beast, it is able to  
22 deceive all who are living on the earth. It tells those who live on  
23 the earth to make a statue in honor of the Beast, who, despite the  
24 wound from the sword, yet lived. It was permitted to breathe  
25 life into the image of the Beast, so that the image of the Beast  
26 might speak; and it was also permitted to cause all who refused  
27 to worship the image of the Beast to be put to death. High and  
28 low, rich and poor, free and enslaved — it causes a brand to be  
29 put on the right hand or on the forehead of every one of them,  
30 so that no one is able to buy or sell, except those that bear this  
31 brand — either the name of the Beast or the number indicated  
32 by the letters of his name. (Here there is need for discernment.)  
33 Let him who has the ability compute the number of the Beast; for  
34 the number indicates a person's name. Its number is six hundred  
35 and sixty-six.

14 Then, in my vision, I saw the Lamb standing on Mount Zion.  
15 With him were a hundred and forty-four thousand, with his  
16 name and the name of his Father written on their foreheads. And  
17 I heard a sound from heaven, 'like the sound of many waters,'  
18 and like the sound of a loud peal of thunder; the sound that I  
19 heard was like the music of harpers playing on their harps. They  
20 are singing what seems to be a new song, before the throne, and  
21 before the four Creatures and the councillors; and no one was  
22 able to learn that song except the hundred and forty-four thou-



sand who had been redeemed from earth. These are the men 4  
who never defiled themselves in their intercourse with women;  
they are as pure as virgins. These are the men who follow the  
Lamb wherever he goes. They were redeemed as the first-fruits  
of mankind for God and for the Lamb. 'No lie was ever heard on 5  
their lips.' They are beyond reach of blame.

Then I saw another angel, flying in mid-heaven. He had the 6  
good news, decreed from eternity, to announce to those who live  
on the earth — to men of every nation, and tribe, and language,  
and people; and he cried in a loud voice — 'Reverence God, 7  
and give him praise (for the hour of his judgment has come) and  
worship him who made the heaven and the earth and the sea  
and all springs of water.'

Then a second angel followed, crying — 'She has fallen! She 8  
has fallen — Babylon the Great, who has made all the nations  
drink the maddening wine of her licentiousness!'

Then a third angel followed them, crying in a loud voice 9  
— 'Whoever worships the Beast and its image, and receives  
its brand on his forehead or on his hand, that person will drink 10  
the maddening wine of God that has been poured unmixed into  
the cup of his wrath, and they will be tortured with fire and sulphur  
before the eyes of the holy angels and before the eyes of the 11  
Lamb. The smoke from their torture rises for ever and ever, and  
they have no rest day nor night — those who worship the Beast  
and its image, and all who are branded with its name.' (Here 12  
there is need for endurance on the part of Christ's people —  
those who lay to heart the commands of God and the faith of Je-  
sus.) Then I heard a voice from heaven saying 'Write — "Blessed 13  
are the dead who from this hour die in union with the Lord."

"Yes," answers the Spirit, "that they may rest from their toil.  
Their good deeds go with them."

Then, in my vision, I saw a white cloud, and on the cloud there 14  
was sitting one 'like a man.' On his head he had a crown of gold,  
and in his hand a sharp sickle.

15 Then another angel came out from the Temple, crying in a  
loud voice to him who was sitting on the cloud — ‘Take your  
sickle and reap, for the time to reap has come; the Harvest of  
16 Earth is ready.’ He who was sitting on the cloud brought his  
sickle down on the earth, and the Harvest of Earth was reaped.

17 Then another angel came out of the Temple in heaven; he,  
also, had a sharp sickle.

18 Then another angel came out of the altar; he had power over  
fire, and he called in a loud voice to the angel that had the sharp  
sickle — ‘Take your sharp sickle, and gather the bunches from  
19 the Vine of Earth, for its grapes are ripe.’ The angel brought his  
sickle down on the earth and gathered the fruit of the Vine of  
Earth, and threw it into the great winepress of the wrath of God.  
20 The ‘grapes were trodden in the press’ outside the city; and  
blood came out of the press, rising as high as the bridles of the  
horses for a distance of two hundred miles.

### *Vision of Seven Curses*

15 THEN I SAW ANOTHER PORTENT IN THE HEAVENS — a great and mar-  
velous portent — seven angels with the seven last curses; be-  
cause with them the wrath of God is ended.

2 Then I saw what appeared to be a sea of glass mixed with  
fire; and, standing by this sea of glass, holding the harps of God,  
I saw those who had come victorious out of the conflict with the  
3 Beast and its image and the number that formed its name. They  
are singing the song of Moses, the servant of God, and the song  
of the Lamb —

‘Great and marvelous are your deeds, Lord, our God, the  
Almighty. Righteous and true are your ways, eternal King. Who  
4 will not honor and praise your name, Lord? You alone are holy!  
All nations will come and worship before you, for your judg-  
ments have become manifest.’

5 After this I saw that the inmost shrine of the tent of testimony in  
6 heaven was opened, and out of it came the seven angels with the  
seven curses. They were adorned with precious stones, pure and

bright, and had golden girdles around their breasts. One of the  
four Creatures gave the seven angels seven golden bowls, filled  
with the wrath of God who lives for ever and ever. 'The Temple  
was filled with smoke from the glory' and Majesty of God; and  
no one could enter the Temple, until the seven curses inflicted  
by the seven angels were at an end. Then I heard a loud voice, 16  
which came from the Temple, saying to the seven angels — 'Go  
and empty the seven bowls of the wrath of God on the earth.'

The first angel went and emptied his bowl on the earth; and 2  
it turned to loathsome and painful sores on all who bore the  
brand of the Beast and who worshiped its image.

Then the second angel emptied his bowl on the sea; and it 3  
turned to blood like the blood of a corpse, and every living thing  
died — everything in the sea.

Then the third angel emptied his bowl on the rivers and 4  
springs of water; and it turned to blood. And I heard the angel of  
the Waters saying — 'Righteous are you, you who is and who is,  
the Holy One, in inflicting this judgment; for men shed the blood 6  
of Christ's people and of the prophets, and you have given them  
blood to drink. It is what they deserve.' And I heard the response 7  
from the altar — 'Yes, Lord, our God, the Almighty, true and  
righteous are they judgments.'

Then the fourth angel emptied his bowl on the sun; and he 8  
was permitted to scorch men with fire; and men were scorched 9  
by the intense heat. They blasphemed the name of God who  
controlled these curses, yet they did not repent and give him  
praise.

Then the fifth angel emptied his bowl on the throne of the 10  
Beast; and darkness fell on its kingdom. Men gnawed their  
tongues for pain, and blasphemed the God of heaven, because 11  
of their pains and because of their sores; yet they did not repent  
of what they had done.

Then the sixth angel emptied his bowl on the great river 12  
Euphrates; and the water in the river was dried up, so that the 13  
road for the kings of the East might be made ready. And I saw  
three foul spirits, like frogs, come from the mouth of the Dragon  
and from the mouth of the Beast and from the mouth of the false

14 prophet. They are the spirits of demons, and perform marvels;  
 they go to kings all over the world, to collect them for the battle  
 15 on the great day of Almighty God. ('I am coming like a thief!  
 Happy will he be who is on the watch, and keeps his clothing at  
 hand, so that he will not have to walk about unclothed and let  
 16 men see his nakedness.') And the spirits collected the kings at  
 the place called in Hebrew 'Har-Magedon.'

17 Then the seventh angel emptied his bowl on the air. (A loud  
 voice came from the throne in the Temple; it said 'All is over.')

18 There followed 'flashes of lightning, cries, and peals of thun-  
 der'; and there was a great earthquake, such as had not occurred  
 19 since man began to be on the earth — none so great; and the  
 great city was torn in three, and the cities of the nation fell, and  
 God remembered Babylon the Great, and gave her the madden-  
 20 ing wine-cup of his wrath; and every island vanished, and the  
 21 mountains disappeared. Great hailstones, a pound in weight,  
 are falling on men from the heavens. And men blasphemed God  
 because of the curse of the hail, for it was a very terrible curse.

### *Doom of the Enemies of Christ*

17 THEN ONE OF THE SEVEN ANGELS WHO HELD THE SEVEN BOWLS CAME AND  
 spoke to me. 'Come here,' he said, 'and I will show you the sen-  
 tence passed on that Great Harlot who is seated at the meeting  
 2 of many waters, and with whom all the kings of the earth have  
 had licentious intercourse; while all who live on the earth have  
 3 been make drunk by the wine of her licentiousness.' And he bore  
 me away in a trance to a lonely place, and I saw a woman seated  
 on a scarlet Beast, which was covered with blasphemous names;  
 4 it had seven heads and ten horns. The woman was clothed in  
 purple and scarlet, and glittering with gold ornaments, precious  
 stones, and pearls. In her hand she held a gold cup, full of idola-  
 trous abominations, and the unclean fruits of her licentiousness;  
 5 while on her forehead there was written this mystic name —  
 'BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND  
 OF ALL IDOLATROUS ABOMINATIONS on EARTH.' And  
 6 I saw the woman drunk with the blood of Christ's people and

with the blood of the martyrs for Jesus. When I saw her, I was amazed beyond measure; but the angel said to me — ‘Why were you amazed? I will tell you the mystic meaning of the vision of this woman, and of the Beast, with the seven heads and ten horns, that carries her. The Beast that you saw was, but is not, and is about to rise out of the bottomless pit, and is on its way to destruction. Those who are living on earth will be amazed — those whose names have not been written in the book of life from the foundation of the world — when they see that the Beast was, but is not, and yet will come.’ (Here there is need for the discerning mind.) The seven heads are seven mountains on which the woman is seated. They are also seven kings; of whom five have fallen and one remains, while one is not yet come. When he comes, he must stay for a little while. So must the Beast that was, but is not. He counts as an eighth king, although he is one of the seven, and is on his way to destruction. The ten horns that you saw are ten kings, who have not yet received their kingdoms, but for an hour they receive the authority of kings, together with the Beast. These kings are of one mind in surrendering their power and authority to the Beast. They will fight with the Lamb, but the Lamb will conquer them, for he is Lord of lords and King of kings; so, too, will those with him who have received the call and are chosen and faithful. And the angel said to me — ‘The waters that you saw, where the Harlot is seated, are throngs of people and men of all nations and languages. The ten horns that you saw, and the Beast — they will hate the Harlot, and cause her to become deserted and strip her bare; they will eat her flesh and utterly consume her with fire. For God has put it into their minds to carry out his purpose, in carrying out their common purpose and surrendering their kingdoms to the Beast, until God’s decrees will be executed. As for the woman whom you saw, she is the great city that holds sway over all the kings of the earth.’

After this I saw another angel, descending from heaven, invested with great authority; and the earth was illuminated by his splendor. With a mighty voice he cried — ‘She has fallen! She has fallen — Babylon the Great! She has become an abode

3 of demons, a stronghold of every wicked spirit, a stronghold of  
every foul and hateful bird. For, after drinking the maddening  
wine of her licentiousness, all the nations have fallen; while all  
the kings of the earth have had licentious intercourse with her,  
and the merchants of the earth have grown rich through the ex-  
4 cess of her luxury.' Then I heard another voice from heaven say-  
ing — 'Come out of her, my people, so that you may not partici-  
pate in her sins, and that you may not suffer from the curses  
5 inflicted on her. For her sins are heaped up to the heavens, and  
6 God has not forgotten her misdeeds. Pay her back the treatment  
with which she has treated you; yes, repay twice over what her  
actions deserve; in the cup which she mixed for you, mix for her  
7 as much again; for her self-glorification and her luxury, give her  
now an equal measure of torture and misery. In her heart she  
says 'I sit here a queen; no widow am I; I will never know mis-  
8 ery.' Therefore in one day will these curses strike her — death,  
misery, and famine, and she will be utterly consumed by fire; for  
9 mighty is the Lord God who condemned her. All the kings of the  
earth who had licentious intercourse with her and shared her  
luxury will weep and lament over her, when they see the smoke  
10 from the burning city, while they stand at a distance, horrified  
at her torture, and cry — 'Alas! Alas! Great city! Mighty city of  
11 Babylon! In a single hour your judgment fell. And the merchants  
of the earth weep and wail over her, because no longer does any-  
one buy their cargoes — their cargoes of gold, or silver, or pre-  
12 cious stones, or pearls, or fine linen, or purple robes, or silk, or  
scarlet cloth; nor their many scented woods; nor their many arti-  
cles of ivory; nor their many articles of choicest wood, or brass,  
13 or iron, or marble; nor their cinnamon, or spice, or incense, or  
perfumes, or frankincense, or wine, or oil, or fine flour, or wheat,  
or cattle, or sheep; nor their horses, or chariots, or slaves; nor the  
14 bodies and souls of people. The fruit that your soul craved is no  
longer within your reach, and all dainties and luxuries are lost  
15 to you, never to be found again.' The merchants who sold these  
things, and grew rich by her, will stand at a distance weeping  
and wailing, horrified at her torture, and crying — 'Alas! Alas!  
16 Great city! City clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet  
cloth! City adorned with gold ornaments, and precious stones,

and pearls! In a single hour your vast wealth vanished.' Every 17  
ship's captain and all who sail to any port, and sailors, and all 18  
who get their living from the sea, stood at a distance, and seeing 19  
the smoke from the burning city, cried — 'What city can com- 20  
pare with the Great city?' They threw dust on their heads, and, 21  
as they wept and wailed, they cried — 'Alas! Alas! Great city! 22  
All who have ships on the sea grew rich through her magnifi- 23  
cence. In a single hour it has vanished.' Rejoice over her, heaven, 24  
and people of Christ, and apostles, and prophets, for God has  
avenged you on her! Then a mighty angel took up a stone like  
a great millstone, and threw it into the sea, crying — 'So will  
Babylon, the great city, be violently overthrown, never more to  
be seen. No more will the music of harpers, or minstrels, or flute  
players, or trumpeters be heard in you, no more will any work-  
er, skilled in any art, be found in you; no more will the sound  
of a mill be heard in you; no more will the light of a lamp shine  
in you; no more will the voices of groom and bride be heard in  
you. Your merchants were the great men of the earth, for all the  
nations were deceived by your magical charms. Yes, and in her  
was to be found the blood of the prophets and of Christ's people,  
and of all who have been put to death on the earth.'

After this, I heard what seemed to be a great shout from a vast 19  
throng in heaven, crying —

'Hallelujah! To our God belong salvation, and glory, and Pow- 2  
er, for true and righteous are his judgments. For he has passed  
judgment on the Great Harlot who was corrupting the earth by  
her licentiousness, and he has taken vengeance on her for the  
blood of his servants.'

Again they cried — 'Hallelujah!' And the smoke from her ruins 3  
rises for ever and ever. Then the twenty-four councillors and the 4  
Four Creatures prostrated themselves and worshiped God who  
was seated on the throne, crying — 'Amen, Hallelujah!'; and  
from the throne there came a voice which said — 5

'Praise our God all you who serve him, You who worship him,

both high and low.'

6 Then I heard 'what seemed to be the shout of a vast throng, like the sound of many waters,' and like the sound of loud peals of thunder, crying —

7 'Hallelujah! For the Lord is king, our God, the Almighty. Let us rejoice and exalt; and we will pay him honor, for the hour for the Marriage of the Lamb has come, and his Bride has made herself ready. And to her it has been granted to robe herself in fine linen, white and pure, for that linen is the good deeds of the people of Christ.'

9 Then a voice said to me 'Write — "Blessed are those who have been summoned to the marriage feast of the Lamb."' And the voice said — 'These words of God are true.' I prostrated myself at the feet of him who spoke to worship him, but he said to me — 'Forbear; I am your fellow servant, and the fellow servant of your brothers and sisters who bear their testimony to Jesus. Worship God. For to bear testimony to Jesus needs the inspiration of the prophets.' Then I saw that heaven lay open. There appears a white horse; its rider is called 'Faithful' and 'True'; righteously does he judge and make war. His eyes are flaming fires; on his head there are many diadems, and he bears a name, written, which no one knows but himself; he has been clothed in a garment sprinkled with blood; and the name by which he is called is 'The Word of God.' The armies of heaven followed him, mounted on white horses and clothed in fine linen, white and pure. From his mouth comes a sharp sword, with which 'to smite the nations; and he will rule them with an iron rod.' He 'treads the grapes in the press' of the maddening wine of the wrath of Almighty God; and on his robe and on his thigh he has this name written — 'KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS.'

17 Then I saw an angel standing on the sun. He cried in a loud voice to all the birds that fly in mid-heaven — 'Gather and come to the great feast of God, to eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of



commanders, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses and their riders, and the flesh of all free and enslaved, and of high and low.' Then I saw the Beast and the kings of the earth and their armies, gathered together to fight with him who sat on the horse and with his army. The Beast was captured, and with him was taken the false prophet, who performed the marvels before the eyes of the Beast, with which he deceived those who had received the brand of the Beast and those who worshiped his image. Alive, they were thrown, both of them, into the lake of fire - of burning sulphur. The rest were killed by the sword which came out of the mouth of him who rode on the horse; and all the birds fed on their flesh.

Then I saw an angel coming down from heaven, with the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. He seized the Dragon, the primeval snake (who is the 'devil' or 'Satan'), and bound him in chains for a thousand years. He flung him into the bottomless pit and locked it, and set his seal on it; that he should not deceive the nations any more, until the thousand years were ended. After that he must be let loose for a while.

Then I saw thrones, and to those who took their seats on them authority was given to act as judges. And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded because of the testimony to Jesus and because of the message of God, for they had refused to worship the Beast or its image, and had not received the brand on their foreheads and on their hands. They were restored to life, and they reigned with the Christ for a thousand years. (The rest of the dead were not restored to life until the thousand years were ended.) This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy will he be who shares in that first resurrection. The second Death has no power over them; but they will be priests of God, and the Christ, and they will reign with him for the thousand years.

When the thousand years are ended, Satan will be let loose from his prison, and he will come out to deceive the nations that live in 'the four corners of the earth — Gog and Magog.' He will come to gather them together for battle; and their number will be as great as the sand on the sea-shore. They went up over the

breadth of the whole earth, and surrounded the camp of Christ's people and the city that he loves. Then fire fell from the heavens and consumed them; and the devil, their deceiver, was hurled into the lake of fire and sulphur, where the Beast and the false prophet already were, and they will be tortured day and night for ever and ever.

11 Then I saw a great white throne, and him who was seated on it. 'The earth and the heavens fled from his presence; no place was left for them.' And I saw the dead, high and low, standing before the throne; and books were opened. Then another book was opened, the book of life; and the dead were judged, according to their actions, by what was written in the books. The sea gave up its dead, and Death and the Lord of the place of Death gave up their dead; and they were judged, one by one, each according to his actions. Then Death and the Lord of the place of Death were hurled into the lake of fire. This is the Second Death — the lake of fire; and all whose names 'were not found written in the book of life' were hurled into the lake of fire.

### *The New Creation*

21 THEN I SAW NEW HEAVENS AND A NEW EARTH. The former heavens and the former earth had passed away; and the sea has ceased to be. And I saw the Holy City, Jerusalem, descending new out of heaven from God, like a bride adorned in readiness for her husband. And I heard a loud voice from the throne, which said — 'See! The tent of God is set up among people. God will live among them, and they will be his Peoples, and God himself will be among them, and he will wipe away all tears from their eyes. There will be no more death, nor will there be any more grief or crying or pain. The old order has passed away.' And he who was seated on the throne said — 'See, I make all things new!' And he said — 'Write this, for these words may be trusted and are true.' And he said to me — 'They are fulfilled. I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the End. To those who thirst I will give of the spring of the water of life, freely. Those who conquer

will enter into possession of these things, and I will be their God, and they will be my children. But as for cowards, unbelievers, the degraded, murderers, the impure, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars — their place will be in the burning lake of fire and sulphur. That is the Second Death.’ 8

Then one of the seven angels who had the seven bowls, and were laden with the seven last curses, came and spoke to me. ‘Come here,’ he said, ‘and I will show you the Bride, the Wife of the Lamb.’ He carried me away in a trance to a great high mountain, and showed me Jerusalem, the Holy City, descending out of heaven from God, filled with the glory of God. Its brilliance was like a precious stone, like a jasper, transparent as crystal. It had a great high wall, in which were twelve gates; and at these gates there were twelve angels, and there were names inscribed on the gates, the names of the twelve tribes of the Israelites. ‘There were three gates on the east, three gates on the north, three gates on the south, and three gates on the west.’ The wall of the city had twelve foundation stones, on which were the twelve names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. And the angel who was speaking to me had as a measure a gold rod, with which to measure the city and its gates and its wall. The city is square; the length and the breadth are the same. The angel measured with his rod; it was twelve hundred miles; its length, and breadth, and height are equal. Then he measured the wall; it was two hundred and eighty-eight feet, as people measure, that is as the angel measured. The material of the wall of the city was jasper, and the city was built of pure gold, which shone like clear glass. The foundations of the wall of the city were ornamented with every kind of precious stone. The first foundation stone was a jasper; the second a sapphire; the third a chalcedony; the fourth an emerald; the fifth a sardonyx; the sixth a carnelian; the seventh a chrysolite; the eighth a beryl; the ninth a topaz; the tenth a chrysoprase; the eleventh a hyacinth; and the twelfth an amethyst. The twelve gates were made of twelve pearls, each gate of one pearl. The street of the city was of pure gold, transparent as glass. And I saw no Temple there, for the Lord, our God, the Almighty, and 9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22

23 the Lamb are its Temple. The city has no need of 'the sun or the  
 24 moon to shine on it, for the glory of God illuminated it,' and its  
 25 Lamp was the Lamb. 'The nations walk by the light of it; and  
 26 the kings of the earth bring their glory into it. Its gates will never  
 27 be shut by day,' and there will be no night there. And people  
 will bring the glory and honor of the nations into it. 'Never will  
 any unhallowed thing enter it,' nor they whose life is shameful  
 and false, but only 'those whose names have been written in the  
 22 Lamb's book of life.' And the angel showed me 'a river of the water  
 of life,' as clear as crystal, issuing from the throne of God and  
 2 of the Lamb, in the middle of the street of the city. On each side  
 of the river was a Tree of life which bore twelve kinds of fruit,  
 yielding its fruit each month; and the leaves of the tree were  
 3 for the healing of the nations. 'Every thing that is accursed will  
 cease to be.' The throne of God and of the Lamb will be within  
 4 it, and his servants will worship him; they will see his face, and  
 5 his name will be on their foreheads. Night will cease to be. They  
 have no need of the light of a lamp, nor have they the light of the  
 sun; for the 'Lord God will be their light, and they will reign for  
 ever and ever.'

### *Conclusion*

6 THEN THE ANGEL SAID TO ME — 'These words may be trusted and  
 are true. The Lord, the God that inspires the prophets, sent his  
 angel to show his servants what must quickly take place; and  
 7 they said "I will come quickly." Blessed will he be who lays to  
 heart the words of the prophecy contained in this book.'

8 It was I, John, who heard and saw these things; and, when I  
 heard and saw them, I prostrated myself in worship at the feet of  
 9 the angel that showed them to me. But he said to me — 'Forbear;  
 I am your fellow servant, and the fellow servant of your fellow  
 prophets, and of all who lay to heart the words in this book.  
 Worship God.'

10 Then the angel said to me — 'Do not keep secret the words of  
 11 the prophecy contained in this book; for the time is near. Let the  
 wrong-doer continue to do wrong; the filthy-minded continue to  
 be filthy; the righteous continue to act righteously; and the holy-

12 minded continue to be holy.' ('I will come quickly. I bring my re-  
13 wards with me, to give to each what their actions deserve. I am  
the Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last, the beginning  
14 and the End.') Blessed will they be who wash their robes, that  
they may have the right to approach the Tree of life, and may en-  
15 ter the city by the gates. Outside will be the filthy, the sorcerers,  
the impure, the murderers, the idolaters, and all who love the  
false and live it.'

'I, Jesus, sent my angel to bear testimony to you about these 16  
things before the churches. I am the Scion and the Offspring of  
David, the bright star of the Morning.'

'Come,' say the Spirit and the Bride; and let him who hears say 17  
'Come.' Let him who thirsts come; let him who will take the  
water of life freely.

I declare to all who hear the words of the prophecy contained in 18  
this book — 'If anyone adds to it, God will add to his troubles  
the curses described in this book; and if anyone takes away any 19  
of the words in the book containing this prophecy, God will  
take away his share in the Tree of life, and in the Holy City — as  
described in this book.'

He whose testimony this is says — 'Assuredly I will come 20  
quickly.' 'Amen, come, Lord Jesus.'

May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ, be with his people. 21

